





Pyar Hissur

SIMLA.

HISTORY OF INDIA.

From the Earliest Times to the Present Day.

BY

CAPTAIN L. J. TROTTER,

Author of "Warren Hastings," "History of India under Queen Victoria," &c.

With Illustrations by W. J. WHYMPER, Esq.

(NEW EDITION, REVISED AND ENLARGED.)

PUBLISHED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF
THE COMMITTEE OF GENERAL LITERATURE AND EDUCATION,
APPOINTED BY THE SOCIETY FOR PROMOTING
CHRISTIAN KNOWLEDGE.

LONDON:
SOCIETY FOR PROMOTING CHRISTIAN KNOWLEDGE,
NORTHUMBERLAND AVENUE, CHARING CROSS, W.C.;
43, QUEEN VICTORIA STREET, E.C.
BRIGHTON: 135, NORTH STREET.
NEW YORK: E. & J. B. YOUNG & CO.
1889.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY JAS TRUSCOTT AND SON,
Suffolk Lane, City.

PREFACE.

THE following pages were written at the request of the Society whose name appears on the title page. Within the space allowed him the Author has done his best to give such an outline of Indian history as might serve to interest that large class of readers which lacks time, means, or will, for the study of larger works on the same theme. In beginning, as it were, from the very outset, he has sought to fix the reader's attention to the successive stages leading from the first Aryan settlements in India, up to the final conquest of the whole country by another people of Aryan race. It is well for many reasons that Englishmen should understand how much the nations of the West have in common with the dark-skinned children of their common forefathers. Nor is the wondrous tale of English conquests in India a thing to be studied apart from its connection with the previous conquests of the Mohammadans, and the great fight for empire between the countrymen of Sivaji and the Moghals.

In tracing, however rapidly, the history of so many centuries, the Author has availed himself of all the latest sources of information, many of which are pointed out in the footnotes. In no part of the book has he been content to follow slavishly in the wake of former historians and essayists. His treatment of Warren Hastings, for example, and his friend Sir Elijah Impey, however different from the picture drawn by Macaulay, is amply warranted by a careful study of documents which that great writer misread or overlooked. Throughout the volume he has striven to combine accuracy of fit detail with due breadth of handling and a clear, readable style; to give due prominence to leading events and characters, and to avoid the faults of a mere partisan. How far he has succeeded in any of these aims, the more critical of his readers must be left to judge for themselves, remembering only to make fair allowance for the mistakes which they are almost certain to find here and there in a work that deals with so many centuries of stirring life.

Of the illustrations contributed by Mr. W. J. Whymper, the Author trusts that his readers will endorse the good opinion formed by himself. They have all been carefully copied from truthful photographs, for the loan of many of which the artist was indebted to the kindness of Dr. Forbes Watson at the India Office. The map which accompanies the volume has been compiled expressly for it by Messrs. Stanford.

With regard to the vexed question of spelling

Indian names, the Author has mainly followed the scientific system of Jones, Wilson, and Dr. Hunter ; a system already at work in many branches of the Indian public service, and which must in time supersede the rough, haphazard methods of spelling words according to their nearest English sounds. The new plan, which has not indeed been applied to such old familiar names as Calcutta, Cawnpore, Bombay, has at least the merit of uniformity ; while it does represent, as exactly as one alphabet can represent another, the very sounds and letters of the Hindustáni words.

It will be seen from the following simple rules how many of the Indian vowel and consonant sounds correspond with those in our own and other Teutonic tongues.

VOWELS—*a* broad as in “father” : *a* short as in “America,” or *u* in “butter,” or *o* in “son.”

e as in “there,” or as *a* in “pate,” or *e* in “bell.”

i long as in “pique” or “machine” : *i* short as in “bit.”

ó long as in “tone,” or shorter as in “obey.”

ú long as in “rude” or *oo* in “fool” : *u* short full,” “put.”

ai as in German “Kaiser,” or English “aisle.”

au as in German “haus,” or the *ow* in English “cow.”

CONSONANTS—g always hard, as in “give.”
 s hard, as in “sin.”
 ch always as in “church,” “chin.”
 gh and kh guttural, as in Irish “Lough,”
 and Scot “loch,” or English “log-
 hut” and “inkhorn.”
 th and ph as in “hot-house” and “up-
 hill.”
 y always as in “yet,” “young.”
 w as in “war.”

The remaining consonants are sounded as in English, save that *n* final is sometimes nasal, as in French “bon.”

Some of the names which recur oftenest in these pages, such as *Rājput*, *Panjāb*, *Khān*, *Gujarāt*, are occasionally printed without the vowel points.

PREFACE TO THE NEW EDITION.

THE present edition of this book carries the history down to the retirement of the Marquis of Dufferin from India in the spring of the present year. Besides the new matter, many corrections have been made in the original text. Most of these have been necessitated either by the march of events which issued in new annexations, or by new information touching the progress and condition of the older provinces. In other places a misprint, a faulty statement, or an omission of some leading fact has been duly rectified.

July, 1889.

L. J. T.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.



INTRODUCTION.

Geographical sketch of India—Total area of India—Its length and breadth—The Himálayas—Eastern and Western boundaries—Length of seaboard and land-frontier—The Himálayan rivers—The Vindhya and Sâtpúra Ranges—The Aravalli Hills—The Gháts or Stairs of Southern India—The Nilgiris or Blue Mountains—Rivers of Southern India—Harbours—Lakes—Desert tracts—Traces of former submergence—Volcanic agency—The forest trees of India—Their various uses—The crops—Fruits and vegetables—Flowers—Animals, wild and tame—Indian birds—Minerals—Precious stones—Gold and silver—Lead—Tin—Antimony and copper—Petroleum—Salt—Building stones—Iron ores—Coal—Population of India—Population of Bengal—The North-Western Provinces—Audh—The Panjáb—British Burmah—Madras—Maisór and Kurg—Bombay and Sindh—Central Provinces—Berár—The Native States—Proportion of Hindus to Mussulmans—Sikhs and Buddhists—Aboriginal races—Jains—Pársís—Christians—Varieties of climate—Rainfall—Hot winds—The cold weather—Languages of India—The Aryan—The Dravidian—The Mongolic—Arabic and Persian infusions..... xlv

BOOK I.

INDIA BEFORE THE MOHAMMADAN CONQUEST.

CHAPTER I.

THE ARYAN HINDUS.

Peculiar character of British rule in India—The Hindu Vedas—Poetic origin of the Hindu religion—Later developments of the old faith—Rise of Buddhism—Sákya Múni, born about 600 B.C.—His career as a Hindu reformer—Buddhist doctrine—Progress of Buddhism—Its later developments—Its decline in India—The Brahmanic reaction—The code of Manu, about 900 B.C.—Indian village communities—Caste in India—The Brahmins—Their exclusive privileges—The Kshatriyas—The Vaisyas—The Súdras—Later development of caste—Caste tendencies in other countries

CHAPTER II.

BRAHMANISM RE-ASCENDENT.

The Puránas, about 900 A.D.—Vishnu and his Avatars—Vishnu as Ráma and Krishna—Worship of Siva—Worship of Durga and other gods—Later Hindu sects—Sankara Achárya—Tukarám born near Púna towards the end of sixteenth century—Nának Shah born A.D. 1469, died A.D. 1540—Gúru Govind—The Brahma Samaj 15

CHAPTER III.

EARLY HISTORY OF INDIA.

First Aryan settlement in India—Aryan progress southwards—Aryan dynasties in Upper India—The great war of Hindu legend—The story of Rāma—Unhistoric character of the Rāmāyan—Aryan kings of Southern India—The Sah dynasty in Saurāshtra—The Gūpta princes—Vikrām Aditya, about B.C. 56—Kālidāsa, about 50 B.C.—The Dravidian races—Successive invasions of Kashmīr—Eastern Bengal—The Yavans—Obscurity of old Indian history—The legend of Semiramis—Ramses II.—Invasion of Western India by Darius Hystaspes, about 520 B.C.—Alexander the Great invades the Panjāb, B.C. 327—His arrival at the Indus—His alliance with Taxiles—Defeat of Porus on the Jhilam—Alexander's further progress—His return from the Satlaj—His voyage down the Indus—His return to Susa—Alexander's death, B.C. 323—Results of Alexander's enterprise—King Chandragūpta founds the Mauryan dynasty—His treaty with Seleucus, 305 B.C.—King Asoka's beneficent reign, 280 B.C.—His conversion to Buddhism—The Sanga dynasty, 195 B.C.—The Andhra dynasty, about 100 B.C.—Embassies from India to Cæsar Augustus—The first Christian mission to Southern India—Progress of the native Christians—A Christian Rajah in Malabar—Temporary triumph of Archbishop Menezes over the Syrian Christians—The Bactrian kingdom—Demetrius, B.C. 190—Eucratides, B.C. 181—Menander, B.C. 126—Testimony of Indo-Bactrian coins. 22

CHAPTER IV.

CIVILISATION OF ARYAN INDIA.

Intellectual and moral progress of the Hindus—Hindu astronomy—Aryabhata, about 500 A.D.—Bhāskar-achārya, about 115 A.D.—Hindu algebra and arithmetic—Hindu medicine and chemistry—Hindu law—Grammar—Hindu literature—Absence of the historic spirit—Sculpture and architecture—Waterworks in Southern India—Indian steel—The city of Ayodhya as described by Valmiki... 35

BOOK II.

THE MOHAMMADAN PERIOD.

CHAPTER I.

EARLY MOHAMMADAN CONQUESTS.

Persian invasion of Surat, A.D. 560—First invasion of Sindh, A.D. 664—Invasion of Sindh by Mohammad Kásim, A.D. 711—Death of the Rajah and his Queen—Kásim invades Gujarát—Defeated by the Rájputs of Chitór and driven out of Western India—Mahmud of Khorásán driven back by the Rajah of Chitór, A.D. 812—The Samánid dynasty of Bokhára, A.D. 913—Alptagin founds the kingdom of Ghazni, about A.D. 962—Succeeded by Sabaktagin, A.D. 976—Sabaktagin grants terms to the King of Lahór—Jaipál breaks his pledge—Rout of his army at Laghmán—Mahmud of Ghazni, A.D. 997—Defeat and death of Jaipál, A.D. 1001—Anandpál succeeds him—Bhatnir conquered, A.D. 1003—Múltán reconquered, A.D. 1005—Great defeat of the Hindus near Pesháwar, A.D. 1008—Thanésar plundered, A.D. 1011—Sack of Mattra, A.D. 1017—Sack of Lahór, A.D. 1021—Capture of Somnáth, A.D. 1024—Revolt of the Hindu princes, A.D. 1043—The Ghaznavid princes driven out of Kábul, A.D. 1156—Capture of Lahór by Mohammad Ghori, A.D. 1186—Defeat of Mohammad, A.D. 1191—Mohammad's revenge, A.D. 1193—First fruits of Mohammad's victory—Conquest of Kanauj and Banáras, A.D. 1194—Rhátor emigration to Marwar—Conquest of Bahár and Bengal by Kutab-ud-din, A.D. 1203—Gaur the seat of Mohammadan rule in Bengal—Mohammadan architecture in India—Altamsh, A.D. 1210—Conquest of Málwa, A.D. 1226—Chingiz Khan invades Kharizm and Kábul, A.D. 1217—Rizia Begam, A.D. 1236—Nazir-ud-din Mahmud, A.D. 1246 to 1266—Ghiyas-ud-din Balban, A.D. 1266 to 1286—Revolt in Bengal, 1279

CHAPTER II.

THE KHILJI DYNASTY OF DEHLI, A.D. 1288-1321.

Jalál-ud-din Khilji founds a new dynasty, A.D. 1288—First invasion of the Dakhan, A.D. 1294—Death of Jalál-ud-din, A.D. 1295—Ala-ud-din, A.D. 1296—Gujarát reconquered, 1297—Moghal invasion, A.D. 1298—Second Moghal inroad, A.D. 1303—Fresh inroads and utter rout of the Moghals, A.D. 1306—Deogarh again reduced to submission, A.D. 1306—Kafúr invades Warangúl, A.D. 1309—The Rajah of Warangúl surrenders his chief stronghold—Invasion of the Carnatic, A.D. 1310—The Dakhan again invaded, A.D. 1312—Massacre of Moghal converts—Character and public acts of Ala-ud-din—Oppression of the nobles—Sufferings of the Hindus—Interference with the markets—The prosperous outset of his reign—A change for the worse, A.D. 1312 to 1316—Plots and revolts—Chitór once more free, A.D. 1315—Death of Ala-ud-din, A.D. 1316—Kafúr's successful treachery—His death, January, 1317—Kutab-ud-din, A.D. 1317—Gujarát and Máharashtra reconquered, A.D. 1318—Khusru invades the Carnatic—Murder of Kutab-ud-din—Death of Khusru, A.D. 1321 56

CHAPTER III.

THE TOGHLAK, SAIYID, AND LODI DYNASTIES,
A.D. 1321-1414.

Ghiyas-ud-din-Toghlak I. 1321—Character of his government—Recapture of Warangúl and conquest of Telingána, A.D. 1323—Toghlak's march into Bengal, 1324—His death—Mohammad Toghlak, A.D. 1325—His general character—He keeps off a Moghal invasion—His successes in Southern India—His futile scheme for conquering Persia about 1332—Invasion of China, A.D. 1337, and utter destruction of the Sultan's army—The king's heavy exactions—His forced copper currency—Revolt of Múltán, Bengal, and the Dakhan—Cruel slaughter in the Doáb—Massacre at Kanauj—Risings in Lahór and Malabar—Outbreak of cholera at Warangúl—The king's retreat to Deogarh—Forced emigration from Dehli to Daulatábád, A.D. 1340—Its ultimate failure—Ill effects of Mohammad's policy—Rising in Gujarát, A.D. 1346—Revolt in Máharashtra, A.D. 1347—Fresh rising in Gujarát—Independent Bahmani dynasty in

the Dakhan, A.D. 1318—Mohammad marches into Sindh—His death, A.D. 1350—State of the empire at his death—Death of Mohammad, 1351—Firoz Shah tries to recover Bengal, A.D. 1353, but fails—His expedition into Sindh—His character as a ruler—His treatment of the Hindus—His splendid public works—Irrigation works in Upper India—Abdication of Firoz in favour of his son, A.D. 1387—Expulsion of Názir-ud-din, 1388—Accession of Ghiyas-ud-din and death of Firoz Shah, October, 1388—Intestine troubles in Dehli—Ghiyas-ud-din restored, A.D. 1390—Mahmud Toghlok, A.D. 1394—Gujarát, Málwa, Khandésh, and Jaunpúr become independent—Timur's invasion of Hindustán, A.D. 1398—Timur massacres his prisoners—Defeat and flight of Mahmud—Massacres in Dehli—Capture of Mirat—Timur recrosses the Indus—Return of Mahmud to Dehli, A.D. 1400—Death of Toghlok, A.D. 1412—Khizr Khan founds the Saiyid dynasty, A.D. 1414—Accession of Mobarak, A.D. 1421—Saiyid Mohammad, 1435—Saiyid Ala-ud-din, 1445—House of Lodi founded by Belol Lodi, A.D. 1450—Belol's character—Extent of his kingdom—Jaunpúr reconquered, A.D. 1478—Sikandar Lodi, A.D. 1488—Persecution of Hindus—Ibráhim Lodi, A.D. 1516—Daulat Khan Lodi invites Bábar into Hindústán—Bábar's early history—He becomes master of Kábul, A.D. 1504—Bábar invades the Panjáb, A.D. 1519—He marches into Sirhind, A.D. 1524—Ala-ud-din defeated by Ibrahim, 1525—Bábar's march to Pá nipat, A.D. 1526—Battle of Pá nipat—Rout of the Dehli troops and death of Ibráhim, 21st April, 1526 65

CHAPTER IV.

CONTEMPORARY INDIAN DYNASTIES.

Progress of Kashmir—Shams-ud-din, first Mohammadan king of Kashmir, A.D. 1326—Shádi Khan or Zain-ul-abidin, A.D. 1422 to 1472—Mohammad, 1486 to 1535—The Panjáb governed by Timur's lieutenant, Khizr Khan, A.D. 1400—Reannexed to the kingdom of Dehli—Múltán—The Langa dynasty, A.D. 1445—Sindh under the Suméra dynasty, A.D. 750—The Jám dynasty, A.D. 1225—The Arghún dynasty, A.D. 1520—History of Gujarát—The Chaura dynasty, A.D. 524—The Salonka dynasty, A.D. 931—The Wághila dynasty, 1228—Gujarát finally conquered by Ala-ud-din Khilji, 1297—Mozaffar Shah founds

the Mohammadan kingdom of Gujarát, 1391—Ahmad Shah, 1411—Reduction of Katiawar—Mahmud Shah, 1459 to 1511—Success of his admiral, Aláz, against the Portuguese, 1508—Bahádúr Shah, 1527—Conquest of Málwa, 1531—Previous history of Málwa—Hindu kings of Málwa—Mohammadan kingdom of Málwa founded by Diláwar Khan Ghori, 1401—Siege of Dehli by Mahmud I.—Mahmud II., 1512—Taken prisoner by the Rajah of Chitór—Málwa annexed by Bahádúr Shah, 1531—History of Khandesh—Malik, Rajah of Khandesh, 1370—Nasir Khan, 1399—Capture of Asirgarh—Founding of Burhánpur—Adil Khan, 1459—Bengal under Fakr-ud-din, and his successes, 1338—Rajah Kháns, 1386—Jit Mal, or Jalál-ud-din, 1392—Ala-ud-din, 1497—Shir Shah, 137—History of Rájputána—The Rajahs of Udaipur—Rahtor emigration to Múrwar, 1195—Character of the Rájputs—Nizám Shah, 1461—Mohammad Shah, 1463—Capture of Kánchi and conquest of the Kankan—Death of Mahmud Gáwan, 1481—Death of Mohammad Shah, 1482—Dismemberment of the Bahmani State, 1489—Yusuf Adil Shah established in Bijápúr, 1489—Ahmadnagar founded by Nizám Shah, 1489—A Brahman made prime minister—Imád Shah founds a dynasty in Berár, 1484 to 1572—The Kutab-Shahi dynasty of Golkonda, 1512 to 1687—Mohammad Kuli, 1580—The Barid Shahi dynasty of Bidar, 1489 to 1656—Early history of Orissa—Yavan settlements in Orissa, B.C.—Spread of Buddhism in Orissa from about 300 B.C.—The last Yavan dynasty, A.D. 323 to 473—The Késari dynasty, A.D. 473 to 1132—Orissa first invaded by the Patháns, A.D. 1242—Krishna Rayah, 1509—Afghan conquest of Orissa, 1567—Orissa conquered by Akbar, 1578—Kingdom of Bijáyanagar, 1347—Krishna Rayah, 1509 to 1524—Mohammadan league against Bijáyanagar, 1567—Battle of Talikot and rout of the Hindus—Downfall of Bijáyanagar..... 80

CHAPTER V.

THE PORTUGUESE IN INDIA.

Prince Henry of Portugal turns his thoughts towards India, A.D. 1415—Cape of Good Hope rounded by Diaz, A.D. 1486—Vasco da Gama anchors off Calicut, 1498—Intrigues of the Moors—Cabral at Calicut and Cochín—Juan de Nueva defeats the Zamorin's fleet, A.D. 1501—Vasco da Gama's second expedition, A.D. 1502—Albuquerque defeats the Zamorin, A.D. 1503

—Victories of Pacheco and Soarez, A.D. 1503—Defeat of the Portuguese at Chaul, A.D. 1508—Alfonso Albuquerque, Viceroy of Portuguese India, A.D. 1508 to 1515—His maritime successes—His supersession and death—Siquéra retreats from Diu, A.D. 1521—Goa besieged by the Mohammadans, 1522—Destruction of the Gujarát fleet, 1527—The Portuguese again defeated before Diu, A.D. 1531—A Portuguese settlement at Diu, about A.D. 1534—Siege of Diu by the Turks and Egyptians, A.D. 1537—Final defeat of the besiegers, A.D. 1538—Portuguese India to the end of the sixteenth century—Diu twice besieged by Mahmud Shah—Culmination of the Portuguese power—Successful defence of Goa, A.D. 1570—Unsuccessful attacks on Chaul and Cháli—Appearance of the Dutch and English in the Eastern seas—Decline of the Portuguese power 92

BOOK III.

THE MOGHAL DYNASTY OF BABAR.

CHAPTER I.

BÁBAR AND HUMÁYUN, 1526—1556.

Progress of Bábar, A.D. 1526—Battle of Sikrí, and defeat of Rána Sanga, A.D. 1527—Defeat of Mahmud Lodi—Capture of Chandéri and death of Medni Rai, A.D. 1528—Conquest of Audh and Bahár, 1528 to 1529—Bábar's failing health—His death, A.D. 1530—His character—Humáyun, A.D. 1530—Revolts in Bundalkhand, Jaunpur, and Bahár, 1630-32—The King of Gujarát defeated and driven to Diu, 1533—Daring capture of Chámpánér—Capture of Chunar, A.D. 1538—Rout of Humáyun's army near Baxár, A.D. June 1539—Humáyun again defeated at Kananj, May, 1540—Shir Shah established at Dehli, A.D. 1540-45—Flight and wanderings of Humáyun—Shir Shah's successes—Shir Shah succeeded by Selim Shah, A.D. 1545—Mohammad Shah, A.D. 1553—Humáyun in exile, A.D. 1540—Birth of Akbar, A.D. 1512—Humáyun finds shelter in Herát, 1544—Humáyun reconquers Kábul, A.D. 1545-47—Humáyun at length established in Kábul, A.D. 1551—Kamran taken and blinded, A.D. 1553—Humáyun's return to Dehli, A.D. 1555—His death, A.D. 1556 93

CHAPTER II.

JALAL-UD-DIN AKBAR, 1556—1605.

Accession of Akbar, A.D. 1556—Battle of Pá nipat, A.D. 1556, and death of Hému—Behrá m's government of Dehli, A.D. 1556-59—Behrá m's dismissal, A.D. 1560—His fruitless revolt and kind

reception by Akbar—His death—Akbar's task—Akbar's early conquests—Troubles in Málwa—Progress of the Uzbek revolt, 1562—Suppression of the Uzbek revolt, A.D. 1567—Capture of Chitôr, March, 1568—Self-devotion of the Rájput garrison—Akbar's relations with Rájput princes—Akbar in Gujarát, A.D. 1572—His boldness and narrow escape—Akbar's sudden march to Ahmadábád, July, 1573—Rout of the rebels, and final suppression of the revolt—Akbar's progress in Bengal, A.D. 1575—Dáúd Khán's revolt and death, A.D. 1576—Final conquest of Bengal, A.D. 1580—Subjection of Orissa, A.D. 1592—Mirza Hákim invades the Panjáb, A.D. 1581—Is taken back into Akbar's favour—Mozaffar Shah's revolt in Gujarát, A.D. 1581—His capture and death, A.D. 1593—Akbar's conquest of Kashmir, A.D. 1587—Moghal disasters in the Yusufzai Hills, A.D. 1586—Annexation of Kandahár, A.D. 1594—Sindh, 1592—Siege of Ahmadnagar by the Moghals, A.D. 1596—Surrender of Bérár to Prince Morád—League of the Dakhani princes against Akbar—Battle of Sonpat, January, 1597—Second siege of Ahmadnagar—Khándesh conquered by the Moghals, 1601—Akbar recalled to Agra by his son's misconduct, 1602—Murder of Abul Fazl—Akbar reconciled to Selím, A.D. 1603—Akbar's illness—Last hours and death of Akbar, October 13th, 1605—Akbar's religious tolerance—His legislation on religious subjects—Removal of Hindu disabilities—Repression of slavery—Introduction of a new era instead of the Hijra—Akbar's war against beards—His steady patronage of Hindus—Akbar as a peaceful administrator—Settlement of the land revenue under Todar Mal—Reforms in the police and public justice—Reforms in the army—Akbar's public works—Extension of the canal system—Personal details regarding Akbar 107

CHAPTER III.

JAHANGIR, 1605—1627.

Accession of Jahángír, A.D. 1605—His first acts—Khusru's rebellion, A.D. 1606—Jahángír's cruel revenge on Khusru's followers—Udaipúr reduced to submission by Shah Jahán, A.D. 1614—Malik Ambar brought to terms, 1617—His final submission to Shah Jahán, 1621—Early history of Núr-Jahán—Her marriage to Shír Afgan—Her husband's death—Núr-Jahán's marriage to the Emperor, A.D. 1611—Her great influence at Court—Núr-Jahán's change of purpose towards Shah Jahán, A.D. 1621—Result of her intrigues—Rebellion of Shah Jahán,

A.D. 1623—His advance into Bengal, A.D. 1624—His retreat and final submission, 1625—Núr-Jahán's intrigues against Mohábat Khán—Jahángír captured by Mohábat Khán, March, 1626—Jahángír finally rescued by his Empress, A.D. 1627—Death of Prince Parvis—Mohábat Khán joins Sháh Jahán—Death of Jahángír, October, 1627—Messrs. Fitch and Newbery's visit to the Court of Akbar, 1587—Captain Lancaster's first voyage, 1591—Foundation of the East India Company, December, 1600—Their first ventures—Mission of Captain Hawkins, 1607—Hawkins received at the Emperor's Court, 1609—His partial success and ultimate failure—Defeat of the Portuguese off Surat by Captain Best, A.D. 1612—Surat finally opened to English trade, 1613—Embassy of Sir Thomas Roe to the Great Moghal, A.D. 1615—New rights conceded to the East India Company by the Emperor, 1617—Massacre of Amboyna, 1623—The Company's first fortified factory at Arnegann, 1625—Founding of Madras, 1639 121

CHAPTER IV.

SHAH JAHAN, 1628—1658.

Accession of Shah Jahán, January, 1628—His splendid tastes—Revolt of Khán Jahán Lodi, 1629—His alliance with Ahmadnagar—Death of Khán Jahan, 1630—Renewal of the war in the Dakhan—Bijápúr and Shahji take up arms against the Moghal—Submission of Bijápúr, 1636—Shahjí makes peace—Capture of the Portuguese fort at Húghli, 1632—Recovery of Kandahár, 1637—Its recapture by the Persians, 1647—Conquest of Balkh, 1645—Balkh abandoned to its former master—The Empire at peace, 1653-55—Shah Jahán's magnificence—State of the Empire—Rebuilding of Dehli—The Taj Mahal at Agra—The Peacock Throne at Dehli—Renewal of war in the Dakhan, 1656—Golkonda invaded by Aurangzib, 1656—The King's submission—Death of Mahmud Adil Shah of Bijápúr, 1656—Aurangzib invades Bijápúr, 1657—The doom of Bijápúr averted for a time by Shah Jahán's illness—Shah Jahán's four sons fight for empire, 1658—Prince Dára—Aurangzib—Shujá—Morád—Aurangzib makes use of Morád—Defeat of Shujá—Dára twice defeated by Aurangzib—Dethronement of Shah Jahán by Aurangzib, August 20th, 1658—Progress of the East India Company—Factory at Pipli, 1634—Factories at Húghli and Balasór—Formation of a rival company, 1634—The two companies coalesce, 1656—Surat and Madras made into Presidencies 129

CHAPTER V.

AURANGZĪB, 1658—1707.

Pursuit of Dāra—Shujā defeated by Aurangzīb, January 3rd, 1659—Shujā's flight into Arakan, 1660—Dāra's defeat and flight into Gujarāt, 1659—Dāra's capture, trial, and execution—Suspicious death of Aurangzīb's nephews, 1661—Murder of Morād, 1662—Mīr Jumla's failure in Assam—His death, 1663—Aurangzīb's dangerous illness, 1663—His success in baffling the intrigues of his enemies—Rise of the Marāṭha power—Mālojī Bhōsla—Marriage of his son, Shāhji Bhōsla, to the daughter of Jādu Rao—Birth of Sívajī. May, 1627—His boyhood at Pūna—His first enterprises—Sívajī captures the fort of Torna, 1646—He conquers part of the Kankan, 1648—Shāhji imprisoned at Bijápūr, 1649, on his son's account—His final release, and the renewal of his son's raids, 1653—Sívajī's character and methods of attack—Sívajī's conquests in the Western Ghāts, 1655—His renewed assaults on Bijápūr, 1658—Murder of Afzul Khan and defeat of his troops by Sívajī, 1659—Sívajī's escape from Panāla, 1660—He makes peace with Bijápūr, 1662—Extent of his conquests—Sívajī at war with the Moghals, 1663—Plunders Surat, 1664—Death of Shahji, 1664—Sívajī's naval exploits—Sack of Barsalór, 1665—Sívajī makes peace with the Moghals—Aurangzīb invites Sívajī to Dehli, 1666—His contemptuous treatment of Sívajī—Sívajī's escape from Dehli, 1666—Prosperity of the Empire at this time—The Emperor's ill success against Bijápūr—Sívajī again makes peace with Aurangzīb, 1667—Levies tribute from Bijápūr and Golkonda—Sívajī's success as a ruler, 1668, 1669—The Emperor breaks the peace, 1670—Sívajī's successes—The chauth levied in Khandesh—Sívajī defeats the Moghals in the open field, 1672—End of the war with the Afghan mountaineers, 1675—Revolt of the Satnarāmis quelled, 1675—Aurangzīb's harsh treatment of the Hindus—The Jiziya re-imposed, 1667—Revolt of the Rājputs, 1678—The Rāna of Mewār makes peace, 1679—Renewal of the war, 1679—Peace accepted by the Rājputs, 1681—Their lasting estrangement from the Empire—Sívajī's progress in the Kankan, 1673—He is crowned at Raigarh, 1674—His raids into Moghal territory, 1675—His march through Southern India, 1677, 1678—He helps Bijápūr against the Moghals, 1679—Death of Sívajī, 5th April, 1680 135

CHAPTER VI.

AURANGZÍB—(*continued*).

Sambají succeeds his father—His early proceedings—Sambají's repulse from Jinjéra, 1682—Aurangzib invades the Dakhan, 1683—Moghal invasion of the Kankan, 1684—Prince Azim's retreat from Bijápúr, 1684—Sambají's successful raids against the Moghals, 1685, 1686—Conquest of Bijápúr by Aurangzib, October, 1686—Death of the last King of Bijápúr, 1689—Fall of Golkonda, 1687—Aurangzib's progress in Southern India, 1688—Capture and cruel death of Sambají, 1689—Results of Moghal ascendancy in the south—Rajah Rám upholds the Marátha cause at Jinji, 1690—Tactics of the Maráthas—Capture of Jinji, 1698—Progress of Rajah Rám—His death, 1700—Tára Bhai, Regent of the Maráthas—Aurangzib's difficulties—Rising of the Játs at Bhartpúr—Aurangzib's disastrous retreat before the Maráthas, 1706—Death of Aurangzib, 21st February, 1707—His character—His administrative abilities—His suspicious nature—His crooked policy—His religious earnestness, and its results—Charles II. grants the East India Company a new charter, 1661—Bombay transferred from Portugal to England, 1662—Its final cession to the East India Company, 1668—The seat of the Company's rule transferred from Surat to Bombay, 1685—Progress of the Company's trade, 1686—The English in Bengal—An English fleet enters the Húghli, 1686—Fighting at Húghli—Job Charnock retreats to Chatanatti, December, 1686—English losses from disease at Hijali, 1687—Charnock again leaves Chatanatti—Bengal abandoned, 1688—The Company's aggressive policy in Western India, 1686—Moghal reprisals—Aurangzib makes peace with the English, 1690—Charnock's return to Chatanatti—Death of Charnock, 1692—The site of Calcutta granted to the Company, 1695—Calcutta fortified, 1700—Amalgamation of rival companies, 1702—Fort William erected into a Presidency, 1707 ... 144

CHAPTER VII.

SUCCESSORS OF AURANGZÍB, 1707—1740.

Prince Azim claims the Moghal throne, 1707—His defeat and death, June, 1707—Defeat and death of Prince Kámbaksh, February, 1708—Moazzim Emperor, as Bahádúr Shah—Sáho, son of Sambají, released by Prince Azim, 1707—Drives his rivals out of Satára, 1708—Concludes a treaty with the Moghals, 1709—Bahádúr Shah makes peace with Márwár and

Jaipur, 1709—Progress of the Sikhs—Sikh outbreak under Guru Govind, 1675—His exile and death—Sirhind invaded by the Sikhs under Bandu, 1709—Bahádur Shah drives the Sikhs back into the hills, 1711—Death of Bahádur Shah, February, 1712—Accession of Jahándar Shah, May, 1712—Murder of the Emperor by Farokhsír, who succeeds him, February, 1713—Murder of Zulfikar Khan—Farokhsír plots against the Saiyids—Hosén Ali, Viceroy of the Dakhan, 1715—The Viceroy makes peace with the Maráthas, 1717—Another rising of the Sikhs—Their utter defeat—Cruel death of Bandu himself, 1716—Farokhsír renews his plots against the Saiyids—Hosén Ali marches to Dehli, 1718—Deposition and death of Farokhsír, February, 1719—Accession of Mohammad Shah, September, 1719—His progress in the Dakhan, 1720—Death of Hosén Ali—Chín Kilich, Vizier at Dehli, 1722—Suppresses a revolt in Gujarát—Chín Kilich retires to the Dakhan, 1723—Defeat of his rival Mobáriz Khan, 1724—Haidarábád becomes his capital—Conquest of Ajmír by Ajít Singh of Márwár, 1721—The Játs of Bhartpúr subdued by Rajah Jai Singh, 1723—Progress of the Maráthas under Bájí Rao, 1720—Invasion of Málwa and Gujarát, 1724-25—Sáho's successes against his rival Samba, 1729—Pilají Gaikwar, Regent of Gujarát, 1731—Rise of Holkar and Sindia—Compact between Chín Kilich Khan and Bájí Rao, 1731—The Moghals are driven out of Gujarát, 1732—Bájí Rao becomes master of Málwa, 1734, and of Jánsí—Chín Kilich and Sádat Khan join to defend the Empire, 1736—Bájí Rao threatens Dehli, 1737—Chín Kilich attacked by the Maráthas near Bopál, 1738—Chín Kilich surrenders Málwa and other territory to Bájí Rao, 1738—Mahmud the Khilji conquers Persia, 1722—Rise of Nádír Shah—Nádír recovers Persia for Tahmasp—Nádír ascends the Persian throne, 1736—Nádír Shah invades Hindústán, November, 1738—Defeat of the Moghals near Karnál, February, 1739—Nádír's entrance into Dehli, March, 1739—Bloody riot in the city, avenged by the massacre of the citizens—Nádír's extortions—Death of Sádat Khan—Death of Bájí Rao, 1740—Chinnají defeats the Portuguese in the Kankan, 1739—Lingering warfare of the Maráthas with Angria—Bájí Rao's failure against Násir Jang 151

CHAPTER VIII.

THE MOGHAL EMPIRE TO THE BATTLE OF PÁNIPAT, 1740—1761.

State of the Moghal Empire after Nádír's departure—Málwa ceded by imperial grant to Bálají, 1741—Ragují again enters Bengal

—His general murdered by Alivardi Khan, 1745—Ragujī's winnings, 1751—Chín Kilich suppresses his son's revolt—The Maráthas in the Carnatic—Their compromise with Nizám-ul-Mulk, 1746—Death of Chín Kilich, June, 1748—Death of Mohammad Shah, April, 1748—His defeat of the Rohilla Afghans, 1745—Ahmad Khan, the Abdáli, crowned at Kandahár, 1747—His invasion of India, 1748—His bloody repulse near Sirhind, March, 1748—Ahmad Shah Emperor, April, 1748—The Rohillas again defeated, 1751—Ahmad Shah, the Duráni, conquers the Panjáb, 1752—Chauth levied in Rohilkhand, 1752—Civil strife in Dehli—Safdar Jang retreats into Audh, 1753—Ahmad Shah blinded and deposed, July, 1754, by Gházi-ud-din the younger—Progress of the Maráthas under Bálají Rao—Death of Rajah Sáho, 1749—Rajah Rám II. installed in his place—The Peshwa reigns at Púna—Cession of West Berár to the Maráthas, 1753—Savandrug captured and made over to Bálají, 1755—Capture of Ahmadábád by Ragoba, 1755—Chauth levied on the Játs and Rájputs, 1756—Dehli entered and sacked by Ahmad Shah the Duráni, August, 1757—Ghazi-ud-din brought back to Dehli by Ragoba, 1757—Ragoba conquers the Panjáb, 1758, and ravages Rohilkhand—Marátha conquests in the Dakhan, 1760—Extent of the Marátha Empire, 1760—Sedásheo Bhao displaces Ragoba in Hindústán—The Maráthas driven out of Rohilkhand, November, 1759—Murder of Alamgír by the Vizier, November, 1759—Ahmad Shah marches on Dehli, 1760—Dehli taken and plundered by the Maráthas—Ahmad Shah crosses the Jamna, October, 1760—The Bhao entrenches himself at Pá nipat—Preliminary encounters between the Afghans and Maráthas—Distress of the Maráthas—Battle of Pá nipat, January 6th, 1761—Strength of the opposing armies—Arrangement of the Marátha line—The Afghan line of battle—Opening successes of the Maráthas—Progress of the battle—Ahmad Shah's last move—Defeat and rout of the Maráthas—The pursuit—Death of the Bhao—Marátha losses—Departure of Ahmad Shah—Downfall of the Moghal Empire—Grief of the Maráthas—Death of the Peshwa 165

CHAPTER IX.

THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH IN INDIA, 1715—1751.

English progress in Bengal—Mr. Hamilton cures the Emperor Farokhsir, 1715—Concessions granted by the Emperor to the English—Shujá-ud-din drives the Ostend East India Company

out of Bankipúr, 1730—Digging of the Marátha Ditch, 1742—The pirates of the Kankan—Failure of the English and Portuguese against Kolába, 1722—Power of the Angrias broken, 1756—The English in Madras—War between France and England, 1744—Designs of Labourdonnais against Madras—Siege of Madras by Labourdonnais, 1746—Surrender of Madras—The terms of surrender disallowed by Dupleix—Labourdonnais quits Madras—Anwar-ud-din claims Madras—Defeat of Anwar-ud-din by the French, November, 1746—The Nawáb again defeated at St. Thomé—Repulse of the French from Fort St. David, January, 1747—Failure of a second attack, March, 1747—The French repulsed from Kadalór, June, 1747—Admiral Boscawen besieges Pondicherry, September, 1747—Failure of the siege—Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, 1748—Madras restored to the English, 1749—English interference in the affairs of Tanjór—Devikátta captured by Major Lawrence, 1749—Dupleix's ambitious designs—Chanda Sáhib released from prison—Defeat and death of Anwar-ud-din, 1749—Progress of Mozáfar Jang—Chanda Sáhib declared Nawáb of the Carnatic—Mohammad Ali, the rival Nawáb, supported by the English—Successes of Násir Jang, Viceroy of the Dakhan, 1750—Dupleix's undaunted bearing—His plots with Násir Jang's nobles—The Viceroy retreats from Pondicherry, 1750—Masulipatam recovered by the French—D'Auteuil's repulse of Mohammad Ali—Mohammad Ali driven across the Panár—Bussy carries the fortress of Jinjí—Násir Jang's advance on Jinjí—His defeat and death, 1750—Mozáfar Jang becomes Subadár of the Dakhan, 1750—Rewards conferred on Dupleix and his countrymen—The power of Dupleix at its highest, 1751—Pathan plots against the new Subadár—Death of Mozáfar Jang, 1751—Salábat Jang made Subadár of the Dakhan 176

CHAPTER X.

THE FIGHT BETWEEN FRENCH AND ENGLISH, 1751—1757.

Intrigues of Mohammad Ali with the English, 1751—Chanda Sáhib's advance on Trichinopoly, February, 1751—Retreat of the English from Volkonda—Clive's successful dash upon Arkot, August, 1751—Siege of Arkot by Rajah Sáhib—Clive's brilliant defence—He refuses to surrender—Final repulse of the besiegers—Retreat of Rajah Sáhib—Clive follows up the enemy—Clive's victory at Kávaripák—Lawrence and Clive at Trichinopoly—The French surrender to Lawrence, June,

1752—Death of Chanda Sáhib—Dupleix continues the war—The English repulsed from Jinjí—Second siege of Trichinopoly, 1752-54—Bussy's proceedings in the Dakhan—Cession of the Northern Sarkárs to Bussy, 1753—M. Godeheu concludes a treaty with the Governor of Madras, Mr. Saunders, December, 1751—Terms of the treaty favourable to the English—Retirement of Dupleix—His subsequent misfortunes—Renewed interference of the English in the affairs of the Carnatic, 1755—The French follow suit—War between France and England, May, 1756—The French appear before Trichinopoly, May, 1757—The siege raised by Calliaud—Successes of the French in 1757—Suráj-ud-daula, the new Subadár of Bengal, 1756—His demands on Mr. Drake—His march upon Calcutta—Siege of Calcutta, June 17, 1756—Disgraceful conduct of the English leaders—Mr. Holwell continues the defence—The garrison abandoned by the ships—Surrender of Fort William, June 21st—The night in the Black Hole—Fate of the survivors—Arrival of English reinforcements in the Húghli, December, 1756—Movements of Colonel Clive—Calcutta re-taken, January, 1757—Suráj-ud-daula marches on Calcutta—Clive attacks, and forces him to retreat, February 1757—Suráj-ud-daula makes peace with the English 185

CHAPTER XI.

THE ENGLISH TRIUMPHANT, 1757—1761.

Suráj-ud-daula plots with the French—Admiral Watson sends him a threatening letter—Clive marches against Chandanagór, 14th March—Surrender of Chandanagór, 23rd March—Suráj-ud-daula renews his plots—Clive's counterplot with Mír Jaffir—Interference of Amín Chand—Clive tricks him with a forged treaty—Flight of Watts from Murshidábád—Clive marches towards Plassy, June, 1757—Capture of Katwa, 17th June—Clive's hesitation—He calls a council of war—Clive crosses the Ganges, June 22nd—Encamps in the grove of Plassy, June 23rd—The Battle of Plassy—The enemy's retreat—Capture of the enemy's camp—Capture and death of Suráj-ud-daula—Mír Jaffir installed as Nawáb of Bengal—Lands bestowed on the East India Company—Clive's reward—Amín Chand undeceived—Clive made Governor of Fort William—Coote's pursuit of the French—Futile risings in Bengal, 1757—English conquests in the Northern Sarkárs, 1758-59—Shah Alam invades Bengal, 1759—He is chased

back to Dehli—A Jágir bestowed on Clive—A Dutch armament in the Húghli, October, 1759—Defeat and capture of the Dutch fleet, November, 1759—The Dutch routed at Bidára by Forde, November 25th—Peace concluded between the English and Dutch—Clive's return to England, February, 1760—The French in Southern India, 1758, under Lally—Capture of Fort St. David by the French—Lally lays siege to Madras, December, 1758—The siege raised, February, 1759—Rout of the French before Wandiwash by Colonel Coote, January, 1760—French reverses, 1760—Siege of Pondicherry, September, 1760—Lally in extremities—Surrender of Pondicherry, January, 1761—Lally's sad fate—Extinction of the French power in India, 1761—The French Company abolished, 1769 193

BOOK IV.

THE RULE OF THE COMPANY.

CHAPTER I.

THE ENGLISH IN BENGAL, 1760—1774.

State of India in 1761—The Moghal empire—The Panjáb—Sindh—Rohilkhand—Audh—Rájputána—The Maráthas—The Játs of Bhartpúr—The Dakhan—Mairsór—The Carnatic—Travankór—Goa—The English possessions—Bengal—Shah Alam marches on Patna, 1760—Defeated by Colonel Calliaud, 20th February—Again defeated by Captain Knox, May, 1760—Knox defeats the Nawáb of Parnia, June 16th—Mír Kásim plots against his father-in-law—Abdication of Mír Jaffir, October, 1760—Mír Kásim's proceedings, 1761—His treatment of Rámnarain, 1762—His disputes with the English—Violent conduct and imprisonment of Mr. Ellis—War between the English and the Nawáb, July, 1763—Mír Kásim's defeat at Katwa, 19th July—Mír Jaffir proclaimed Nawáb—Adams victorious at Geriah, 2nd August—Mír Kásim's cruel vengeance—Walter Reinhardt, *alias* Sumru—Massacre of the English at Patna, 5th October, 1763—Storming of Patna by Major Adams, 6th November—Mír Kásim escapes into Audh, December, 1763—Illness and death of Major Adams—Shah Alam again defeated by the English, 1761—Falls into the hands of Shujá-ud-daula—Shujá-ud-daula repulsed from Patna, 3rd May, 1764—Major Munro quells a mutiny among his troops, August, 1764—Sets out for Baxár, October—Battle of Baxár, 23rd October, 1764—Utter rout of the Nawáb-Vizier—Advance of the English to Allahábád—Fruitless negotiations with Shujá-ud-daula—The English repulsed from Chunár—Defeats of the Maráthas and the Nawáb-Vizier by Carnac, 1765—Shujá-ud-daula makes peace—Arrival of Lord

Clive in Calcutta, May, 1765—Treaty with the Nawáb of Audh—Shah Alam cedes Bengal, Bahár, and Orissa to Clive, August, 1765—Najm-ud-daula, titular Nawáb of Bengal—Retirement of Mir Kásim and Sumru—Position of the English in 1765—Clive suppresses the officers' mutiny, 1766—Reforms carried out by Clive in the civil government—State of affairs in the Civil Service, 1766—Clive suppresses the private trade of the Company's servants—His measures for increasing their lawful pay—Clive sets sail for England, January, 1767—Establishment of "Lord Clive's Fund"—Ill-treatment of Clive at home—His bold defence, 1770—The House of Commons rejects the vote of censure against Clive, 1772—Death of Clive, 24th November, 1774 203

CHAPTER II.

EVENTS IN SOUTHERN AND UPPER INDIA, 1761—1775.

Affairs in the Carnatic, 1761-63—Treaty of 1763 between France and England—Salúbat Jang murdered by his brother, Nizám Ali. 1763—Nizám Ali retires from the Carnatic—The English occupy the Northern Saikárs, 1766—Their treaty of alliance with the Nizám—Rise of Haidar Ali Khan—He dethrones the Rajah of Maisór, 1765—The Peshwa ravages Maisór, January, 1767—Nizám Ali plays the English false—Defeat of Haidar and the Nizám at Changáma by Colonel Smith, 3rd September—Smith again victorious at Trinomalli, 26th September—Calvert's brave defence of Ambúr, November, 1767—The siege raised by Colonel Smith—Fresh treaty between the English and the Nizám, February, 1768—Haidar denounced as a rebel and usurper—English successes in the west, 1768—Recapture of Mangalór by Haidar—Smith's progress in Maisór, 1768—Haidar's failure to obtain terms—His subsequent successes—His bold march upon Madras, 1769—Haidar dictates peace before Madras, April 3, 1769—Maráthas irruption into Northern India, 1769—Shah Alam installed at Dehli by the Maráthas, 25th December, 1771—Shah Alam intrigues against the Maráthas, 1772—Defeat of Najaf Khan—Terms imposed on Shah Alam, December, 1772—Korah and Allahábád made over by the English to Shujá-ud-daula, 1773—Retreat of the Maráthas southwards, May, 1773—Haidar Ali's ill-success against the Maráthas, 1770—His defeat by Trimbak Máma, 1771—His vain appeal to Madras—His disastrous peace with the Maráthas, December, 1771—Progress of affairs in Bengal, 1767-1771—Great famine in Bengal, 1770—Reforms announced by

the Court of Directors, 1771—Rise of Warren Hastings—Hastings at Madras, 1769—His arrival as President at Calcutta, April, 1772—His proceedings against Mohammad Reza Khan and Shitáb Rai—Acquittal of those officers—Disappointment of Nand Kumár—Reforms instituted by Hastings—Transfer of the seat of government to Calcutta—Administration of civil and criminal justice—Settlement of the land-revenue—Appointment of English collectors—The central Board of Revenue—Parliament takes the Company's affairs in hand—Lord North's Regulating Act, 1773—The Governor-General and Council—The Supreme Court of Judicature—Cessation of tribute to the Emperor, 1773—Cession of Korah and Allahábád to Audh—Loan of English troops to Shujá-ud-daula, 1774—Reasons for the arrangement—Colonel Champion enters Rohilkhand, 1774—He defeats the Rohillas at Rámpúr, 23rd April, 1774—Expulsion of the Pathans from Rohilkhand—Beginning of the quarrel between Hastings and his new council, 1774—Character and proceedings of Francis—His reversal of Hastings' policy towards Audh, 1775—Interference of the Council in other directions—Encouragement given by Francis to Nand Kumár—Prosecution of Nand Kumár in the Supreme Court—Trial and condemnation of the Rajah—Remarks on his sentence—No efforts made to save him—Execution of Nand Kumár, August, 1775—Conduct of the spectators 216

CHAPTER III.

WARREN HASTINGS, 1775—1786.

Opposition to Hastings at home—The Court of Proprietors befriend him—Death of Colonel Monson, September, 1776—Improvement in Hastings' prospects—Clavering's attempt to oust Hastings, 1777—Hastings counteracts him—His successful appeal to the Supreme Court—Death of Clavering, 1777—Hastings regains the ascendancy in Council—Revision of the revenue—Settlements in Bengal, 1777-1778—Hastings re-appointed Governor-General, 1778—Progress of events in Western India, 1772-1775—Murder of the Peshwa Narain Rao, 1772—Ragoba claims to succeed him—A rival Peshwa set up at Púna—The Bombay Government agrees to help Ragoba, 1775—Successes of Colonel Keating—The Treaty of Surat disallowed by the Bengal Government—Treaty of Puranda, March, 1776—Failure of the treaty—Reception of M. St. Lubin at Púna, March, 1777—Renewal of war with the

Maráthas, 1778—Retreat of the Bombay force from Taligáon, 1779—Disgraceful convention of Worgáom, 13th January, 1779—The convention annulled—Goddard defeats the Maráthas, 1780—Hartley in the Kankan—Popham's bold march across the Jamna, February, 1780—His daring capture of Gwálíor, August 3rd—Surrender of Bassein to Goddard, December, 1780—Hartley defeats the Maráthas, December—Defeat of Sindia by Carnac, March, 1781—Goddard's retreat from the Gháts, 1781—Progress of Haidar Ali, 1772-1778—His frontier extended to the Kistna, 1778—Rejection of Haidar's overtures at Madras—Progress of affairs in Madras, 1773-77—Dissensions in the Madras Council—Imprisonment of Lord Pigot, 1776—War between France and England, 1778—Pondicherry once more taken, October—Capture of Mahé, 1779—Haidar's wrath thereat—Haidar's league with Nána Farnawís—His preparations for war with the English—Neutrality of the Nizám—Apathy of the Madras Government, 1780—Haidar bursts upon the Carnatic, July, 1780—Slow progress of Baillie's column, September—Its defeat and utter destruction, September 10th—Fate of the survivors—Munro falls back upon Madras—Arkot captured by Haidar, November, 1780—Hastings' energetic measures—Sir Eyre Coote hastens to Madras—Gallant defence and relief of Wandiwash, January, 1781—Coote's failure at Chillambam, June—Coote defeats Haidar at Porto Novo, July 1—Haidar again defeated at Sholingarh, 24th September—War with Holland—Capture of Negapatam, November—Fall of Trincomalee, January, 1782—The revenues of the Carnatic assigned to the English—Coote relieves Vellór—Successes of Major Abingdon in Malabar—Destruction of Braithwaite's force by Tippu, 1782—Indecisive battles at sea—Kadalór and Trincomalee taken by the French—Coote retires to Bengal, December, 1782—Darkening prospects at Madras—Death of Haidar Ali, 7th December, 1782—Breaking up of the Marátha League, 1781-82—Treaty of Sálbai, May, 1782—Death of Coote, 26th April, 1783—Progress of Bussy, April—Capture of Bednór by Tippu, May, 1783—Defence and final surrender of Mangalór, May, 1783, to January, 1781—Bussy defeated by General Stuart, 1783—Cessation of hostilities between French and English, July, 1783—Progress of Colonel Fullarton, 1783—The Madras Government treats for peace with Tippu, 1783—Tippu's treatment of the English envoys—Embarrassments of the Nawáb-Vizier in Audh, 1775—Mutiny among his troops—Treaty of peace with Tippu, March, 1781

CHAPTER IV.

WARREN HASTINGS—(*continued*).

Strife in Bengal between the Supreme Court and the Company's servants, 1779-80—Impey becomes head of the Sadr Dewání Adálat, 1780—Good results of this step—Vacillation of the Court of Directors—Impey removed from his new post, 1782—Impey's recall from Calcutta, 1783—Hastings' demands on Chait Singh—Chait Singh placed in arrest by Hastings, August, 1781—Popular rising in Banáras—Hastings withdraws to Chunár—Flight of Chait Singh, October, 1781—Capture of Bijigarh, 9th November—Appointment of a new Rajah—Hastings' treaty with the Nawáb of Audh—Plunder of the Audh Bégams—Hastings censured by the Court of Directors, 1782—His final retirement, 1785—His reception in England—Pitt's India Bill of 1784—Proceedings against Hastings in the House of Commons—Discussion of the charges brought against him, 1786-87—His impeachment before the Lords, 1788—His triumphant acquittal, 1795—Pension granted him by the Court of Directors—His final appearance before the Commons, 1813—His last years and death, 1813-18—Revenues of the Carnatic restored to Mohammad Ali, 1786—Macpherson acts for Hastings, 1785-86—Lord Cornwallis Governor-General of India, September, 1786—State of affairs in India 246

CHAPTER V.

LORD CORNWALLIS, 1786—1793.

The new Governor-General's reforming measures—Cession of Gantúr to the Company, 1788—The Nizám's overtures to Tippu come to naught—Bargain concluded between Cornwallis and the Nizám—Tippu's resentment—Tippu invades Travankór, December, 1789—Advance of General Meadows, May, 1790—Capture of Pálgát, 21st September—Defeat of Colonel Floyd—Arrival of the Bengal column, November—Hartley's achievements on the Bombay side—Fall of Kananór—Cornwallis replaces Meadows, 1791—Fall of Bangalór, 21st March—Defeat of Tippu at Arikéra, 14th May—Retreat of the English, 26th May—Conquest of the Báramahal—Capture of the Hill Forts in Maisór—Capture of Koimbatore by Tippu, 1791—Final advance on Seringapatam, 1792—Tippu treats for terms—Terms offered by Cornwallis, February—Ifitch in the nego-

tiations, March—Conclusion of the treaty with Tippu, March 19th—Gains of the victors—Progress of Mahdají Sindia—His advance to Dehli, 1784—Titles conferred on the Peshwa and Sindia by Shah Alam—Sindia's difficulties—His troops are disciplined by European officers—His defeat by the Rájputs, 1787—His victory over Ismael Beg, June, 1788—Gholám Kádir enters Dehli—His troops plunder the city—Shah Alam blinded by Gholám Kádir, 10th August, 1788—Gholám Kádir's dreadful punishment, March, 1789—Reinstalment of Shah Alam, October, 1788—Triumphant progress of Mahdají Sindia, 1789-92—Sindia sets out for Púna, 1792—Grand investiture at Púna, July—Sindia's mock humility—Eclipse of Nána Farnawís, 1793—Sindia at the height of his power—His death, 12th February, 1794—The Permanent Settlement of Bengal—The land-rents of India—How divided—Rise of the Bengal Zamíndárs—Decay of the village communities—The Zamíndári settlement of 1789—The Zamíndári settlement made perpetual, 1793—Objections to the Permanent Settlement—Hardships endured by the Rayats—Excuses to be made for the Zamíndárs—The evil of summary sales of land—Drawbacks to a fixed assessment in money—Hard and fast character of such assessments—The land revenue becomes stationary—Resort to new means of taxation—General view of the Permanent Settlement—Its results for good or evil—Reforms in the civil and criminal courts—The revised code of regulations—Exclusion of natives from the higher posts—Evil effects of such exclusion—Capture of Pondicherry, August, 1793—Retirement of Lord Cornwallis, October, 1793—Sir John Shore Governor-General 253

CHAPTER VI.

SIR JOHN SHOPE AND MARQUIS WELLESLEY, 1793—1800.

State of affairs in Southern India, 1794—Shore's refusal to help the Nizám—War between the Maráthas and Nizám Ali, 1795—Defeat of the Nizám at Kúdla, 11th March—The Nizám makes peace, 13th March, 1795—Supremacy of Nána Farnawís, 1795—Death of the Peshwa Mádhu Rao II., October, 1795—Intrigues concerning a successor to the late Peshwa—Chimnaji Appa placed for a term on the throne, May, 1796—Báji Rao installed as Peshwa, 4th December, 1796—Báji plots against Sindia and Nána Farnawís—Imprisonment and subsequent release of the

Nána, 1796-97—Mutiny among the Company's officers, 1796—Concessions made by Sir J. Shore—Displeasure of Pitt's ministry—Disputed succession to the throne of Audh, 1797—Settlement in favour of Súdut Ali—Shore's dangerous position at Lucknow—Retirement of Sir John Shore, March, 1798—Lord Mornington, Governor-General—Tippu's intrigues with the French—Lord Mornington's prompt measures—Unreadiness at Madras—Doubtful attitude of the Maráthas—Disarming of the Nizám's French contingent, 10th October, 1798—New treaty with the Nizám—Tippu declines to be warned in time—His intrigues with Kabul and Buonaparte—Advance of General Harris on Seringapatam, February, 1799—Tippu's obstinacy—Failure of his attack on Hartley, 6th March, 1799—His defeat at Malavalli by General Harris, 27th March—Flank march of General Harris—Tippu's rage thereat—Siege of Seringapatam, 17th April—Assault and capture of the city, 3rd May, by General Baird—Discovery of Tippu's body—Incidents of the funeral, 4th May—Losses and gains of the victors—Lord Mornington becomes Marquis Wellesley—Division of Maisór—The old Hindu dynasty restored—Fate of Tippu's family—Timely frustration of Marátha intrigues—New subsidiary treaty with the Nizám, October, 1800—Tanjór placed under English rule, 1799—Absorption of Surat—Absorption of the Carnatic, 1801—Defence of Lord Wellesley's policy—"Vestigia nulla retrorsum" 267

BOOK V.

THE ENGLISH PARAMOUNT.

CHAPTER I.

MARQUIS WELLESLEY—TO 1805.

Rising of Dhúndia Wágh in Maisór, 1799—His final defeat and death, September, 1800—Baird's expedition to Egypt, 1800—Wellesley's plans against the Mauritius thwarted by the English Admiral, 1801—Overtures from Wellesley to Persia—Ranjít Singh established at Lahór, 1799—Malcolm's embassy to the Shah of Persia, 1800—Its immediate results—Proceedings in Audh, 1799—Rebellion of Wazír Ali, 1799—Cession of territory by Sádat Ali, November, 1801—Wellesley's internal reforms—Remodelling of the Sadr Courts—Encouragement of private trade—The College of Fort William founded, 1800—Jobbery of the Court of Directors—Lord Wellesley's resignation deferred, 1802—Death of Nána Farnawís, 1800—Discussions among the Maráthas—Treaty of Bassein, December, 1802—Bájí Rao brought back to Púna by the English, May, 1803—League of Sindia with the Rajah of Berár—Sindia's threatening movements against the English—Lord Wellesley declares war with the Maráthas, August, 1803—Ahmadnagar captured by General Wellesley, August 12—Battle of Assai, September 23rd—Rout of the Maráthas—Conquest of Kattak, October—Fall of Asirgarh—Victory of Argaum, November 28—Terms of peace with the Rajah of Berár, December, 1803—Capture of Aligarh by General Lake, 29th August, 1803—Defeat of the Maráthas before Dehli, 11th September—Lake's victory near Agra, 10th October—Capture of Agra, 18th October—Battle of Láswári, 1st November—Brave resistance and final rout of Sindia's troops—Cession of territory by Sindia—Treaty of Sarjí Arjangaum, 30th December—Division of the spoils—Wellesley's relations with other native States

—Threatening movements of Holkar, 1804—The English take the field against him, April—Monson's disastrous retreat, July—Holkar's raid against Dehli, October—Ochterlony's gallant defence of Dehli—Pursuit of Holkar by Lake—Battle of Dhig, 13th November—Lake beats up Holkar's quarters at Farokabád, 17th November—Capture of Dhig, 23rd December—Unsuccessful siege of Bhartpúr, February, 1805—The Rajah of Bhartpúr makes peace with the English—Sindia's doubtful attitude—Lord Wellesley's retirement, July, 1805—His treatment at home..... 277

CHAPTER II.

LORD CORNWALLIS AND LORD MINTO, 1805—1813.

Lord Cornwallis again Governor-General, July, 1805—Death of Cornwallis, 5th October—Sir George Barlow acts in his stead—Reversal of Wellesley's policy—Treaty with Sindia, November, 1805—Mild terms granted to Holkar—Hard fate of Bhúndi and Jaipúr—Lord Lake's disgust thereat—Holkar's ravages and extortions, 1806—Raids of Sindia and Amír Khan—Holkar's madness and death, 1811—Intrigues at Púna and Haidarábád, defeated by Sir G. Barlow, 1806—Mutiny of Vellór, July, 1806—Causes of the mutiny—English missionaries in Bengal—Mohammadan intrigues—The mutiny suppressed by Colonel Gillespie—Recall of Lord W. Bentinck from Madras—Lord Minto, Governor-General, July, 1807—Sir G. Barlow transferred to Madras—Aggressive movements of Ranjít Singh, 1808—Metcalf's mission to Lahór—Treaty with Ranjít Singh, April, 1809—Mission to Kábul, 1808—Rival missions to Teheran, 1809—Amír Khan's raid against Berár, 1809—Lord Minto's timely interference—Suppression of piracy on the Malabar coast, 1809—Proceedings against pirates in the Persian Gulf, 1810—Capture of Bourbon and the Mauritius, 1810—Travankór placed under English rule, 1809—Mutiny among the Madras officers, 1809—Its suppression by Sir G. Barlow, 1810—Rise and progress of the Pindáris—Their inroads and cruelties—Retirement of Lord Minto, October, 1813—Renewal of the Company's Charter, 1813—Opening of the trade of India—The first Bishop of Calcutta..... 287

CHAPTER III.

MARQUIS OF HASTINGS, 1813—1823.

Quarrel with Nipál, 1813—Nipálese aggressions—The Earl of Moira, Governor-General, 1813—The Gurkhas invade Ghorakpur,

1814—Expedition against Nipál, October—Death of Gillespie before Kalanga, October, 1814—Capture of Kalanga, December—Blunders of the English Generals—Ochterlony's successes—Capture of Malaun, May, 1815—Vain negotiations for peace, 1815—Campaign of 1816, under Ochterlony—Treaty with Nipál, March, 1816—Lord Moira becomes Marquis of Hastings—Lord Hastings' policy towards native Princes—Alliance with Bhopál—Treaty with Appa Sáhib of Berár, 1816—The Treaty of June, 1817, with the Peshwa—English acquisitions—Jaipúr rescued from Amír Khan—Renewal of Pindári ravages—Campaign against the Pindáris, 1817—Great outbreak of cholera in Bengal, 1817—Suppression of the Pindaris—Death of Chitú, the Pindari leader, 1818—Renewed plottings of the Peshwa, October, 1817—Elphinstone's precautions—Attack upon the Púna Residency, November 5—Battle of Kirki—Rout of the Maráthas—Capture of Púna by General Smith, November 17—Staunton's defence of Kárigaum, 1st January, 1818—Progress of General Munro—Marátha defeat at Ashti, February, 1818—Close pursuit of Bájí Rao—Surrender and dethronement of the Peshwa, May, 1818—Annexation of his dominions—The Rajah of Satára restored to power—Revolt of Appa Sáhib—Battle of Sitabaldi, November, 1817—Defeat of the Maráthas—Capture of Nágpúr, December—Dethronement of Appa Sáhib—His wanderings and death—War with Holkar—Victory of Mahidpúr, 21st December, 1817—Treaty of Mandisóri, 6th January, 1818—Sindia's neutral attitude—Results of the campaign—The English supreme in India—A new reign of peace and order—Capture of Asirgarh, April, 1819—Elphinstone at Bombay, 1820—The Rayatwári settlement in Madras, 1820—The village-settlement in the North-Western Provinces, 1821—Outbreak in Orissa, 1818—Lord Hastings' domestic policy—Establishment of native schools—The first native newspaper, 1818—Promotion of public works—Acquisition of Singapore, 1819—State of affairs at Haidarábád—Settlement of the Nizám's debts—Failure of Messrs. Palmer & Co., 1822—Flourishing state of the Indian revenues—Retirement of Lord Hastings, January 1, 1823—His treatment by the Company, 1825. 295

CHAPTER IV.

LORD AMHERST AND LORD WILLIAM BENTINCK, 1823—1835.

Lord Amherst lands in India, 1823—Progress of the Burmese—Burman aggressions, 1818-22—Fresh raids of the Burmese, 1823—Boastful advance of Burman troops—War declared

against Burmah, February, 1821—Capture of Rangoon, May 11th—Movements on the Tenasserim coast—Campbell's advance from Rangoon, December, 1821—Defeat of the Burmese—Capture of Donabyú, April, 1825—Occupation of Prome, April 25—Conquest of Assam, 1825—Ill-success of the Kachár column—Morison's advance into Arakán, 1825—Dreadful sickness among his troops—Campbell's final advance on Ava, December, 1825—Fresh defeats of the Burmese—Treaty of Yandabú, 21th February, 1826—Cession of Assam, Arakán, and Tenasserim—Mutiny of the 47th Native Infantry at Barrackpúr, October, 1824—Causes of the mutiny—Its stern suppression, 2nd November—Fate of the mutineers—Siege of Bhartpúr, December, 1825—Its capture, 18th January, 1826—Dethronement of the Rajah—Death of Sir Thomas Munro, 1827—Sir John Malcolm, Governor of Bombay, 1827—Bishop Heber's death, 1826—Death of Daulat Rao Sindia—Death of Sir David Ochterlony—Sir C. Metcalfe at Dehli—Retirement of Lord Amherst—Lord William Bentinck, Governor-General, 1828-35—Prohibition of Satti, 1829—Crusade against Thagga, 1830—Its final suppression by Major Sleeman—The Half-Batta order, 1829—Retrenchments in the civil service—Abolition of flogging in the Native army—Native Christians in the civil service—Change in the laws of inheritance—Judicial reforms—The Calcutta Medical College, 1835—New Settlement of the North-Western Provinces under Mr. Robert Bird, 1833—The first steam voyage up the Ganges, 1830—The first steamer from Bombay to Suez—The native Princes—Affairs in Jodpúr—Gwalior, 1833—Jaipúr and Bhopál—Misrule in Audh, 1831—Annexation of Kúrg, 1831—Annexation of Kachár, 1832—Occupation of Mai-ór, 1832—Mohammadan rising at Búrasat, 1831—Rebellion of the Kóls in Bengal—Lieutenant Outram among the Bhíls—Hall's labours in Mairwára—The Kháuds of Gúmsar—Efforts of Campbell and Macpherson to suppress human sacrifices—Attempts to quell female infanticide among the Rájputs, 1830—Causes of the practice—Russian progress in Persia, 1812-28—Burnes's Mission to Ranjít Singh, 1831—The Amírs of Sindh—Burnes proceeds up the Indus—Meeting at Rupar between Lord Bentinck and Ranjít Singh, October, 1831—Commercial treaties with Sindh and the Panjáb, 1832—Retirement of Lord W. Bentinck, March, 1835—The Charter Act of 1833—Extinction of the Company's trade privileges—New rights conceded to natives and Europeans—Legislative powers of the Governor-General—Mr. Macaulay in the Supreme Council..... 304

CHAPTER V.

LORD AUCKLAND, 1836—1842.

Sir Charles Metcalfe acts as Governor-General, 1835—Repeal of the laws against the press of India—Annoyance of the Home Government—Lord Auckland, Governor-General, 1836—Sir C. Metcalfe retires from India, 1836—Lord Auckland interferes in Audh, 1837—Dethronement of the King of Satára, 1839—Captain Burnes at Kabul, 1837—Dost Mohammad asks for English aid—Lord Auckland's cold reply—Herát besieged by the Persians, 1837—Afghan intrigues with Persia—Lord Auckland takes part with Shah Shújá—The Tripartite Treaty, 1838—Opinions regarding Lord Auckland's policy—Pottinger's successful defence of Herát—Retreat of the Persians from Herát, 1838—Assembling of the Army of the Indus, November, 1838—Coercion of the Sindh Amírs—The invasion of Afghanistan, 1839—Shah Shújá at Kandahar, April—Capture of Ghazni, 22nd July—Flight of Dost Mohammad, August—The English occupy Kabul, 7th August—Colonel Wade's advance through the Khaibar, August—Death of Ranjít Singh, 27th June—Honours bestowed on the conquerors—Return of the Bombay troops, September—Capture of Khelát, October—Sir W. Macnaghten at Kabul—Surrender of Dost Mohammad, November, 1840—Khilji rising, May, 1841—Growing disaffection among the Afghans—Murder of Sir Alexander Burnes, 2nd November—Imbecility of the English commanders—Disasters at Kabul—Macnaghten treats with the Afghans—Disgraceful conditions accepted by General Elphinstone, December—Treachery of the Afghans—Murder of Macnaghten by Akbar Khan, 23rd December—Negotiations resumed—Elphinstone's retreat from Kabul, 6th January, 1842—Terrible disasters on the way—Dr. Brydon reaches Jalálábád, 13th January—Annihilation of the Kabul force—State of feeling in India—Bewilderment at head-quarters—Bold attitude of Nott and Sale—Clerk's energy at Lahór—Wild's repulse from the Khaibar Pass, February—Darkening prospects at Pesháwar, February, 1842—March of reinforcements under General Pollock—Retirement of Lord Auckland, February 28—His recent domestic policy—Baneful effects of his foreign policy 315

CHAPTER VI.

LORD ELLENBOROUGH AND LORD HARDINGE, 1842—1848.

Lord Ellenborough, Governor-General, 1842—Pollock at Pesháwar—The difficulties in his way—His advance into the Khaibar,

5th April—His brilliant success—Relief of Jalálábád—Sale's final defeat of Akbar Khan, 7th April—Pollock obtains leave to retire by way of Kabul, July—Nott's advance from Kandahár, 7th August—Recapture of Ghazni, 30th August—Nott's victorious entry into Kabul, 17th September—Pollock's advance from Jalálábád, 20th August—Victories of Jagdalak and Tazín, August-September—Pollock's entry into the Bála Hissar, 16th September—Rescue of the English captives by Shakespear—Destruction of the Kabul Bazaar—March homeward of the conquerors, 12th October—Fate of Shah Shuja and his family—Grand parade at Firozpur—Liberation of Dost Mohammad—The Governor-General's bombast—Rewards bestowed on the victors—War with the Sindh Amírs, 1843—Balúchi attack on the Haidarábád Residency, February, 1843—Outram's retreat—Napier's victory at Miání, 17th February—The battle of Dabha or Haidarábád, 24th March—Annexation of Sindh—Disturbances in Gwalior—Anarchy in the Panjáb, 1843—Gough's troops march towards Gwalior, December—Victories of Máharájpur and Paniár, 29th December—Submission of Gwalior, 1841—Colonel Sleeman's powers as Resident at Gwalior—Abolition of slavery, 1843—Recall of Lord Ellenborough, June, 1844—Sir H. Hardinge, Governor-General, July—Mutiny of Bengal Sepoys, March, 1841—Outbreak in the Southern Marátha Country, October—Its suppression by Outram, 1845—Napier's campaign in the Trakki Hills, 1845—State of affairs in the Panjáb—Death of Híra Singh, 1841—Sir H. Hardinge prepares for war—The Sikhs march towards the Satlaj, December, 1845—Sir Hugh Gough hastens to meet them—The Sikhs cross the Satlaj, 12th December—They decline Littler's offer of battle, 16th December—Battle of Mudki, 18th December—Defeat of the Sikhs—Battle of Firozshahr, 21st December—The night of the 21st—The battle renewed, 22nd December—Final overthrow of the Sikhs—Losses of the victors—Sikh movement on Ludíána, 20th January, 1846—The affair of Baduwal—Smith's victory at Aliwal, 28th January—Battle of Sobraon, 10th February—Utter rout of the Sikhs—Losses and gains of the victors—Gough's advance to Lahór—Treaty of February 23—Kashmír sold to Guláb Singh, March, 1846—Colonel Lawrence resident at Lahór—Hardinge and Gough made peers—Lawrence suppresses a revolt in Kashmír, October, 1846—Banishment of Lal Singh—Treaty of Bhairawal, 26th December—Lord Hardinge's home policy—Progress of the Ganges Canal—First surveys for Indian railways, 1846—Private enterprise—Native education—Local disturbances, 1846-48—Retirement of Lord Hardinge, March, 1848 323

BOOK VI.

CONSOLIDATION OF ENGLISH RULE.

CHAPTER I.

LORD DALHOUSIE, 1848—1856.

Lord Dalhousie lands in India, January, 1848—Rising of Mulráj at Múltán, April—Murder of Anderson and Vans Agnew—Delay in sending troops against Mulráj—Edwardes and Cortlandt take the field—Mulráj thrice defeated, June—Múltán besieged by General Whish, 7th September—Desertion of Shír Singh—Suspension of the siege—Spread of revolt in the Panjáb—Lord Dalhousie declares war with the Sikhs, October—The Afghans join the Sikhs—The siege of Múltán renewed, 27th December—Mulráj surrenders the citadel, 22nd January, 1849—Skirmish at Rámnagar, 22nd November, 1848—Thackwell repulses the Sikhs at Sadúlaj úr, 2nd December—Gough engages the Sikhs at Chilianwála, 13th January, 1849—Defeat of the enemy—Heavy loss of the victors—Shír Singh's flank march on Lahór—The Sikhs entrenched at Gujarát—Battle of Gujarát, 21st February, 1849—Storming of Kálra—Utter rout of the Sikhs—Gilbert's chase of the Sikhs and Afghans—The surrender at Ráwal Pindi, March—Flight of the Afghans beyond the Khairbar—Annexation of the Panjáb, 29th March—The new Board of Administration, under Sir Henry Lawrence—Good results of the new rule—Mutiny in some Bengal regiments, 1850—Sir C. Napier resigns the chief command—Origin of the second Burmese war, 1852—General Godwin approaches Rangoon, April—Capture of Rangoon and other places, April-June—Godwin's advance to Prome, October—Sir J. Cheape captures Donabyú, January, 1853—Negotiations for peace—Annexation of Pegu, 1853—Pegu under Colonel Phayre—Absorption of Satára, 1848—Absorption of Nágpúr, 1853—Absorption of Jhánsí—The question of Karauli—The Nána Dhúndú Pant and his claims—

Cession of Berár in pledge by the Nizám, 1853—Dalhousie's answer to the Rajah of Maisôr, 1856—Progress of misrule in Audh—Warnings of successive Governors-General—Opinions of Sleeman and Outram—Dalhousie's general agreement with them both—Complete annexation ordered from home—The King of Audh formally dethroned, 7th February, 1856—Rising of the Santals, July, 1855—Their ravages and final suppression—Dalhousie's administrative genius—Sir John Lawrence, Chief Commissioner of the Panjáb, 1853—Progress of public works—Opening of the Ganges Canal, 8th April, 1854—Reward bestowed on Colonel Cautley—Canals in the Panjáb—Extent of Dalhousie's reforms—A cheap uniform postage—Progress of telegraphs under Dr. O'Shaughnessy—New system of administrative reports—Spread of railways—Progress of education—Renewal of the Company's Charter, 1853—Remodelling of the Court of Directors—The Indian Civil Service opened to public competition—Bengal obtains a Lieutenant-Governor—Dalhousie's farewell minutes—His final retirement, March, 1856—His death, 1860 335

CHAPTER II.

LORD CANNING, 1856—1862.

Lord Canning's arrival in India, 29th February, 1856—Macaulay's Penal Code taken up by Mr. Peacock—Enlistment for general service—New terms imposed on the Delhi Princes—War with Persia—Capture of Bushír, December, 1856—Outram's victory at Khusháb, 8th February, 1857—Further successes, March—Peace concluded with the Shah, 4th March—Signs of coming danger to the English in India, 1857—Prevalence of strange reports—Plotters at work—Spread of lying rumours—Weak state of the English garrisons—Restlessness of the Bengal Sepoys—The story of the greased cartridges, 1857—Strange proceedings of the Sepoys—Mutiny of the 19th N.I., 20th February—Punishment of the mutineers—Outbreak at Barrackpore, 29th March—Spread of disaffection—Wild stories—The mysterious *chapáthís*—Mutiny in Audh, 2nd May—Its suppression by Sir H. Lawrence—Mutiny and massacres at Meerut, 10th May—Inaction of the English commanders—Rising and murders at Delhi, 11th May—Willoughby's brave defence of the arsenal—Flight of the surviving English—Timely warnings to other stations—Prompt action of the English in the Panjáb—Disarming of Sepoys at Lahór and Pesháwar—Punishment of the Mardán mutineers—Loyalty of

the people in the Panjáb—Good conduct of some native princes—Friendliness of Dost Mohammad—Sir J. Lawrence sends help across the Satlaj—Progress of revolt in May and June—The Rani of Jhānsi's cruel revenge—State of things in Audh, May—Sad plight of the Cawnpore garrison, June—Havoc in the North-Western Provinces—Measures taken by Lord Canning—Panic in Calcutta—Colonel Neill at Banāras, June—His arrival at Allahābād, 11th June—Havelock starts from Allahābād, 7th July—He twice defeats the Nāna—The English re-enter Cawnpore, 17th July—Sufferings and fate of Wheeler's garrison, June-July—Escape of four survivors 350

CHAPTER III.

LORD CANNING (*continued*).

Defeat of the rebels at Badli Serai, 8th June—Siege of Dehli by Sir Henry Barnard—Death of Sir H. Barnard—Illness of General Reed—Brigadier Wilson takes the command, July—Succours from the Panjáb—Nicholson's arrival in camp, August—Rout of the rebels at Najafgarh, 25th August—Critical state of affairs in India—Arrival of troops from Ceylon and the Cape—Progress of Major Eyre—State of things inside Dehli, September—The heavy batteries open fire on the city, 11th September—Advance of the storming columns, 14th September—Nicholson mortally wounded—Final capture of the whole city, 20th September—The King of Delhi taken prisoner, 21st September—Fate of the Dehli princes—Trial of the King, March, 1858—His sentence commuted to transportation—The conquest of Dehli a wonderful feat—Lawrence's share therein—The rebellion receives a death-blow—Defence of Lucknow, July to September, 1857—Death of Sir H. Lawrence, 4th July—Endurance of the besieged—Outram's march from Cawnpore, 19th September—Storming of the Alambāgh, 23rd September—Havelock enters the Lucknow Residency, 25th September—Sir Colin Campbell approaches Lucknow, November—Slaughter of rebels at the Sikandar Bagh, 16th November—Relief and withdrawal of the Lucknow garrison, 25th November—Windham at Cawnpore—Campbell comes to his rescue, 28th November—Rout of the Gwalior rebels, 6th December—Their pursuit and dispersion, 9th December—Fresh victories under Osborne and Stewart—Punishment of captured rebels—Canning's merciful policy—Limited character of the rebellion—Good fruits of Canning's interference—Progress of the English arms—Camp-

bell's second advance on Lucknow, 2nd March, 1858—Final capture of the city, 10th March—Death of Hodson and Peel—English successes in Rohilkhand, May-June—Suppression of revolt in Bahár—Re-conquest of all Andh, December—Progress of Tántia Topi, 1858—Whitlock's successes in Bundalkhand—Sir Hugh Rose in Central India—Capture of Gáiakotah, 11th February—Storming of Chandéri, 17th March—Defeat of Tántia Topi at the Betwah, 1st April—Capture of Jhánsí, 3rd April—Defeat of the Ráni at Kúnch, 7th May—Capture of Kulpi by Sir H. Rose, 23rd May—Sindia's flight from Gwalior, 1st June—Re-capture of Gwalior by Sir H. Rose, 20th June—Rout of the rebels by Napier, 21st June—Review of Sir H. Rose's achievements 361

BOOK VII.

INDIA UNDER THE CROWN.

CHAPTER I.

LORD CANNING—(*concluded.*)

State of affairs from June to December, 1858—Capture and execution of Tántia Topi, April, 1859—Punishment of the surviving mutineers and leading rebels—Political extinction of the East India Company, 2nd August, 1858—New government of India by the Crown—Pension voted to Sir John Lawrence—Last words on the Company's rule—Gradual undermining of its power—The new rule proclaimed throughout India, 1st November, 1858—The hopes to which it gave birth—Honours and rewards bestowed on the victors—The rewarding of loyal natives—The new Legislative Council, 1861—Lord Canning's "Sanads"—Amalgamation of Supreme and Sadr Courts, 1861—Native judges admitted to the High Courts—Macaulay's Penal Code made law, 1861—Wilson's financial reforms, 1860—Mr. Laing succeeds him—Riots in the Indigo districts, 1860-61—Famine in Upper India, 1861—Death of Colonel Baird Smith—Great Darbár at Allahábád, November, 1861—The new Order of the Star of India—Lord Canning's retirement, 1862—His death and character—Progress of public works—India's foreign trade—Commercial progress in Bombay

CHAPTER II.

LORD ELGIN AND SIR JOHN LAWRENCE, 1862—1869.

Lord Elgin Governor-General, 1862—His journey through the upper provinces, 1863—His untimely death, 20th November, 1863—

The Sitána campaign, October—Critical position of our troops, November—Sir W. Denison's timely interference—Storming of Ambéla, December—Destruction of Malka, and end of the war—Sir John Lawrence Governor-General, January, 1864—His first Darbár at Lahór, November, 1864—Failure of Mr. Eden's mission to Bhotán, 1863—War with Bhotán, November, 1864—Its successful issue, 1865—Wághir rising in Katiawár, 1868—Wylde's march to the Black Mountain, October—Napier's Abyssinian campaign, 1868—Death of Dost Mohammad, 1863—Civil war between his sons—Sir John Lawrence's neutral attitude—Shír Ali established at Kabul, December, 1868—India's internal progress—Growth of the cotton trade in Western and Central India—The commercial crash in Bombay, 1865—Partial character of its effects—Progress of the Central Provinces under Sir R. Temple—British Burmah under Sir Arthur Phayre—Progress in Audh—Tenant-rights secured in Audh, 1866—The Panjáb under Sir D. McLeod—The North-Western Provinces—Good effects of canal irrigation—The famine in Orissa, 1866—Great loss of life—Lord Napier at Madras—Maisór saved from famine, 1867—Growth of India's foreign trade—Increase of Indian revenues—Railways and irrigation work—Building of barracks and fortified posts—Sanitary improvements—Municipal committees first formed—Reforms in the police and the jails—Progress of popular education—Normal schools, and schools for girls—Native zeal for education—The Indian Forest Department—First appointment of a Cotton Commissioner—Progress of telegraphs—Trade concessions of native rulers—Captain Sladen's mission to Bhámo, 1868—Retirement of Sir J. Lawrence, January, 1869—His last measures—He obtains a peerage 382

CHAPTER III.

LORD MAYO AND LORD NORTHBROOK, 1869—1876.

The Earl of Mayo Governor-General, 1869—His meeting with Shír Ali, March—Its good results—Distress in Rájputána—The Bardwán fever—Lord Mayo's retrenchments—The income-tax doubled, October, 1869—Trebling of the tax, April, 1870—Its mischievous effects—Popular outcry against it—Prince Alfred's visit to Calcutta, December, 1869—The great Calcutta Darbár—The Prince's progress through India, 1870—Opening of the Jabalpur Railway, 7th March—Beginning of State railways—Progress on the guaranteed lines—Public works and education

—The new Department of Trade and Agriculture, 1870—Coal-mines in the Wardah Valley—Death of Sir Henry Durand, January, 1871—Loshai raid into Kachúr—Expedition against the Loshais, November—Its successful issue, February, 1872—Trial of Amír Khan, the Wáhábi—Kúka rising in Sirhind, January, 1872—Its merciless suppression—Lord Mayo's Afghán policy—Settlement of the Khehát and Sístán boundaries by Sir F. Goldsmid—Lord Mayo's foreign policy—His treatment of native feudatories—His energy and love of hard work—His zeal for India's welfare—Progress of legislation—The Panjáb Tenancy Act—Indian Marriage Act—Coolie emigration—Road and school cesses in Bengal—New rules for the Indian Council, 1869—New powers conferred on the local governments, 1871—Lord Mayo's voyage to Rangoon and Maulmain, January, 1872—He visits the Andaman Islands, February—His murder by a convict, 8th February—The general sorrow in India for his loss—Lord Napier acts in his stead—Lord Northbrook Governor-General, May—His advice to the Khán of Khiva—His tour through Upper and Western India—His careful study of fiscal questions—Abolition of the income-tax, March, 1873—Settlement of the Afghán frontier—Lord Northbrook's dealings with Shír Ali—Mr. Forsyth's mission to Kashgar—Sir Bartle Frere's mission to Zanzibar, 1872—The Sultan agrees to suppress the slave-trade, 1873—The famine in Bengal, 1873-4—Lord Northbrook's forethought—Relief measures carried out by Temple and others—Remarkable saving of life—Services of Sir G. Campbell—Assam detached from Bengal—Progress in the N.W. Provinces—Riots in the Bombay Dakhan—Trial and dethronement of the Gaikwar, 1875—English influence on Native Princes—Progress of the natives under our rule—Lord Hobart in Madras—Visit of the Prince of Wales—Lord Northbrook's Afghan policy—His retirement, 1876..... 391

CHAPTER IV.

FROM LORD LYTTON TO THE MARQUIS OF LANSDOWNE—
1876—1889.

Lord Lytton's arrival in India, April, 1876—His imperious dealings with Sher Ali—The Conference at Peshawar, 1877—Its failure—Occupation of Kwatta—The Imperial Assemblage at Delhi, January, 1877—The great famine in Southern India, 1877-8—Height of the distress, July to September—Great mortality—Lord Lytton's famine insurance measures, 1878—Despatch of troops to Malta—A Russian embassy at Kabul—Lord Lytton's counter-move—Chamberlain's Mission turned back from

Ali Masjid—Beginning of the second Afghan war, November, 1878—Jalalabad and Kandahar occupied by our troops—Death of Sher Ali—Treaty of Gandamak with Yakub Khan, April, 1879—Murder of the new Resident and his escort at Kabul, September—Renewal of the war—Attacks on Roberts's garrison—Surrender of Yakub Khan—Battle of Ahmad Khel, 1880—Lord Lytton resigns office, April, 1880—Censorship of the Native Press—Dakhan Agriculturists Relief Act—The Statutory Civil Service—The Marquis of Ripon Governor-General, April, 1880—Abdurrahman installed as Amir at Kabul—The disaster at Maiwand, July—Roberts's victory at Kandahar, September—Withdrawal of our garrisons from Afghanistan, 1881—Heavy cost of the war—Progress of public works—Great development of trade—Lord Ripon's fiscal reforms—Commission on public education, 1882—Extensive municipal reforms—Great outcry against the Ilbert Bill—Lord Ripon's compromise—Extraordinary display of popular sympathy—Mairor replaced under Native rule, 1881—Lord Dufferin Governor-General, 1884—The Bengal Tenancy Act of 1885—Tenant right in Oudh, 1887—The storm on the Afghan frontier blows over, 1885—The marking out of the frontier completed—Provocations to war with Burmah—Occupation of Mandalay, 1885—Annexation of Upper Burmah, February, 1886—Difficulties of the new rule—Peace and order gradually secured—Last years of Lord Dufferin's Government—Little wars on the frontier, 1888—Lord Dufferin's efforts to make both ends meet—Deficit of six millions—Marks of Native loyalty—Celebration of the Queen's Jubilee, 1887—The leaven of English influence at work in Rajputana and elsewhere—Zenana Missions—Native students in England—The National Congress—Lord Dufferin's concession to Native demands—Enquiry into the condition of the people—The Marquis of Lansdowne becomes Governor-General, 1889—Hopeful prospects 407

ILLUSTRATIONS.



SIMLA.....	(<i>Frontispiece</i>)
KOL DANCE	lvi
GROUP OF BRAHMANS	16
CAVES OF ELEPHANTA	38
THE KUTAB-MINAR, DEHLI	52
PATHANS	78
RAJPUTS	86
SRINAGAR IN KASHMIR.....	112
TOMB OF HUMAYUN	119
THE TAJ-MAHAL AT AGRA	131
AFGHAN GROUP	174
SIKH JAT	201
ZAMINDAR, DAGAR TRIBE	224
BANARAS	248
FAMINE-STRICKEN PEASANTS	261
GATE OF FORT BHARIPOR	285
FORT JAMRUD, PESHAWAR	324
THE FORT, AGRA	326
GOVERNMENT HOUSE, CALCUTTA	346
LAHOR. VIEW OF FORT FROM PALACE	357
MEMORIAL WELL, CAWNPORE ..	359
GURKHA, BRAHMAN, AND SUDRA	369
BOMBAY	386

INTRODUCTION.

THE empire now ruled by the Viceroy of India includes not only the great Indian peninsula stretching under the shadow of the Himalayas, from the valley of the Indus to that of the Bramaputra, but also the broad regions watered by the Irawadi and the Salwin. This vast area of nearly 1,700,000 square miles exceeds that of all Europe outside Russia. From the northernmost corner of the Panjáb to Cape Comórin in the south its greatest length is about 1,830 miles, while its breadth eastward from Karáchi, near the mouth of the Indus, to the easternmost point of Burmah, is even greater. The great mountain-wall of the Himálayas, which forms its northern boundary, curves away from the Yang-tse river westward to the Hindu Khúsh and the Sulaimán Hills, dividing India from China, Tibet, and Turkistan. The Sulaimán and Hála ranges shut out the Panjáb and Sindh from their western neighbours in Afghánistán and Baluchistán. On the east the new Burman frontier may be said to march with that of China, Laos, and Siam. The whole length of coast-line from Karáchi to the southernmost point of Tenasserim has been reckoned at nearly 4,000 miles, while the extent of land-frontier is a thousand miles longer.

From the wild recesses of the towering Himálayas flow down the sources of the great rivers, the Indus, the Ganges, the Brahmapútra, which find their several outlets in the Arabian Sea and the Bay of Bengal. Each of them on its long course to the ocean is fed by numerous streams, of a volume sometimes equalling its own. Two nearly parallel ranges of hills, the Vindhya and the Sâtpúra, stretching eastward from the Gulf of Cambay to the valley of the Lower Ganges, divide India itself into two unequal parts, Southern India forming a kind of triangle whose point is Cape Comórin, with the double line of hills aforesaid for its base. At its western end the Vindhya range meets the Aravalli, a long, low chain of hills sweeping north-eastward across Rájputana almost to Dehli. In the east it merges into the highlands of Orissa, Chota Nágpur, and Birbhúm. Again, from either end two chains of hills, the Eastern and Western Ghats, pass southwards at varying distances from the coast, to meet at last in the Nilgiri or Blue Mountains of Malabar, and to re-appear after a breach of twenty miles in the lofty hills that border Travankór and touch the sea at Cape Comórin. The Western Ghats are much higher than the Eastern, and far more abrupt on their seaward face. Their eastern ridges slope into the table-lands of the Dakhan and Maisór, or serve as outworks to the loftier Nilgiris, even as the lower Sewalik range serves as an outwork to the Himálayas between the Satlaj and the Ganges.

From the wooded heart of the Vindhya the Narbadha winds along its rocky bed, past the rising city of Jabalpur, through several hundred miles of rock and forest, until it reaches the Gulf of Cambay, below Baróch. Enclosed between the Vindhya and Sâtpúra ranges the Narbadha valley separates Southern India from Hindústán Proper. The Tápti flows past the southern slopes of the Sâtpúras into the same gulf a little below Surat. The Godávári,

on the other hand, after leaving the Western Gháts near Nasik, crosses the Nizám's dominions, and, swollen by many tributary streams, empties itself by several mouths into the Bay of Bengal near Kokonáda. The Kistna or Krishna also flows from the Western Gháts near Máhableshwar, eastward to the Coromandel coast, receiving on its way the Bhima and the Tumbadra. India altogether abounds in rivers great and small, four of which, including the Irawádi, are more than fifteen hundred miles long, while three of those in Southern India exceed 800 miles. It can boast, however, but few good harbours, chief among which are Bombay, Rangoon, and Maulmain. Goa, another good harbour, belongs to Portugal, and Karáchi, the port of Sindh, has yet to prove itself a worthy rival of Bombay. Kárwar, Cochin, and Vizíadrug, would repay the cost of improving them. The approach to Calcutta on the Húghli is rendered dangerous to large vessels by the "William and Mary" shoal.

Of the few lakes which India possesses nearly all are more or less salt. One of these, the great Ran of Cutch, is 190 miles long, and varies in breadth from two to ninety miles. In the dry season a waste of sand dotted with pools of salt water, it becomes in the rainy season an enormous marsh. From some of these lakes large quantities of salt are manufactured. A long tract of desert stretches from the southern border of Sindh to the northern boundary of Rájputána. Nearly all the country, indeed, between the Indus and the Aravalli Hills is a waste of sand, dotted with oases of varying size and fertility. The prevalence of sand and saltpetre in the soil of Upper India points to a time when all India north of the Vindhya lay buried in the sea, which washed the feet of the Himálayas themselves. The fertile plains now watered by the Ganges and its affluents must have been the work of ages, during which the Himálayan rivers kept bringing down their yearly loads of earth from the mountains to the sea. It

appears that the Himálayas themselves, whose snowy peaks now soar to a height ranging from 20,000 to 29,000 feet, have gradually been upheaved by volcanic agency from their ocean beds.

A broad belt of marshy jungle deadly to human life divides these mountains from the adjacent plains. The forests of this "Terai" afford ample means of smelting the iron found on the lower slopes of the hills. Many parts of India are rich in forest trees suited to almost every purpose of use or ornament. The teak of Burmah, the Godávari valley, and Malabar; the bamboo of Kamaun, Bengal, Burmah, and Southern India; the pines and deodars of the Himálayas; the sál, ebony, and satin-wood of Central India; the sandal, iron, and blackwood of Kúrg, Maisór, and other districts; the oak and walnut-wood of Sikhim; the India-rubber tree of Assam; the palm-trees of the Tropics, are far from exhausting the list. The noble mango-groves of Hindústán give welcome shade to the traveller weary with marching over miles of sun-burnt plain, and the banyan-tree of Bengal grows into a forest by throwing out new roots from its spreading branches. Cottages are thatched with palm-leaves, and houses built with scaffolding made of bamboos. Cocoa nut fibre makes excellent rigging, and cocoa-nut oil is highly prized for lamps. Bamboo fibre serves for mats and baskets; a bamboo stem yields the lightest of lance-shafts, while one of its joints does good duty for a bottle. Most of the houses in all parts of Burmah are built entirely of wood. From the sap of the palm-tree is brewed the tári or toddy which forms a favourite drink among certain classes. Another kind of palm yields the betel nut, which natives of every class and both sexes delight to chew. The sál and deodar are largely used for railway sleepers, and in districts where coal is very costly forest timber serves as fuel for steamers and railway trains.

All over India there are two harvests yearly; in some

places three. Bájra, jowár, rice, and some other grains are sown at the beginning and reaped at the end of the rainy season. The cold weather crops, including wheat, barley, and some other kinds of grain and pulse, are reaped in the spring. It is a vulgar fallacy that the people of India live on rice. The very opposite notion would be nearer the truth. Rice is grown mainly in the moist climate of Bengal, Burmah, the Kánkan, and Malabár. In Hindústán and the Panjáb the staple food is wheat and millet; in the Dakhan a poor kind of grain called rági. Berár, Khándesh, and Gujarát yield ample crops of cotton. The home of the sugar-cane is in Rohilkhand and Madras. The poppy-fields of Málwa and Bengal yield the opium which swells the Indian revenue by more than seven millions a-year. Indigo and jute are mainly raised in Bengal. Coffee has become the staple product of the hill districts in Kúrg, Wynaad, and the Nilgiris. The tea-gardens of Assam, Kachár, Silhet, and the southern slopes of the Himálayas from Kangra to Dárjiling, furnish much of the tea which now finds its way to English markets. The quinine-yielding cinchona is grown in even larger forests on the Nilgiri and Dárjiling Hills. Another medicinal plant of great value, the ipecacuanha, bids fair to thrive in the Sikhim Terai. Cardamoms and pepper abound along the Western Gháts, hemp and linseed are largely exported, and tobacco is widely grown throughout India.

Of fruits and vegetables there is no lack. Mangoes, melons, pumpkins, guavas, custard-apples, plantains, oranges, limes, citrons, and pomegranates, are common everywhere; figs, dates, and grapes thrive well in many places; and the pine-apple grows wild in Lower Burmah. Cucumbers, yams, tomatoes, sweet potatoes, and many vegetables familiar to English palates, are raised abundantly for general use. Flowers of every shape and hue, and often of the richest scent, from the rose and jasmine to the oleander and the water-lily, spangle the plains,

cover the surfaces of lakes and ponds, or glimmer in climbing beauty among the woods. The rhododendrons of the Himálayas grow like forest trees, and crown the hill-side in April and May with far-spreading masses of crimson blossoms. From the rose-gardens of Gházipúr is extracted the attar, a few drops of which contain the gathered fragrance of a thousand flowers.

The jungles teem with elephants, bears, wild buffaloes, tigers, leopards, panthers, and hyænas. Wolves and jackals prowl among the ravines in quest of deer and other prey. The lion is chiefly to be found in the wilds of Rájputána and Gujarát; the camel in the sandy regions of the North West; the one-horned rhinoceros among the swamps of the Ganges. Deer of many kinds abound everywhere. Snakes, poisonous and harmless, haunt the jungles and other lonely places. Wild boars are common. Monkeys abound in most parts of the country. The rivers swarm with fish, and alligators bask like huge lizards along their banks. Horses and ponies of divers breeds are used chiefly for riding, while the fields are ploughed and the carts and carriages of the country are drawn by bullocks of the Brahmani type. In many parts of India oxen still serve as carriers of merchandise. Buffaloes are usually kept for milk and ploughing. Sheep and goats are very common, and the Shál goat of Kashmir supplies the soft *pashmina* of which Indian shawls and other articles of clothing are made.

The woods re-echo with the harsh cry of the peacock and the lively chattering of parrots, woodpeckers, and other birds of gay plumage; to say nothing of various birds common to India and the West. Eagles and falcons are found in some places; kites, vultures, and crows abound everywhere. The great adjutant stork of Bengal plays the part of a scavenger in the most populous cities. Pheasants, partridges, ortolans, quails, snipes, and wild-geese tempt the sportsman at certain seasons. The sparrow

has followed the Englishman into the Himálayas. In one thing, however, India is sadly wanting: the voice of song-birds is almost everywhere mute.

India is fairly rich in minerals of various kinds. Her old wealth in diamonds, rubies, and other gems has well-nigh passed away; but new stores may be gathered from the mines of Upper Burmah. Of less valuable stones, such as opals, amethysts, garnets, jaspers, cornelians, she still yields a goodly share. Gold in small quantities may be found in the gravels of many streams. Silver combined with lead exists in the mines of Kulu on the northern frontier of the Panjáb. Lead mines have been opened in the north-western Himálayas. Rich veins of tin have lately been discovered in Tenasserim and Martaban. Antimony and copper abound in the hill ranges. Petroleum is known to exist in Pegu and Assam. Vast beds of rock-salt occur in the Panjáb hills. The mountains of southern India are largely composed of granite, while excellent marble is quarried from the Aravalli range.

Iron ores have been found in many parts of the country, notably in Kanaun, Bundalkhand, the Central Provinces, and Lower Bengal. In the Chánda district the surface of a hill two miles long and half-a-mile broad is covered with masses of pure iron ore. The iron beds in the Kamaun hills extend for miles, and the clay of the Damúda coal-fields contains 39 per cent. of iron. From the growing scarcity of charcoal for smelting purposes the native manufacture of iron is fast declining, and the attempts of Englishmen in the same field have hitherto been baffled by the same and other causes. A substitute for charcoal, however, may yet be found in coal, large beds of which extend from Rájmahál, on the Ganges, south to the Godavari, and from the neighbourhood of Calcutta westward to the Narbadha valley. The coal-bearing rocks of the Damúda valley, covering 1,500 square miles of ground, contain thick seams of coal, whose yield already amounts

to half-a-million tons a year. From the Kurhurbári coal-fields north-westward of Rániganj half that quantity could be supplied for 800 years. There are thick seams of coal in the Narbadha valley. On the edge of the great sandstone tract watered by the Godávari and the Warda some promising beds have lately been examined; and over wide spaces in Berár and the Central Provinces seams of great thickness, and of a quality good enough for railway purposes, give fair promise of vast additions to India's store of fuel. The easternmost end of Assam also, where the Brahmapútra emerges from the hills into the forest-clad wilds of Dibrugarh, contains several seams of excellent coal.

According to the census of 1881, British India, as apart from the tributary native states, contained an aggregate population of nearly 196 million souls, of whom about two-thirds live by husbandry alone. Of this vast number, excelled only by the population of China, over 70 millions are claimed for Bengal Proper and Assam, with an average density of 300 to the square mile over an area of more than 240,000 square miles. With due allowance for the thinly peopled districts of Assam and Chota Nagpúr, the average for the older provinces, including Orissa, may be taken at 442 to the square mile. In Bahár, the average is still higher.

In the North-Western Provinces and Audh, there are 44 millions of people spread over a surface of about 106,000 square miles, or more than the whole area of England, Wales, and Ireland.* To each square mile we have therefore an average of 415 souls, which exceeds that of Great Britain. The average for Audh equals that of Bahár. The Panjáb, including Kashmír and Sirhind, covers an extent of more than 200,000 square miles, a surface equal to that of France. About half of this, however, belongs to native rulers. The remainder contains

* Audh was annexed to the North-West Provinces in 1878.

a total of nearly 19 million souls, at an average of 176 to the square mile. In Lower Burmah some $3\frac{3}{4}$ million people are scattered over an area of 87,664 square miles. The same number of people in Upper Burmah are spread over a surface nearly twice as large. Madras shows a population of about 31 millions, covering a surface of 141,000 square miles, a good deal larger than the whole of the British Islands. The 29,000 square miles of Maisór and Kurg contain about 5 million souls. Bombay, including Sindh, counts more than 16 millions on 127,532 square miles. The Central Provinces show an area of about 84,000 square miles, peopled by nearly 10 million souls, while Berár contains some $2\frac{1}{2}$ millions over a space of about 17,000 square miles. To these vast numbers must be added some 51 million people* ruled by about two hundred chiefs and princes, great and small, whose joint possessions cover an area of more than half-a-million square miles from Kashmir to Travankór.

Of the people ruled directly by the Indian Government some 140 millions are Hindus by religion, and several millions more are probably Hindus by race. The Mohammadans of all races, Aryan, Semitic, and Mongol, may be reckoned at 45 millions, most of whom profess the Suni or Turkish form of Islám. The Shiá sect are chiefly to be found in the Dakhan and Kashmir. In Bengal the Mohammadans exceed $20\frac{1}{2}$ millions, the great bulk of whom are to be found in the Central and Eastern districts as husbandmen or landowners, while comparatively few inhabit the old centres of Mohammadan power. In Bengal, as in Kashmir, the Mohammadan numbers seem to be largely swelled by former converts from among the low-caste Hindus. In the Panjab there are now 10 million, in the North-Western Provinces about $4\frac{1}{2}$ million followers of Islám. In Audh they number only a million, and in the Central Provinces

* These numbers, however, must be taken provisionally, as founded on guess work rather than accurate data. Maisor is now a Native State.

barely a quarter of that amount. In the Panjáb, on the other hand, there are 10 million Mohammadans to 7 million Hindus, and little more than a million Sikhs. The seven million people in Burmah are mostly Buddhists.

The aboriginal or prehistoric races scattered everywhere among the hills and forests are supposed to number about 12 millions, a fifth of whom people the highlands of the Central Provinces, while perhaps as many more are found in Málwa and Kándesh. In the hills of Orissa, Chota Nágpúr, Birbhúm, Assam, and Kachár, they are also numerous. The Jains, an offshoot from Buddhism, number only a few hundred thousand. The Parsis, descendants of Persian Fire-worshippers, if few in numbers, fill a front place in the commercial doings of Western India. Christians of all sects and races may be set down at a million and three quarters, the great bulk of whom are Roman Catholics, owing allegiance to the Archbishop of Goa.

In a country which extends from the eighth to the thirty-fifth degree of north latitude the climate varies, not only with the differences of relative position, but with those also of local surface and surroundings. The dry heats of the Upper Provinces differ from the moist heats of Bengal and part of Southern India as a furnace differs from a vapour-bath. There are large tracts of country in Sindh, the Panjáb, and Rájputána, where rain seldom falls, and the thermometer rises to 120° in the shade. In the North-Western Provinces and Gujarát the rainfall varies from 15 to 30 inches, most of it falling in about three months. A zone of light rainfall passes down the middle of Southern India. The eastern coast is generally hotter and drier than the western, which receives the full force of the south-west monsoon from June to September. From the Brahmapútra valley down to Maulmain the heat in these months is greatly tempered by heavy and continuous rains, which fall in some places to a depth of more than a hundred inches, and convert the country into a sea studded

with islands. In the Khásia Hills 600 inches of rain have been measured in the year. In Lower Bengal and Orissa the rain-swollen rivers flood the country far and wide. On the table-lands of the Dakhan and Central India hot days are followed by cool nights. Along the lofty slopes of the Himálayas and the wood-crowned ridges of the Nilgiris, the rain pours heavily with few intervals for several months. Along the coast sea-breezes also serve to temper the heat. Over the sandy plains of Northern India the dry west wind blows from March to the middle of June with the fury of a sirocco, relieved at times by a simoom or sandstorm, which turns day into night for an hour or more, and cools the air for some days afterwards. From July to October the showers in these regions are followed by intervals of close, steamy heat, which finally give place to three or four months of clear, cool, bright weather, with frequent frost at night, and mornings often cold enough for a fire. In the hill-stations, where the summer heat is generally moderate, the resemblance to an English winter is heightened by frequent falls of snow. Within the tropics, on the other hand, the cold season, except on some of the higher mountains, answers on the whole to a mild September in our own country.

The languages and dialects used or spoken in India exceed in number and variety those of all Europe. The Aryan languages take the lead by right of their wide prevalence. Of the dialects which have grown out of the parent Sanskrit there are at least a dozen separate forms, of which Hindi, the most purely Aryan, and Urdú, the mixed language of the law-courts and the public services, are the most widely used. Each of the great provinces in Upper and Western India has its own dialect, which differs from the rest much as English differs from German or Swedish. In Southern India the Dravidian languages, such as Támil and Telugú, which belong in the main to some old non-Aryan type, are spoken by about thirty

million people. In the Himálayan valleys, in Burmah, and on the eastern frontier of Bengal, some form of Indo-Chinese or Mongol speech is generally spoken. Arabic, the language of the Koran, and Persian, the language of Moghal state officers and Anglo-Indian law-courts in former days, have enriched the Urdú of our day with a large stock of serviceable words and phrases.



KÓL DANCE.

HISTORY OF INDIA.

BOOK I.

INDIA BEFORE THE MOHAMMADAN CONQUEST.

CHAPTER I.

THE ARYAN HINDUS.

THE circumstances which mark the rise and progress of England's empire in Southern Asia have no precise parallel in any other page of the world's known history. Nowhere else has the world beheld so strange and fruitful an outcome from beginnings apparently so small. Macedonia, Rome, Arabia, have each in its turn made mighty conquests in a wonderfully short space of time. The Spaniards, in the course of one or two generations, became masters of half the New World. The hordes of Tamerlane, issuing from Samarkhand, overran Asia in a few years. In our own century half Europe bowed her head for a season at the feet of the First Napoleon. India herself for more than two hundred years obeyed successive kings of the house of Bábar. In all these cases either the ground won at first by force of arms was speedily lost again, or else its further retention was mainly due to the settlements founded thereon by the conquerors themselves.

British India alone presents the spectacle of a vast dominion conquered during the last hundred and forty years by the servants of a trading company, whose one great aim was to increase its dividends, and upheld by a few thousand Englishmen encamping in the midst of more than two hundred million natives. Nowhere else has so wide a sway over so many populous and civilised states been wielded with a grasp so firm by a mere handful of foreigners, strange alike in speech, manners, religion, sent forth from one of the coldest to one of the hottest quarters of the earth, and debarred by causes more or less invincible from founding families of their own or of a mixed blood in a climate peculiarly hurtful to English life.

How much of the seeming marvel sprang from sources in no way marvellous, the following pages may help to show. For that end it will not be enough to begin with the first days of British settlement in India. The true way to a clear understanding of later events leads far back through the Christian centuries into the twilight of pre-historic times. There is no real break in Indian history from the era of the Vedas until now. For all the changes that have been wrought by time and circumstance, the India of to-day reproduces in its main outlines the India of twenty or thirty centuries ago. Out of the two hundred and fifty millions who directly or indirectly obey our rule, more than a half may claim descent from those Aryan conquerors who, long before Hellas defied the Persian, were pushing the earlier races of Hindustan back into those sheltering hills and forests where their descendants may still be found.* The history of that olden civilisation has been written for us, not in chronicles like those which form the boast of Mohammadan India, but in the sacred

* The date of the events apparently recorded in the oldest Hindu epic, the *Rāmāyan*, is placed by Sir W. Jones in the 21st, by Tod in the 12th, and by Bentley in the 10th century before Christ.—Griffith's "*Rāmāyan*," translated into English verse.

writings of Sanskrit-speaking Hindus, and in poems which pourtray the social life of pre-historic India as vividly as Homer pourtrayed the social life of pre-historic Greece. From the Vedas, or religious hymns of the Brahmans, we learn what faiths were held, what gods were worshipped, what rites practised by the Aryan conquerors of Ancient India. The oldest Vedas, older by several centuries than the Homeric poems,* reveal to modern scholars the poetic sources of that purely natural worship which marks the childhood of all human races. They are full of the life-like symbolism in which imaginative minds love to embody their impressions of the outer world. They sing the praises of the "Deva," the bright divinities of Sun and Dawn, of Fire, Storm, Earth, and Sky. In them all nature is divine. Sūrya, the Sun-god, his car drawn by shining steeds, dispels the darkness, hurries after the Dawn as lover after love-maiden, and sheds light, health, and every blessing on all the world. "Let us meditate," says one famous verse, "on the desirable light of the divine Sun, who influences our pious rites."

Dyaus and Prithivi, Heaven and Earth—the Zeus and Demeter of the Greek Pantheon—are invoked as the great, wise, energetic parents of all the other gods. Aditi, "mother of the gods," stands one while for the sky, anon for the whole universe, and at times for something distinct from either. Ushas, the Dawn, the Homeric 'Hṓs, harnesses her purple oxen, calling all sleeping things to new life, enjoyment, or exertion, and sending her rays abroad like cattle to their pasture. Agni, the god of fire, the Latin Ignis, is a dear friend, who sits in the sacrificial chamber, diffusing happiness, like a benevolent man

* The true date of the Rig-Veda, or "Book of Praise," the oldest of the four Vedas, is still a moot question. It is safe, however, to assume, with Dr. Max Müller, on evidence of a very strong kind, that these old hymns and prayers, written in the oldest forms of a language probably older than that of ancient Greece, were composed between 1,200 and 1,500 years before Christ.

among mankind. Indra, the son of Dyaus and Prithivi, is the far-darting Apollo of the Vedas, the god of storms and rain, who rends the clouds asunder, gives vent to the showers, and frees the obstructed streams. He is invoked as the Lord of Steeds, victorious in battle, whom neither earth nor heaven can contain. His horses are the scud that denotes the coming tempest. In his chariot rides Vāyu or Vāta, the rushing wind; he delights in drinking the sacred soma juice;* and the Maruts or storm-winds are his children, at whose approach earth trembles like a storm-driven boat, and in whose car ride the young lightnings. Varuna, the Vedic *Ṛṣapavos*, represents the infinite wonder of the sky. He is the god who upholds order, who knows the place of the birds, the ships on the waters, the months of the year, and the track of the winds.

In this old Vedic Pantheon no one god is raised, like the Hellenic Zeus, to permanent kingship over the rest. Each stands for the moment highest in the minds of his own worshippers. "Among you, O gods," says Manu, "there is none that is small, none that is young; you are all great indeed." To each is offered his befitting sacrifice, each is marked off by his peculiar symbols; and symbol and sacrifice, both in their turn, come to be worshipped as divine. We have later hymns in honour of the horse, dear to Indra; of the ox or cow, that universal blessing to men who live by the plough; of the ladle and the post used for sacrifice; and of the soma plant, which yields a nectar beloved of the gods. To the Rishis, or bards who composed the Vedas,† all things appear divine, as symbols or expressions of the one supreme indwelling

* The soma plant of the Vedas was the *Asclepias acida* of Roxburgh, now known as the twisting sarkostema, a twining plant with few leaves, and with clusters of small white fragrant flowers. It yields a mild, acid, milky juice, and grows in various parts of India.

† The Sanskrit "Veda" means "what is known"; from the same old Aryan root as Greek *oîda*; Latin *video*, *rates*; German *wissen*; Old-English *witan* (to wit, or weet); and the old Norse "Edda."

soul that quickens, moulds, and cherishes all alike. Sun, moon, and stars, the changes of night and day, the recurrence of the seasons, the trees, the flowers, the streams, the very means and processes of new growth, are clothed by these worshippers of nature with a divinity not their own. In the world's childhood "Heaven lies about them," as it lies about thoughtful children in all ages. They read the riddle of the universe with the eyes of poets whose natural language is that of worship. To them all life is a sacred mystery, an infinite marvel, to be studied only in a spirit of child-like thankfulness and pious awe. From glorifying the life around them they come in time to contemplate the life within, to speak of right and wrong, to yearn after union with the Immortal Being. In the later Vedas the troubled soul seeks closer communion with the Unseen Spirit; it expresses sorrow and implores forgiveness for its sins; it gives new names to the mysterious Power or Self which out of nothing evolved all things, and through which the good man's soul will find sure rest for ever beyond the grave.

Inevitably there comes a time when the purer faith of an earlier day hardens into a fixed system of mythologic ritual, even as the simple Christianity of Paul and Peter grew into the elaborate fetishism of mediæval Rome. The poetic gods of the old Pantheon are replaced by the mystic trinity of Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva—the Maker, Preserver, and Destroyer—round whom revolve a host of smaller deities, whose numbers grow and whose features wax coarse with years. A race of philosophers and trained priests obscures the old imagery of the Vedic bards with the metaphysic subtleties of the Upanishads, the fantastic trifling of the Sūtras and the Vedānta, and in time with the puerile grossness of the Purāṇas.* Old forms, sym-

* The Upanishads were a kind of supplement to the Vedas; the Sūtras were collections of philosophic aphorisms; the Vedānta, from *veda* and *anta*, end, were commentaries enforcing the purpose of the

bols, and figures of speech lose their old meaning; the attributes of godhead become distinct gods; the dim shapes of poetic fancy reappear as the sharply-defined conceptions of an abstruse theology, or translate themselves into the uncouth, unmeaning objects of popular idol-worship.

Against this lower tendency Buddhism sprang up as a powerful but fleeting protest about the end of the sixth century before Christ. It was then that the royal Sākya Mūni first preached a return to the purer doctrines which centuries of priestly rule and popular delusion had buried under a rank growth of debasing errors. Of this reformer—whose creed, if banished from its old birth-place at the foot of the Nipalese Hills, has since become the religion of nearly a third of the human race—not much is known for certain; and some years ago the very fact of his existence was called in question by one of the foremost Sanskrit scholars of our time. In spite, however, of Professor Wilson's doubtings, there is reason to believe that Sākya Mūni, afterwards more widely known as Buddha or The Enlightened, came of a race of kings who ruled at Kapi-lavastu, north of the modern Audh; that having long sat at the feet of the Brahman sages in Magadha, or Bahār, and at Banāras, the Oxford of ancient India, he went forth with a few disciples to preach a purer gospel in Magadha, under the protection of its friendly king. The story of his after wanderings has been so beclouded with fable that time would only be wasted in trying to pick out the grain from the chaff. Before his death, however, the princely ascetic, whose own life and doctrines were in open revolt from the debased religion, the pharisaic pride, and the social tyranny of the old Brahmanic order, had sown far and wide the seeds of a reaction, whose influence for

Vedas; and the Purānas, from *purāna*, old, embodied the whole round of legends, ritual, and philosophy, which had grown out of the Vedānta into the shape they first assumed about the ninth century of our era.

mingled good and evil may still be found working in at least one province of British India, Burmah, in one British colony, Ceylon, which was governed for a short time from British India, and among the numerous sect of Jains, who in various parts of India blend somewhat of old Buddhist traditions with the creeds and practices of modern Brahmanism.

Himself a prince of the Kshatriya or warrior caste, Sákya Muni held out the hand of fellowship to men of all castes and classes alike. Brahman and Sudra, priest, prince, and artisan, were all equal in his eyes. Breaking through the bonds of a religious system which had come to bring all things and beings under the yoke of an all-powerful priesthood, he strove to make men holy by teaching them to live pure and holy lives. Instead of sacrifices and severe penances he exhorted them to sin no more, to love one another, to forgive insults, to return good for evil, to bear patiently the ills of this life, to wage ceaseless war with their own lower natures. Life, he maintained, was full of sorrow, and the path to happiness could only be gained by mortifying the natural affections and desires wherein lie the sources of that sorrow. All virtue and well-being, in short, were summed up by Sákya Muni in love and self-control. What else he may have taught, beyond the religious teaching of the Vedas and the metaphysics of their Brahman interpreters, remains for the most part an open question. That he aimed, for instance, at finding some new way of escape for the soul of man from its supposed liability to enter into new shapes of men and animals for evermore,* is a likely, if not quite a necessary inference, from the doctrines afterwards preached in his name. But modern scholars are still disputing whether the "Nirvána," to which it is the highest bliss of the devout Buddhist to attain, means utter extinction or

* The metempsychosis, or transmigration of souls, was among the oldest tenets of Hindu philosophy.

the calm that comes of absorption into the supreme soul.*

Be that as it may, we may hold it for certain that Buddha himself, like other great reformers, laid chief stress on that part of his teaching which would appeal most strongly to the popular heart. Some kind of hope for a happier future must have lain at the bottom of a religious movement which proclaimed the nothingness of human joys, and the need of deliverance from human ills and weaknesses. The idea of eternal rest beyond the grave would at any rate for the multitude mean something very different from utter annihilation; even as to the Buddhists of modern Burmah, Nirvana means simple freedom from old age, disease, and death.

In due time the new revolt from caste-rules and Brahmanic traditions made its way over India and the neighbouring countries. Asoka, grandson of that king Chandragupta,† to whose court at the capital of Bahar Seleucus Nicator sent an envoy about 320 B.C., became the Constantine of the new creed. In his reign Buddhism spread over the whole of Northern and much of Southern India. The stone pillars that mark his sway and still bear his edicts carved on their face, in characters first deciphered by Mr. James Prinsep, may still be traced from Bengal to the heart of Afghanistan. A great council held by him in 308 B.C., or as others reckon in 286 B.C., decreed the sending forth of missions to all the chief countries beyond India. In the first century of the Christian era Buddhism, having already struck firm root in Burmah, Ceylon, Java, Tibet, and Kashmir, was declared by a Chinese emperor worthy to take equal rank before the state with the religions of Confucius and Lao-tse. Losing its olden simplicity as its followers grew in numbers, it gathered

* May we not assume that Buddha, as an ascetic, meant by Nirvana something akin to self-denial or self-control?

† The Sandracottus of Greek historians.

strength from the very process of change and corruption which transformed its founder into its god and its very priests into heaven-born popes. Its temples were filled with images of the prince who had waged war against idol-worship, and its moral beauty was gradually marred by childish or grotesque superstitions, which culminated in the praying wheels and the deified Lamas or high-priests of Tibet. In spite, however, of the changes wrought by time and circumstance, Buddha's spirit still lives in the religion that bears his name; his moral teachings still form the rule of conduct for millions of his present worshippers; and the yellow-robed monks of Burmah still hold out to every Burman child such means of learning to read, write, and cipher, as the bulk of our English children are only just beginning to enjoy.

In India the new religion seems never to have quite supplanted the old. For centuries they held between them a divided sway, each in its turn gaining or losing ground with the rise and fall of successive dynasties. At length came the inevitable conflict which ended by uprooting Buddhism from its very birth-place in favour of a religious system still dear to the bulk of modern Hindus. The stern simplicity of Sakya Muni's teaching had probably few abiding charms for his lively, sensuous, subtle-minded country-folk. Split up into opposing sects, the later Buddhists seem to have further weakened their cause by vain paltering with the popular taste for show and superstition. The old caste-system which Buddha had sought to demolish, lent all its renewed strength to the Brahmanic reaction. From about the fifth to the tenth century of our era the long strife raged, until throughout all India Proper nothing was left of Buddhism but the grand old halls and temples which attest its former prevalence, and the mixture of Buddhist and Brahmanic usage which still marks the worship of the modern Jains.

Upon the Institutes of Manu,* the Minos of Aryan India, and the philosophic systems spun out of the Vedas by successive schools of Hindu thinkers, the victorious Brahmans built up the social and religious fabric of modern Hinduism. Every nation has its mythical lawgiver, its Minos or its Lycurgus, in whom it finds the sources of its social and political growth. Manu, the Adam or first man of the Aryan race, had given his name to a code of laws and customs compiled about 900 years before Christ by certain of the Mānavas, the oldest Aryan settlers in Upper India, who dwelt between the Satlaj and the "divine Saraswati." Their chief city, Hastinapur, the abode of the legendary King Bharat, renowned in old Hindu poetry, lay in Sirhind, to the north-east of the modern Meerut, and their settlements ere long covered the whole ground between the Ganges and the Indus. These were the men who founded that village-system and drew up those caste-rules by which Indian society is still in some measure kept from falling to pieces. Each village or township became the centre of a little commonwealth, governed in the king's name by a head-man of the conquering race, with the help of a council of its own house-fathers, or heads of families. Acting under these were a staff of village officers, maintained for various purposes at the common cost. Each village kept its own registrar, its own watchman, barber, schoolmaster, washerman, goldsmith, wheelwright. Every house-father obeyed the common laws and usages expounded or enforced by the village council; but within his own household he reigned supreme as any Roman father in the days of the Republic. Over the lands within and around his township his control was much more

* *Manu*, the first man of the Sanskrit-speaking Hindus, is the same word as Gothic *mannus*, German *mann* and *mensh*, English *man*, and Welsh *myne*. It comes from the same root as Sanskrit *māna*, to think, *mānas*, the mind (Latin *mens*), and perhaps German *meinung*, "meaning."

bounded. If, as head of a family, he might claim all but free and full ownership of the fields originally allotted to his family, the rest of his holdings belonged collectively to the whole village, and could only be used by him under certain fixed conditions. He had to sow the same crops as his neighbours, to let certain fields lie fallow in fixed succession, and to respect the right of other households to pasture their cattle on the fallow or stubble land. Each village, moreover, was fully equipped with tradesmen, artisans, and so forth, whose relative place in the little commonwealth was determined by their several pursuits.

In the code of Manu all these members of the Aryan village community are arranged into four separate classes or "colours," each governed by its own usages and fenced off by strict rules and duties from every other. First come the Brahmins, the hereditary priests, the Levites of Aryan India, who sprang, says later tradition, from the head of Brahma himself, and whose time-hallowed rights were carefully guarded from all profane encroachments by the teaching of those holy books whose meaning they alone could rightly interpret. At once the religious and social leaders of their day, they found in the popular reverence for their order a willing accomplice in the building-up of a caste-system for which no real sanction can be found in the hymns of Vedic seers, nor in any writings earlier than Manu's code—itself the forged title-deeds of a class already supreme among their countrymen, by right of their general usefulness, their higher culture, and perhaps their purer lives. So firmly was their power established, that to kill a Brahmin was accounted the worst of crimes, and to injure, or even insult him, a grievous outrage. No Brahmin could wholly forfeit his divine birthright, nor could even kings take rank with Brahmins, the favoured children of the gods. To honour or befriend one of the heaven-born race was enough atonement for almost any crime. It was forbidden by the laws

of Manu to take from a Brahman borrower more than two per cent., or half the interest that might be taken from a merchant. A Brahman might not stoop to trade or to earn money by other than purely intellectual pursuits; but he was always free to accept alms in food or money for the due performance of his priestly duties.

Next to the Brahmans in the social order of Manu, ranks the Kshatriya or soldier class. To this belonged most of the princes and nobles of Aryan India; and the Rājput tribes of modern India claim to be the purest living specimens of a class which seems once to have fought hard for social lordship with their Brahman rivals. Of the third, or Vaisya class, tillage, trade, banking, law, and medicine, were the chief pursuits, in most of which a very high degree of excellence had been already reached when the laws of Manu were first issued. These three classes embraced all men of Aryan race. To Brahman, Kshatriya, and Vaisya alike belonged the proud title of "twice-born" and the right of wearing the sacred thread. In the fourth, or Sudra class, were comprehended all the "low-born," the people of mixed caste or of non-Aryan blood, who followed trades and callings forbidden to the twice-born, or belonged by birth to any of the subject races. No Sudra was allowed to read the Vedas, to eat or intermarry with any member of a higher caste, or even to sit upon the same mat with a Brahman.

In course of time the system thus sanctioned by a mythical lawgiver, in behalf at once of an aggressive priesthood and a conquering race, underwent some noteworthy changes. Shattered, if not effaced by succeeding waves of Buddhism, it reappeared during the Christian centuries in a new and far more complex shape. Out of the four great castes there had grown some hundreds. The old sharp divisions of birth and calling had well-nigh vanished. Race no longer determined a man's pursuits. The Brahman ceased to be a born priest. In the struggle

for life, he and the lowly Sudra not seldom changed places, while both alike invaded the old domains of the soldier and the husbandman. Sudra dynasties ruled the land; Sudra priests sacrificed in the holy places; Sudra soldiers fought by the side of Brahmans and Rajputs; Sudra merchants, bankers, landholders, physicians, were held in equal honour with the Vaisyas, whose place they gradually filled. It was accounted no shame for a Brahman to cook the dinner of a wealthy Sudra, to become a clerk in a public office, to follow the standard of a Sudra captain, or to earn a livelihood by managing a farm. He might still, like a modern Polish noble, carry his head high among men of his own caste; but in the outer world his social importance came more and more to depend upon his worldly circumstances. As a priest or a Pandit he still enjoyed all the reverence which Hindus are wont to pay to their spiritual and intellectual guides. As a soldier or a merchant he continued to rank first among followers of the same calling. But a wealthy Sudra merchant or landholder paid small deference to the twice-born clerk who wrote his letters, or to the high-caste menial who prepared his food.

The Brahmans themselves branched off into a number of separate castes, each bound by its own rules, and few of them either claiming or conceding the right to eat or intermarry with any other. Alongside the old caste of birth and political standing there grew up also the caste of creeds and occupations; and the two processes got to be so intermingled that it is often hard to distinguish between them. Each group of persons following the same trade or calling in the same neighbourhood formed itself into a separate guild or brotherhood, held together by rules that often differed from those of corresponding guilds elsewhere. Like the trade-guilds of mediæval Europe and the trade unions of our own day, these Indian brotherhoods fenced themselves round with a network of moral

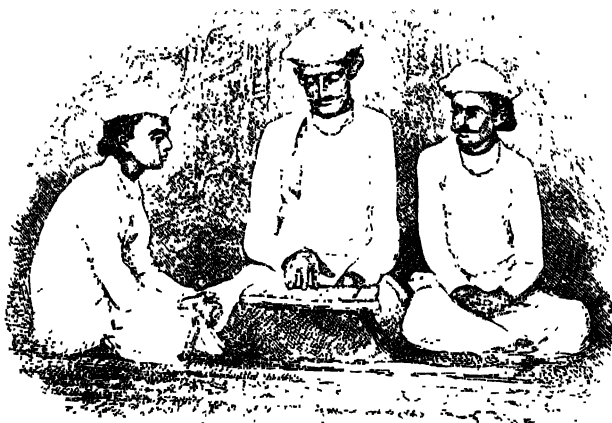
and social observances, through whose meshes no one could break without risk of social outlawry. A kind of religious sanction was impressed on these rules by the priests or elders empowered to interpret and enforce them. The innate Hindu craving for self-government under strict conditions was carried down into the lowest circles and the smallest details of social life. The very Pariahs and utter outcasts, the scavengers, leather-dressers, conjurors, gypsies, thieves, adopted caste-rules of their own, behind which they loved to guard themselves from the approach of all outsiders, high or low. Caste in one shape or another found acceptance even with the Jains, the Sikhs, and the Mohammadans, to whose own inherited systems of life and worship it ran directly counter. Its influence for mingled good and evil continued to assert itself through all the changes which Indian society has from time to time undergone. Christianity itself has for the most part warred in vain against an institution not altogether unknown in the most civilised of Christian countries. Caste in India has many forms, most of which may be said to reproduce themselves in the class distinctions and social usages of every nation in modern Europe. It is not in India alone that certain trades, classes, or professions take precedence of certain others, that a halo of special sanctity surrounds the priest, that a wide gulf of social habit divides the nobleman from the shopkeeper. In England a barrister would incur deep social disgrace by stooping to practices admissible on the part of an attorney. A German noble would still be degraded by intermarriage with a mere plebeian. Even in the United States of America, where all classes are equal before the sovereign people, wealth has set up an aristocracy of its own, and the old pride of birth still rears its walls of separation between the old families and the new-made rich.

CHAPTER II.

BRAHMANISM RE-ASCENDENT.

WHAT the later forms of caste were to the earlier, the religion of the Purānas must have been to that of the Vedas. If the later Brahmans still professed to revere the teaching of Holy Books written in a tongue already strange even to themselves, they took care at any rate to amuse the people at large with scriptures better suited to the popular understanding. Somewhere about the ninth century of our era—the very time when Roman Popes were proclaiming the sanctity of those forged Decretals which gave a colour of old prescriptive right to their growing pretensions—the first books of the new Hindu Bible appear to have come into vogue. To these from time to time were added fresh Puranas, until their number had swollen to eighteen. In them were embodied the whole system of Brahmanic faith, worship, morals, philosophy, even law, as it grew up with the decline of Indian Buddhism. Borrowing alike from sources old and new, they contain a curious mixture of grotesque legends, gross superstitions, wild flights of reasoning and fancy, ennobling maxims, holy aspirations, flashes of shrewd insight, long trains of close and subtle thought. In respect of mental gifts the later Brahmans were still the true, if perhaps the degenerate children of their Vedic predecessors. Learned in all the knowledge of their day, but blind perhaps to the poetic origin of the popular theology they seemed to have aimed at strengthening their hold upon the people by sanctioning each new perversion of

the old ancestral creeds. Under the working of the same law which evolved the later Greek Pantheon out of the simple nature-worship of the days before Homer, the religious poetry of the Vedas had blossomed out into a rank growth of monstrous-seeming legends, fantastic rites, and multiform idolatries. Whatever the Brahmans themselves believed, the popular worship had already hardened into a lifeless caricature of the religion bodied forth in



GROUP OF BRAHMANS

the Vedic Hymns. If the Puranas held that Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva were but different attributes of one same godhead, the people at large were wont to treat them as separate and rival gods, the chief, perhaps, but not the only dwellers on the Indian Olympus.

Vishnu, the Indian Hercules, grew out of a Vedic synonym for the sun into the central figure of a new legendary circle, the divine embodiment of ever so many heroes renowned in song or fable. Hindu poetry is full

of his Avatars or manifestations in the flesh. He is a little fish who swells and swells until he spreads for millions of leagues in one golden blaze over the ocean. In the shape of a boar five hundred miles high he plunges his mighty tusks into the waste of waters, and brings up the solid earth from its briny bed. In the memorable Churning of the Ocean, Vishnu as Narāyan recruits the fainting strength of Gods and Titans employed in wresting from the deep the lost Ambrosia of the Immortals.* Again, in man's form with a lion's head, he comes like another Briareus to restore the Indian Jove to his lost throne, and defeat the giants who have conquered the earth. Anon, as Rāma, the princely hero of the Rāmāyan oldest and sweetest of Indian epics, he fights and slays the giant Rāvan, who had carried off to the isle of Lanka his beloved Sita, the faithful partner of his long exile from home and throne. As Krishna, the warrior king of

* The Amrita, or Drink of Immortality—answering to the Greek Ambrosia—had been lost in the great flood, which, according to Hindu legend, overspread the earth in the days of Manu—himself and the seven Rishis, or sages, floating on the waters in their ship of refuge, until, guided by the fish Vishnu, it rested on the highest peak of Himālaya. When the waters subsided, Brahma, at Vishnu's suggestion, proposed to churn the ocean until it yielded up the lost Amrit. How the Sûrs and Asûrs, the gods and the demons, tearing up the hull Mandar, wound about it the hundred-headed Shesha, the serpent king, for a churning-rope; how, standing on Vishnu's tortoise, they lowered the huge mass into the sea, whirling it round and round, with Vishnu's help, until treasure after treasure rose out of the troubled foam, from the horses of the Sun and the bow of Siva, to Lakshmi, the Indian Venus; how Siva betimes drank up the deadly poison that streamed from the mouth of the fainting Shesha; and how at last two maidens float up from the seething billows, the one bearing the heavenly Amrit, the other a flask of wine, which the heedless Asûrs drink off, to their own confusion;—all this Mr. W. Waterfield has well told in one of the most spirited of his "Indian Ballads." Of this wonderful story, which illustrates the mingled grandeur, wildness, sportive fancy, and tender grace of the best Hindu poetry, the original Sanskrit contains several versions, one of which, as given in the *Māhābharat*, has been cleverly versified by Mr. R. H. Griffith, in his "Specimens of Old Indian Poetry."

Dwaraka in Gujarát, he is the foremost figure in many an Indian tale of love, war, or bold adventure. His last advent under the form of Buddha, the founder of a rival creed, seems to attest either the readiness of Brahman teachers to reverence old truths preached under new disguises, or else their politic desire to stand well with the people at large by admitting new gods into the old Pantheon; even as the deifying of the dark-skinned Krishna may point to the gradual fusion of old popular legends with those of peculiarly Aryan birth.*

If Vishnu owned and still owns millions of worshippers distributed among divers sects, Siva, the Destroying Principle, evolved from the Vedic Rudra, god of fire and storms, grew into the foremost rival, if not for a time the supplanter of his elder and more gracious brother-god. In some parts of India, temples that once bore the shield and club of Vishnu have since been dedicated to the eight-armed bearer of the bow and crescent, whose necklace is threaded with human skulls, whose waist is girdled with serpents, around whose shoulders hangs a raw elephant hide, and whose third eye, placed in the middle of his forehead, betokens the sharpness of his mental vision. If Vishnu may be taken to embody the genial human side of the great World-Spirit called Brahma, the worship of Siva expressed the sterner, wilder attributes of the same unseen mysterious Fountain of all life and death. Stoical or ascetic natures found in the grave and gloomy rites that mark his worship that kind of spiritual comfort which others drew from the worship of the milder god. Chief among Siva's votaries are the Brahmans of Bengal, but it is in Southern India, where the pious Sankara Acharya preached and travelled nine hundred years ago, that the sects which honour Siva have made most way

* The Yádavas, or children of Yádu, were the brethren of Krishna, and the apparent forefathers of the modern Jats, who abound in Upper India.

among the people. Of these not the least numerous are the Lingayats who worship Siva under the form of the Lingam, the male emblem of Nature's reproductive powers.

Siva-worship in its turn seems to have begotten new and strange outgrowths in the shape of the fierce goddess Dúrga and the elephant-headed god Ganesha. The former, herself in part evolved from the earlier Parvati, Siva's queen, presently reappears in the yet sterner guise of Káli, at whose blood-stained altars the robber tribes of India pay their special homage, and whose favour was besought by the murdering brotherhood of the Thugs. Sita, the faithful wife of Râma, becomes merged in Sri or Lakshmi, the beautiful and bounteous goddess-queen of Vishnu. Súrya, the sun-god, Kartikeya, god of war, Yâma, the Indian Pluto, Saraswati, goddess of learning, fill each a certain place in the later Hindu Pantheon. In the natural course of things, new legends, creeds, practices, sprang up to displace or absorb the old. Besides the deities common to all Aryan Hindus, each place or district followed its own rites and bowed down to its own local gods or demons, many of them borrowed from indigenous, or at least non-Aryan sources. In short, the popular worship took its colour and its grosser traits from all the changing circumstances, moral and physical, which have helped to shape the destinies of the Indian peoples.

Chief among the later off-shoots of modern Hinduism was the religious sect founded by the pious Kshatriya Nânak Shah, in the fifteenth century of our era. From time to time there arose in this or that part of India some earnest thinker, who strove to purify and regenerate the popular worship of his day. Buddha himself was not the first by many of those who assayed in India the kind of mission discharged towards their own countrymen by the Jewish prophets and the great religious teachers of Christian Europe. Of like stamp was Sankara Achârya, a native of

Malabar, who in the eighth or ninth century of our era proclaimed anew the supreme bliss of perfect communion, through penitence, prayer, and self-sacrifice, between the human soul and the great unseen Spirit whence all things visible have their birth. Such, too, were the leading reformers of the fourteenth, fifteenth, and sixteenth centuries—Rāmanand, the St. Francis, and Vallabha Swāmin, the Epicurus of India; Dādu, the cotton-cleaner of Ajmīr, who taught that faith and a pure heart were better than fasting and sacrifice; Kabīr, who denounced the idol-worship and the corrupt doctrines of his day; and Tukārām, the Marāṭha poet, who preached a new gospel of love towards God and man, of child-like faith in all God's works and ways.

Kabir, himself the disciple of Rāmanand, seems to have been held in equal honour by Hindus and Mohammadans. His follower Nānak, founder of the Hindu sect of Sikhs which afterwards became the ruling race in the Panjāb, proclaimed the religious brotherhood of the Hindu and the Mussulman in words which reflect the desire of benevolent minds in all ages: "He only is a good Hindu who is just and a good Mohammadan whose life is pure." His teaching was specially levelled against Brahman tyranny and the mixture of forms and superstitions which passed with the multitude for true religion. A succession of Gurus or High Priests handed on his teaching and swelled the numbers of the new sect. In the Mohammadans, however, who then ruled India, the Sikhs found stern oppressors instead of powerful allies. After nearly a century of persecution they took up arms against the foe under the warlike Guru Govind, and after a long course of varying fortune, the peaceful followers of Nānak wielded military rule from the Indus to the Jamna, and held under a yoke of iron the crushed Mohammadans of the Panjāb.

A still later revolt from the popular creed was set on foot in the present century by the enlightened Hindu

Rajah, Rammohan Rai. He proclaimed a pure Theism founded on the religious teaching of the Vedas, and enriched with borrowings from the Christianity of the West. His mantle fell on the worthy shoulders of Dwarkanath Thakur, and the *Brahma Samáj*, or Church of Brahma, became the title of a sect which now owns several thousand followers. Some years later a fresh departure from the old faith was taken by the young Brahminist leader, Keshab Chander Sen, whose followers have disowned the last ties of social and religious habit that still bind the Brahmists of the older school to their unreformed countrymen.

CHAPTER III.

EARLY HISTORY OF INDIA.

OF the early history of the Aryan Hindus very little is known for certain.* In the time of the older Vedas, somewhere about the fourteenth century before Christ, they had already gained a firm footing in the broad plains that stretch from the Indus to the Ganges. Coming from the regions beyond the Hindu Khush, the classic Caucasus, they must have taken several centuries to win their way so far eastward; and a list of their old kings, as quoted by Arrian, the Greek historian, would seem to trace their early history as far back as the year 3000 B.C. Of the people whom they conquered or pushed before them

* The word Aryan, from Arya, Sanskrit for "noble," is now used to denote the Caucasian, Japhetic, or Indo-European races of men, whose languages, customs, and bodily traits may all be referred to one common type. From some central point in Upper Asia, one Aryan race after another appears to have wandered, either westward into Europe, or southward into Persia and Hindustan. The Celtic races made their way into Greece, Italy, Spain, France, and Britain; the Goths, or Teutons, into Germany, Scandinavia, and England; while the Slaves peopled Russia, Poland, and parts of the Austrian Empire. Persia was peopled by a Zend-speaking branch of the same Aryan family, and India became the heritage of the Sanskrit-speaking Hindus. None of these races can claim to be the parent of the rest; it is not even certain which of them was the eldest brother; but the fact of their common brotherhood, of their common distinction from the Semitic, Mongolic, and other types of men, has been clearly established by the researches of modern science. In the words of Dr. Max Müller, "The terms for God, for house, for father, mother, son, daughter, for dog and cow, for wail and tears, for axe and tree, identical in all the Indo-European idioms, are like the watchwords of soldiers."—"Chips from a German Workshop," vol. i. p. 64.

we only know that they spoke a different language and belonged to a different, perhaps an older, to all appearance a less civilised race. These latter, the Dasyus of Aryan song, may once have covered the whole of ancient India; and their descendants, to the number of eleven or twelve millions, make up the various tribes of Bhiils, Gonds, Sántháls, Kols, Mairs, Minas, Mangs, Kukis, and so forth, which still cleave to their ancestral hills and forests, or roam in quest of a livelihood from place to place. Dark-skinned, short, ugly-featured, with high cheek-bones and scanty beards, these rude, scattered remnants of some aboriginal race differ not more widely in outward shape and language than in tastes, habits, and ways of thinking, from the tall, light-skinned, full-bearded, comely-featured, subtle-brained Hindus of pure Aryan descent. They eat all kinds of food, are partial to strong drinks, know nothing of caste-rules, wear very little clothing, have no written language, no system of regular tillage, worship strange sprites and demons, and lead on the whole a wild, sequestered, unprogressive life. Some tribes, however, have learned from contact with their civilised neighbours to move slowly forward in the same direction.

In the course of time the civilised conquerors of Upper India carried their arms and settlements across the great Vindhyan range, which walls off the Dakhan, or Southern India, from the plains and deserts of the north. Meanwhile the conquered country had been parcelled out into several kingdoms, such as the Panjáb, Gujarat, Kanauj, Tírhút, Magadhá, and Gaur or Bengal. It is hopeless trying to pierce the night of poetic fable which surrounds the history of those far-off days. The story of the great war between the Pándus and the Kurus, the Solar and the Lunar races, as told in the Máhábharat, the Indian Iliad, has probably as much or as little in it of the historic

element as Homer's story of the Siege of Troy.* Not less baffling for historic purposes are the events recorded in the yet older Rāmāyan, the Æneid or the Odyssey of Aryan India. Rāma, the hero of Valmiki's graceful epic, and rightful heir by birth to the throne of Ayodhya or Audh, is doomed by a step-mother's wiles to wander in lonely forests towards the south. His faithful wife Sita shares and cheers his exile, until Rāvan, the demon king of Lanka, or Ceylon, bears her off through the skies to his own palace. Thither, with the help of an army of monkeys, who probably stand for the wild races of Southern India, the bereaved husband follows up the ravisher. A terrible fight ends in the death of Rāvan, and the return of Sita to her husband's arms after she has proved her purity by passing unhurt through the ordeal of fire. Rāma, happy and triumphant, reappears in his late father's capital, to enjoy the kingly heritage which his faithful brother Bharat had so long held in trust for the rightful lord.†

What traces of historic truth may be gleaned from this fine old Sanskrit epic are slight and often uncertain. Rāma himself remains a heroic shadow, evolved, like Homer's Achilles, from some dim poetic legend of the sun. The story of his wanderings and his southward march to Ceylon, if it has any historic meaning, may point to the pro-

* This war, memorable for a great battle, fought for eighteen days, near Dehli, in which all the tribes of Northern India are described as taking part, is supposed to have occurred about 1300 B.C. The poem itself was probably composed by Vyāsa in the second century before Christ, partly, no doubt, from materials of a much older date. The Māhābharat—literally, the mighty Bharat—contains, in eighteen books, a series of legends concerning the adventures of the children of Pandu and Kuru, descended from Bharat the Great, who reigned at Hastinapur.

† The date of the Rāmāyan is very uncertain; but from internal evidence it would seem to have been composed ten or eleven centuries before Christ. (See Griffith's "Rāmāyan." Trübner & Co.) Both these national epics are still widely read, or chanted, throughout Hindustan.

gress of Aryan settlement in the regions south of the Narbadha. At the time when Valmiki wrote his poem, his Sanskrit-speaking countrymen must have already gained some kind of footing in that part of the great peninsula. If any trust can be placed in Hindu genealogies, a Pandyan dynasty of northern birth ruled part of Southern India in the ninth century before Christ, and a Chola dynasty, of like origin, sprang up a few centuries later in the modern Carnatic. Ere long Malabar also fell under the sway of Aryan kings ; and before the Christian era all India had been colonised or conquered by Sanskrit-speaking Hindus.

They, or their Indian kinsfolk, had even carried their arms and settlements into the islands of Java* and Bâli, and may perhaps, under Buddhist princes, have already become masters of Ceylon, although the conquest of that island by a prince of the great Gupta line dates back only to the fifth century of our era.

Long before that time, in the first century B.C., another race of conquerors had overrun Saurâshtra, the modern Katiawar. In the country once ruled by Krishna and his Jât successors, the Sâhs, an Aryan tribe from Persia, founded a dynasty which, about four centuries later, gave way to the prowess of the Gupta kings. These latter seem for a time to have wielded over the greater part of India a leadership akin to that which Athens, Sparta, and Thebes successively claimed over the rest of Greece, and which the Bretwaldas of the Saxon Heptarchy wielded over their fellow-princes. The strongest of the Indian rulers for the time being would win for himself the title of Maharajah Adirâj—Lord Paramount of the Old Empire—and that title his successor was free to keep, if he could. It was held from time to time by six of the Gupta princes, whose sway at one period extended from Katiawar to

* Java seems to have derived its name from the Yâvanas ; the Javan of Scripture, the Ionian Greeks of history.

Ceylon. In the middle of the first century before Christ it was held apparently by Vikram-Aditya, a prince of the Andhra dynasty, whose sway extended from Magadha, the erewhile seat of King Asóka's power, through Central India to the modern Haidarábád in the Dakhan. Descended from a powerful Rájput tribe, whom legend traces back to one of four Agnikúl brothers—"Sons of Fire"—evolved by Brahman spells from the sacrificial fires of Mount Abu in Gujarat, in order to go forth and rescue India from the curse of Buddhism, King Vikram held his court at Ujain* in Malwa, and became the Harún al Rashid of Indian story. His great victory over the Shakas—the classic Sacæ—who had swooped down upon the plains of Upper India from the highlands of Kamaon, signalised the early years of a long and glorious reign. In him, after ages cherished the memory of an upright king and a steady patron of art and learning. Later Hindu fabulists were never weary of weaving legends in praise of Indra's god-like grandson, who "brought the whole earth under the shadow of one umbrella," whose court was adorned with the foremost poets and wisest thinkers of his day, and the beginning of whose reign has served to mark a new era in Hindu chronology.† Among those who had the largest share of Vikram's bounty were the "Nine Gems of Science"; one of whom, the poet Kálidása, still charms the hearts of his living countrymen with the honied tenderness of his "Messenger Cloud," and the thick-clustering fancies of his dramatic masterpiece, "Sakúntala."

In their victorious march southward the Aryan Hindus appear to have encountered a people almost as civilised as themselves, but speaking a language yet nearer to that

* Ujain, one of the seven sacred cities of the Hindus, now belongs to Sindia, the sovereign of Gwalior. The ruins of the old city lie about a mile to the north of its modern namesake.

† The Sambat era, as established by Vikram, dates from 56 B C., and is still the recognised era of the Hindu calendar.

primæval tongue of which even Sanskrit was only a later offshoot. These earlier settlers may have built the cromlechs and dolmens, and carved the funeral urns, of which so many traces are found in the regions south of the Narbadha, where some form of Tâmil is still the prevailing tongue. New invaders in their turn pressed from time to time on the first Aryan settlements in Northern India. Kashmir, the ancient seat of a Kuru dynasty, was overrun by Scythian tribes, who appear to have mingled their own snake-worship with the Buddhism already imported thither.* Later still a Tartar dynasty ruled in their stead, and bequeathed to its own successors some noble monuments of architectural skill. Other tribes, whether of Scythian or Tartar origin, left their mark upon the country watered by the Ganges and the Brahmaputra, and even made their way down the sea-board of Orissa. Tradition likewise tells of the Yavans, whose name marks their Ionic or Greek extraction, as founding settlements in Kashmir and Sindh, and finally, in our own era, ruling Orissa for a century and a half.

Amid all such events, however, the candid historian must still grope his way with much care and many misgivings, content to rescue a few waifs of seeming fact from the darkness that everywhere broods around him. To trace events in their proper sequence becomes a hopeless task when the events themselves are shrouded in deceitful twilight, or lost in a tangle of decayed traditions. How much are we to believe, for instance, of that old story, which represents the Assyrian queen Semiramis as leading her myriads of horse and foot over the Indus, with thousands of camels disguised as elephants, whose panic-flight before the real elephants hurled against them by King Stabrobates

* The term *Scythian* has often been misemployed as a synonym for *Tartar* or *Tibetan*. In point of fact the true Scythian belonged to a pure Aryan stock; perhaps to that branch of it, the Gothic, which furnished the forefathers of Saxon England.

caused the invading hosts to scatter in disastrous rout? The story itself, however unknown to the travelled Herodotus, and incredible in the shape traced out by the pens of Ctesias and Diodorus, need not be scouted as absolutely untrue. Nor is there anything wildly improbable in the story of a much more successful inroad, accomplished in the tenth century before Christ by the troops of the Egyptian Ramses II.

There is surer ground perhaps for believing in a partial conquest of India by the troops of the Persian Darius Hystaspes, a near successor to the throne of Cyrus the Great. Fired by glowing tales of the rich and populous countries which his admiral Scylax had passed through on his memorable voyage down the Indus, that monarch carried his arms across the same river, as far as the great desert which divides Sindh from Rájputána. From his new conquests, which may have included the valley of the Satlaj, Darius seems to have drawn a richer tribute than from any of his other provinces.

About two centuries later a yet more famous conqueror stood upon the banks of the river, whence India has derived its name. Master of Persia on the defeat and subsequent death of Darius, the last king of his line, Alexander the Great of Macedon pushed his way steadily onwards through Balkh and Afghánistan, over the mountains of the Hindu Khush, through the rugged gorges of the Khaibar, until his war-worn legions reached the Indus flowing in swift stream, not far from Atak. Between the Indus and the Jhilam—the classic Hydaspes—he met only with friends, one of whom, Taxiles or Takshailas, appears to have offered his own aid against his powerful neighbour, Porus or Puru, whose sway extended from the Jhilam to Hastinápúr on the Ganges. The youthful conqueror of Greece, Persia, and Babylon, caught with his usual eagerness at a bait so tempting. Two hostile armies soon faced each other on the banks of the swollen Hydaspes, at a spot

since memorable for the passage of the troops with which General Gilbert followed up Lord Gough's crowning victory over the Sikhs at Gujarāt. On the left bank of the river, just below where it branches into several streams, Porus had arrayed his host, the flower of the warrior-tribes of Upper India. Alexander's strategy, however, served him well. Under cover of a dark, stormy night he carried a choice body of troops over the several branches of the main stream, and with the first streaks of morning bore swiftly down upon his opponent's flank and rear. Porus discovered the movement too late; but the courage with which he maintained a hopeless struggle, after half his troops had left the field, won for him the forbearance of a conqueror in whose ambition there was nothing mean. Treating the captive monarch, as Porus himself had asked to be treated, "like a king," Alexander took him into friendship, restored him to his throne, and even enlarged his frontiers with new conquests.

After founding two cities on the scene of his late successes, the conqueror led most of his troops across the Chenāb and the Rāvi. On the left bank of the Bēyas, or Hydrdotes, he encountered a large but ill-disciplined force gathered together, it seems, from the neighbouring hills. This he routed with heavy slaughter, in spite of a brave defence. Pushing on to the Satlaj—the classic Hyphasis—he would have carried his veterans even to Palibothra, the far-famed capital of Magadha, the Gangetic kingdom then ruled by a Takshak* prince of the Nanda dynasty, which had flourished there for nearly four hundred years. But the men who had followed him so far in quest of the world's easternmost bounds at length refused to go an inch further. Daunted by their attitude, or moved by their just complaints, Alexander unwillingly prepared to retrace his steps. Leaving Porus, it is said, in command

* The word "Takshak" seems to imply the settlement of a Daco-Scythian people in the valley of the Ganges.

of seven nations and two thousand cities, he led his tired soldiers back to the Jhilam. At the point where it receives the waters of the Chenáb, not far from Múltán, he himself with part of his army embarked for a voyage down that river to its junction with the Indus, and thence down the Indus to the sea, whilst his lieutenants, Hephaestion and Craterus, marched along either bank to the appointed meeting-place. A journey of several months, imperilled by the attacks of hostile tribes, and memorable for the storming of a stronghold defended by the Malli, the people of Múltán, brought the whole army to the sea-coast. Here Alexander once more divided his forces. While one wing, under Nearchus, sailed along the shores of the Indian Ocean and the Persian Gulf to the mouth of the Euphrates, he himself, with the other, marched along the coast amid the dreary sandhills of the Gedrosian desert, known to later times as Beluchistán. After his safe return to Susa, the great Macedonian still cherished the hope of one day planting his standard on the banks of the Ganges, of bringing the farthest marts of India into close commercial fellowship with the valley of the Euphrates and his new Egyptian capital on the Mediterranean. But the fever which slew him at Babylon, three years afterwards, in the thirty-third year of his age, cut short his career of conquest, and put off for many centuries the fulfilment of his schemes for the worldly advancement of the human race.

His work, however, was not destined to be all in vain. The voyage of Nearchus, itself in those days a feat of bold seamanship, prepared the way for new voyages of discovery, which finally laid the whole coast of Western India open to Greek adventurers from the Red Sea and the Persian Gulf. If Alexander's empire fell to pieces on his death, the ablest of his generals founded Greek dynasties which long held sway over its component provinces. If Babylon gave place to Seleucia on the Tigris, as the great mart of trade with the countries eastward of Meso-

potamia, Alexandria, under the Ptolemies grew apace into the first commercial capital of the civilised world, the common reservoir for the trade of three continents. Greek art inspired some of the noblest, if not the earliest, efforts of Indian architects and sculptors, as traceable in the great Buddhist domes whose ruined masses still meet the eye, here and there, on the road from Kabul through the Panjab to the banks of the Kistna. Greek coins discovered in Afghan, Panjabi, and Turkman cities, recal the days when Greek Seleucidae and their successors reigned over a Bactrian kingdom, stretching at one time from Lahor to Samarkhand.

When the first Seleucus had laid firm hold on the eastern provinces of Alexander's empire, he turned his arms against Chandragupta—the Saudracottus of Greek historians—who had annexed the kingdom of Magadha to the country erewhile ruled by Porus and Taxiles. But the able Greek soon found good reason to make peace with the powerful Sudra monarch, who remained master of all Alexander's conquests eastward of the Indus, in return for a yearly tribute of fifty elephants, and a marriage alliance with his late foe. A Greek envoy, Megasthenes, lived for many years at his court in Palibothra,* and bore memorable witness to the peace, order, well-doing, and high enlightenment that prevailed throughout the realm. His son, Mitra-Gupta, renewed the treaties with Seleucus, and after a reign of twenty-five years handed on the sceptre of the Mauryan line to his like-minded heir Asóka, the extent of whose sway is marked by the stone pillars engraved in Páli, the spoken Sanskrit of his day, which have been traced from Orissa even to Kabul. During his long reign of thirty-seven years this wise and beneficent ruler made justice easy of access to the poorest of his subjects, and

* The site of this great city, ten miles long by two broad, with its sixty gates, 571 towers, and moat thirty cubits deep, has been placed by different writers at Allahabad, Patna, Rájmahal and Bhúgalpúr.

outdid even his grandfather in the success of his efforts to encourage trade, learning, and every civilised art. The first Indian monarch who openly embraced Buddhism, he may have presided also at the birth of that new architecture which tells its own tale of Greek example, moulding the handiwork of the earliest native architects in stone.*

Thirty years after the death of Asôka, which happened about 226 B.C., the great Mauryan dynasty gave place to that of the Sanga princes, who displayed their zeal for the faith of Buddha by building massive "topes" and hewing out majestic cave-temples in many parts of their broad realm. These, in their turn, were succeeded about a century later by the Andhra line, of whose greatest prince, Vikram, we have already spoken. Under its wide sway the greater part of India seems to have flourished for nearly five hundred years. It may have been a king of this line, perhaps Vikram himself, whom Strabo has described as sending an embassy to Cæsar Augustus at Antioch, a few years after Actium had made Julius' nephew master of nearly all the civilised world. Another embassy to the same potentate appears to have been sent about the same time by a certain "King Pandion," a prince, no doubt, of the old Pandyan dynasty whose reign of two thousand years over part of Southern India ceased only with the Mohammadan Conquest.

It was about a century later that some ripples from the wave of a new religious movement, whose birthplace was Judæa, first broke upon the farthest shores of Southern India. Tradition, at any rate, points with some show of

* According to Mr. James Fergusson ("Tree and Serpent Worship"), the great Buddhist "tope" at Sanchi in Malwa is the oldest known specimen of pure stone architecture in Hindustan, and is one of many built by Asôka in honour of Sâkya Mûni. General Cunningham, however, would assign it a much earlier date. Be that as it may, its gateways were evidently built at a time when stone was beginning to supersede wood for building purposes; and its sculptures show clear traces of Greek influence.

likelihood to Mailapúr, or Mount St. Thomas, near Madras, as the last resting-place of India's first Christian teacher, St. Thomas the Apostle.* In the second century of our era Demetrius, Bishop of Alexandria, sent forth the eloquent Pantænus to visit and instruct the native Christians of Malabar, whose desire for further knowledge of the new Gospel some Egyptian sailors had brought to his ears. Two centuries later we find John, Metropolitan of Persia, claiming authority over the Christian churches in Southern India. In the sixth century a Christian bishop, consecrated in Persia, governs his Indian flock from Kaliánpúr, near Mangalor, and Christian villages are discovered even in Ceylon. In the latter part of the eighth century we see the Christians of Malabar living in peace and comfort under a king of the Chéra dynasty, and driving a busy trade with Persia and Egypt.

About a century and a half later, two Syrian priests from Babylon reach Southern India on a mission from their Persian Metropolitan, and make new converts in the country ruled by the friendly Rajah of Travancore. For some part of the tenth century a Christian rajah seems to have reigned in Malabar. In the course of years the churches of Southern India mixed up with their own simple doctrines some of the ideas and usages that prevailed among their neighbours, or were imported by missionaries from the Latin Church. In the last year of the sixteenth century the long struggle of the native Christians against the claims of the high-handed and unscrupulous Menezes, the Portuguese Archbishop of Goa, ends in the temporary

* The tradition in question was already old in the time of St. Jerome, who in the fourth century A.D., speaks of the Divine Word as being everywhere present, "with Thomas in India, with Peter at Rome, &c." Long before then, in the second century of our era, happened the mission of Pantænus to the Christians of Malabar, as described by Clemens Alexandrinus. A useful sketch of the early Christian Church of Malabar may be found in Rev. J. Loble's "The Church and Churches in Southern India," chap. iv.

triumph of the Roman rule. Fifty years later one-half of Rome's new subjects threw off the yoke they had never loved, and renewed their old allegiance to the Patriarch of Antioch. To this day the Church of St. Thomas, however shattered and defaced by time and human error, still owns many thousand worshippers who, whether in doctrine or discipline, have never bowed the knee to Rome.

Let us return for a moment to the Indo-Macedonian kingdom of Bactria. Among the kings of the dynasty which, about 256 B.C., succeeded that of the Seleucidæ, a prominent place is due to Demetrius, who reconquered the western provinces of the Panjáb ; to his successor Eucratides, who carried his arms still further eastward ; and to Menander, whose sway extended over the Panjab and Sindh. In the beginning of the first century before Christ, the Greek rule in Bactria and the adjacent provinces gives place to a succession of dynasties, Scythian, Parthian, Turkish, and Hindu, of all which some traces have been bequeathed to us in the coins discovered and deciphered by modern research. Each change of dynasty is marked by a change in the language of the legends borne upon the coins. Greek gives place to Sanskrit, which is followed in its turn by later forms of Aryan, Turanian, or Semitic speech. From some of these faithful witnesses to the past we learn that as late as the eighth century of our era Indian princes still reigned over the country westward of the Indus, from Sindh up to Kábul.*

* See Professor Wilson's "Ariana ;" Prinsep's "Historical Results," &c.

CHAPTER IV.

CIVILISATION OF ARYAN INDIA.

DURING the long period of which we have thus far spoken, Aryan India seems to have filled a commanding, if not the very highest place among the civilised races of that old time. In almost every field of mental, social, and political life, the early Hindus long kept ahead of their Western kinsfolk. Centuries before Pericles ruled or Plato wrote, their village communities had proved their extraordinary fitness for the work of governing themselves. In the sphere of philosophy they rose to heights of speculation hardly matched by the most daring subtleties of Aristotle, Spinoza, Berkeley, or Kant. Their moral and religious theories involved some of the highest truths conceivable by human wisdom. As subtle thinkers and keen logicians they have never been surpassed. Their oldest poem, the *Ramāyan*, teems with tender and holy thoughts, glows all over with examples of every virtue, is crowded with pictures of fatherly and fraternal love, of filial submission, of wifely purity, faithfulness, self-surrender, of manly tenderness, courage, firmness, long-suffering, of sexual love free from all earthlier taint, of domestic harmony, social well-being, of unaffected pleasure in the beautiful things of earth and air and human handiwork. Their earliest writings, whether in verse or prose, reveal the great progress made by a large-brained, supple-witted race in the arts that dignify, adorn, and sweeten life.

In astronomy the Hindus of the *Rig-Veda* had already learned to mark out the moon's path through the constel-

lations, to divide the zodiac into twelve signs or stations answering to the months and seasons of the year, to measure time by weeks, months, and solar years, to follow the movements of the planets, and to fix with some precision the date of each recurring equinox and solstice. A few centuries later their wise men had begun to calculate eclipses, to mark the precession of the equinoxes, to measure the orbits of the moon and planets; and sought, not quite in vain, to account for the apparent rising and setting of the sun. Still later, in the sixth century of our era, Aryabhata was perhaps the first in India who taught the spinning of the earth around its own axis, and who hit upon the true theory of solar and lunar eclipses.* He has been called, indeed, the founder of mathematical and astronomical science in India; and certain it is, that whatever help he may have derived from older Greek researches in those fields, his own discoveries and improvements more than repaid the debt.

In the twelfth century of our era Bhaskar-Achárya of Ujjain had forestalled by five hundred years the analytical methods of Newton and Leibnitz. Long before his day, centuries even before Aryabhata, the Hindus had begun to work out many of the higher problems in algebra. In arithmetic they invented decimals, and the letters of the Sanskrit alphabet supplied the numerals which modern Europe derived directly from Arabia. Their medical writings prove their early proficiency in the art of healing. They seem to have been clever surgeons, shrewd in detecting the sources and symptoms of disease, alive to the saving virtues of proper diet. They knew the value of human dissection,† and the medicinal uses of mercury and other minerals. Inoculation for small-pox seems to have been known to them from a very early age. Their

* He was born near Patna about A.D. 476.

† The practice of dissection was greatly hampered, of course, by the strength of religious prejudice.

chemical knowledge was far from despicable. Greek and Arabic physicians borrowed freely from the medical science of India; and the Khalifs of Bagdad, especially the far-famed Harún al Rashid, set no little store by the Hindu physicians who visited or held posts in their court.*

From the days of Manu's Code, ancient India possessed a noteworthy system of law which, after weathering the Mohammadan Conquest, still guides and bounds the latest efforts of Anglo-Indian lawmakers. In the study of grammar, or word-lore in its highest and widest sense, the Hindus were deeply versed as far back as the sixth or seventh century before Christ. Their grammar, like their astronomy, may have sprung from the depth of their religious instincts. If the need of fixing the exact time for a given sacrifice first made them astronomers, the duty of understanding what they prayed or chanted led them, it seems, to study the meanings, origins, and arrangement of words. Their oldest known lexicon, a work even now of acknowledged value, must have been written more than two thousand years ago. Their early literature, viewed as art-work, ranks second only to that of ancient Greece. The one bears to the other the same kind of relation which some great Hindu temple bears to the Parthenon. An old Sanskrit play, poem, or romance, if it lacks the severe symmetry, the classic grace of Homer or Sophocles, recalls the teeming luxuriance of an Eastern landscape, filled with the weird sheen of a tropical moon. At once the wildest of dreamers and the most subtle of thinkers, the old Hindus produced great poets, philosophers, fabulists, story-tellers, but not one historian of even the smallest mark. "Sweet Sakúntala" was the delight of Germany's greatest poet. The "Hitopadesa, or Fables of Pilpay," have during the last twelve centuries

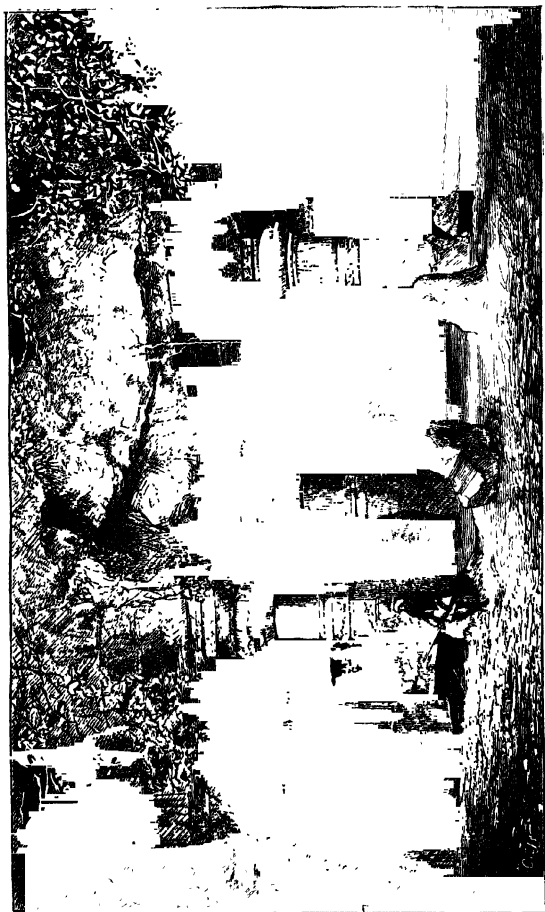
* Mrs. Manning's "Ancient and Mediæval India," vol. i. chap. 18.

been translated into almost every civilised tongue.* The epics of Valmiki, Vyása, and Kálidása; the dramatic, lyrical, and pastoral poems of Kálidása, Bhavabhúti, Jayadeva; the collection of prose stories preserved from an immemorial past, all attest the range and fruitfulness of the Hindu imagination, and abound with passages unsurpassed for beauty by any writings in the world. Only for the Muse of History does Aryan India provide no pedestal. Roaming childlike in a marvellous dreamland, gazing with rapt eye into the essence and the mystery of things, or clothing with ideal graces the scenes and characters of its pourtraying, the Hindu mind seems to have always spurned the cold rules of historic inquiry, to have treated past dates and events as mere aids to the weaving of poetic fancies, or religious fables. Indian chronology, such as it is, deals with myriads and even millions of years; while the kings and heroes of Indian story live to an age far beyond that of any recorded in the Jewish Scriptures.

Hindu plays were often accompanied by music of a sweet and plaintive kind, and the pathetic airs of Bengal have been likened by Sir William Jones to the wild but charming melodies of the Scotch Highlanders. In the sister arts of sculpture and architecture the old Hindus attained a pitch of excellence to which the ruined *topes* of Sánchi in Málwa and Amráváti on the Kistna, the cave temples of Karli, Ajanta, Ellora, and Elephanta, the pagodas of Tanjor and Mahábalipur, bear memorable witness.† The carven pillars and gateways of Sánchi

* A still older version of the *Hitopadesa* was found by Professor Wilson in the *Panchatantra*, or "Five Sections," which coincides in the main with the work ascribed to Pilpay or Bidpai.

† The old Buddhist *topes*, of great but still undefined antiquity, were almost solid domes of brick or stone and plaster, rising out of a low basement, and crowned by a pillared *Tree* or relic-box, over which stood the mystic "umbrella." The *tope*, which served as a burial-vault, a relic-shrine, or a sort of temple, was usually surrounded by a rail of massive stone-work, richly sculptured, and divided by four tall gateways. (Fergusson's "Tree and Serpent Worship.")



come midway between the art of Greece and Egypt; and the friezes of Amráváti, a few centuries younger, have the rich variety and flowing life-like grace that mark the sculptures of mediæval Europe. In the rock-hewn halls and temples of the same or of somewhat later times, the massive pillars are often relieved with tasteful fretwork, and the broad flat roofs panelled out with carved and coloured scrolls, as graceful as those that adorn the Baths of Titus, and the best houses in Pompeii. The Viháras, or convents of Ajanta, near Bombay, contain fresco paintings of high merit, whose age may be reckoned at fourteen hundred years. Grandeur of form, combined with no small beauty of detail, distinguishes many of the old temples in Southern India. The Great Pagoda of Tanjor, dating from the tenth century of our era, tapers upward through story after story to a height of two hundred feet. The wondrous temple of Halibedu, or Hallabeed, in Maisor, built by a Brahman architect for a Jain king, is carved all over with designs of such exquisite beauty that they still form models for the carved sandalwood of that province.* Orissa, famed for the worship of Jagannath, and rich in architectural remains, can boast of a temple at Buvaneswar eleven or twelve centuries old, unsurpassed for lofty and solid grandeur. In Rájputána the temples of Barolli and Chitor claim special notice for the delicate fulness and classic grace of their sculptured details. The massive ruins of pillared temples in Kashmir carry us back to the first centuries of our era, and seem to attest the influence of Greek upon Indian art. India, in short, abounds in architectural remains of exceeding beauty and great age, in the shape of temples, palaces, tanks, colonnades, bridges, castles, and fortified towns, many of which in the beginning of

* Bowring's "Eastern Experiences"; Fergusson's "History of Architecture."

the fifth century charmed the gaze of the Chinese traveller Fa Hian.

In works of engineering skill, Southern India appears to have excelled from the earliest times. The tanks and reservoirs, which everywhere feed the country with water gathered from a thousand streams and from skies laden with tropical moisture, are often of vast size, with stone-faced embankments fifty feet wide, and sluices admirably fitted for their work. In old days, when iron was plentiful, India won the name she has not yet lost for skill in the making of fine steel. The best of the Damascus blades have been traced to the workshops of Western India. For skilful or artistic workmanship in gold, silver, and other metals, in ivory, earthenware, muslins, woollens, brocades, and precious stones, the artisans of India were renowned ages before our English forefathers landed in Britain. From the earliest recorded dates the Hindus appear to have been active merchants, neat-handed workmen, and patient farmers. It is probable that the gold of Ophir,* it is certain that the spice borne by Arab traders to Egypt in the time of Joseph came from Indian marts. The pepper of modern trade is still called by its old Indian name. It was out of Indian ivory that Phidias carved his statues of Minerva and the Olympian Jove.† Indigo, as its name denotes, was an old Indian product, known to Europe in the time of Pliny, if not before. From the same country came the sugar, which, introduced into Europe by Greek merchants, betrays its Indian origin in the name it still bears throughout the civilised world.‡

* According to Max Muller, Ophir was the same as Malabar.

† From the Sanskrit *ibha* came the Latin *ebur* and our *ivory*. The Greek *elephas* may be another form of the same word. "India mittit ebur," "Quicquid gemmarum prodiga mittit India;" "Præbet odoratas quia discolor India messes," are among the references that crop up in the Latin poetry of the Augustan age.

‡ Our word "sugar," German *zucker*, Greek *saccharon*, evidently came from the Sanskrit and Persian "shakhar."

In the first century of our era rich streams of merchandise flowed from many a port of Western India to feed the growing luxury of Imperial Rome. Long before then, as we know from Manu's Code, Indian bankers issued their bills of exchange, and merchants insured their ventures by land and sea. Their character for enterprise, honesty, and shrewdness, stood high in the days of Marco Polo, who visited Southern India a few years before its great wealth in gold and jewels tempted the first inroads of Mohammadan conquerors. Then, as now, the fish-charmers on the Coromandel coast levied a handsome profit from the pearl-divers, whose safety they pretended by their magical arts to secure. Already Arab pirates were preying on the sea-borne trade of the country, and all direct intercourse between India and Europe had long since come to an end. But a busy trade had sprung up with China and Japan, while the cotton, indigo, hides, agates, and fine muslins of Gujarát, the pepper, ginger, and peacocks of Quilon, the diamonds of Golconda, the "woven-air" muslins of Masulipatam, the pearls of Tanjor, still made their way through Egypt and Mesopotamia to the West.

The practice of Satti or widow-burning, which Marco Polo found in full swing, appears to have been unknown in the days of Alexander. It was certainly unknown to the Hindus of the Vedic period. As far back as the reign of Chandragupta, the country was covered with thriving villages, relieved here and there by royal cities of vast circuit and stately adornment. Palibothra, the capital of that monarch's realm, is said to have been ten miles long and two broad, with sixty gates, and more than five hundred towers along its outer wall. According to the author of the Rāmāyan, the ancient city of Ayodhya, near the modern Faizabad, had a length of twenty-four and a depth of three miles. Broad roads, some of them lined with canals, ran past noble squares, smiling gardens, well-

built houses, stately temples, and palaces alive with splendid pageantry. Chariots, wagons, elephants, horses, streamed to and fro, bearing choice merchandise, "gay sleek people" in quest of pleasure, envoys from distant kings, or "bands of heroes skilled in every warlike weapon." Everywhere busy artisans plied their calling, holy men chanted the Vedas, damsels danced and minstrels sang their verses to the music of tabret and lute. The poorest man in the city earned for his day's labour a piece of gold. The women, says the poet, were fair to see, graceful, modest, of a charming wit; and each man was the loyal husband of one wife. Such are the leading strokes of a picture which, however coloured by the poet's fancy, may yet be taken for something like a fair presentment of Hindu life and manners thirty centuries ago.*

* The "*Rámáyan*," translated into English verse by R. T. H. Griffith, M.A. Book I, cantos 5 and 6.

BOOK II.

THE MOHAMMADAN PERIOD.

CHAPTER I.

EARLY MOHAMMADAN CONQUESTS, A.D. 664—1288.

For several hundred years of our era no new invader seems to have gained a firm footing on Indian ground. In the middle of the sixth century, indeed, during the reign of Chosroes, or Nushirvân the Just, the greatest Persian king of the Sassanid line, who fought successfully against Justinian himself, the Persian arms were carried for a while into the Rajput territory of Surat. But Goha, the son of the Rajput queen, appears in due time to have regained his lost inheritance, and from his marriage with the granddaughter of the Persian king sprang a line of princes whose descendants still rule in Udaipur.

A hundred years later, when the Arab followers of Mahomet had already overrun Persia, conquered Egypt, Syria, Mesopotamia, and planted the standard of the crescent in a few years after Mahomet's death on the banks of the Oxus, they proceeded to turn their arms against the countries watered by the Indus.* In the

* "There is no God but Allah, and Mahomet is his Apostle." Such was the substance of the doctrine preached to his countrymen by Mahomet, the whilom hermit of Mount Hira, the high-born son of Abdallah, an Arab chief of the great Koreish tribe at Mecca. Born about

year 664, the forty-second after the Prophet's flight to Medina, an Arab army marched from Basrah, on the Tigris. into Sindh, while another, in quest of proselytes and plunder, set out for Kábul. The conquest of ancient Bactria seems to have been completed in fifty years, but Aryan India proved a harder morsel to swallow. Little, save the plunder of a few towns, was gained in this first inroad by the soldiers of Khalif Moáwiyah. A more successful attack on Sindh was conducted in 711 by Mohammad Kásim, who, in requital of some wrong said to have been sustained by the crew of an Arab merchant-ship, sailed up the Indus as far as Alór, the capital of the Sindian Rajah, slaying him and his bravest Rajputs in their last hopeless sally from the hard-pressed town, and storming several other cities by the way. Dahir's brave queen, preferring death to dishonour, perished in the flames of her own palace ; but one of her daughters lived, it seems, to grace the haram of an Arab Khalif, and to avenge, as the story

570 A.D.. Mahomet—or more correctly Mohammad—began in his fortieth year to declare himself a messenger sent by God to turn his countrymen back from their idol-worship to the true faith as handed down by Abraham, Moses, and Jesus Christ. Belief and thorough trust in one righteous God, who rewards each man hereafter according to his deserts, formed the groundwork of a new religion which, as developed in the Korán, became the one fountain of moral, social, and civil law to many millions of Mahomet's followers in every age. Reviled, persecuted, threatened with death by his fellow-citizens, the prophet of Islám in 622 fled with a few score kinsmen and disciples to Medina, where the growing numbers and strength of his converts ere long tempted him to draw the sword, at first in self-defence, presently for the wide extension of his spiritual sway. Before his death in 632, all Arabia had submitted to his rule, and the Byzantine emperor, Heraclius, had been threatened with an attack on his eastern provinces. Twelve years afterwards Persia was conquered by the generals of Khalif Omar, the second of Mahomet's successors, whose sway already included Syria and Egypt. A few years later Bactria shared the same fate, and the Mohammadan arms and faith were carried to the Indus. Early in the next century Spain itself succumbed to the Arab invader. In every case the conquered people had to choose between "the Koran, tribute, or the sword."

goes, her father's fall, by causing the disgrace or death of his conqueror, Kasim, who had meanwhile been carrying his master's arms and religion into the neighbouring kingdom of Gujarat. Perhaps, however, his defeat by the Rajput chivalry of Chitor, in Mewár, had more connection than Arab chroniclers might care to own with his disappearance from the scene of his first successes. Certain it is that by the middle of the eighth century not a trace of Arab rule was to be found in Western India.

Once more, in A.D. 812, the countrymen of Mahomet, under Mahmúd, governor of Khorásán, a son or kinsman of the great Harún al Rashid, crossed swords with the Rajput warriors of Chitor. But Kámrán, great-grandson of him who had routed Kásim, summoned to his aid the princes of Northern India, and once more the old Hindu prowess drove back the Mohammadan invader beyond the Indus and the Sulaimán Hills. Thenceforth for more than a century and a half the peace of India remained unbroken by enemies from without, and the Hindus might claim the honour of having been the first to roll back that tide of conquest which had hitherto marked the progress of Islám.

Their day of suffering, however, was to come at last; but not from the Arab masters of Baghdad. About the year 913 Ismael Samáni, a Turk of that race which has since ruled or roved from Constantinople to Pekin,* founded at Bokhára a dynasty which for the next hundred and twenty years held sway over Khorásán and other outlying provinces once ruled by the Khalifs of Baghdad. The fifth prince of this Samánid line had a Turkish slave named Alptagin, who won his way to the government of Kandahár in Afghánistán. On the death of his

* The Turks of modern parlance are a mere branch of that Turanian race, which has given its name to Eastern and Western Turkistan, and furnished, in the forms of Attila, Chingiz Khan, and Timur, some of the greatest conquerors and most terrible scourges of mediæval Europe and Asia.

master, Abd-al-Malik, in 961, Alptagin voted against the son's claim to succeed his father. Suspected of intrigues against the new king, he retired to Ghazni, defeated the troops sent out against him, and finally carved out for himself an Afghan kingdom, which fell in 976 to his favourite slave and son-in-law, Sabaktagin.

At this time the country on the left bank of the Indus was ruled by a Hindu sovereign, whose capital was Lahor. In order to forestall the real or assumed designs of his Turkish neighbour, King Jaipál marched a large army across the Indus to Laghmán, on the road from Pesháwar to Kábul. The hostile armies were face to face, when a sudden storm spread such dismay among his superstitious troops, that the Hindu monarch was driven to purchase a safe retreat by the surrender of fifty elephants and the promised payment of a large sum of money.

On his return to Lahor, however, Jaipál refused to pay the price of his salvation, and put the Mohammadan envoys into prison. It was an evil hour for India when he preferred the crooked counsels of his priests to those of the high-minded warriors who urged him not to break his kingly word.

After disposing of his other enemies, the angry Tartar once more hastened towards the Indus, seeking vengeance for the insult offered him through his ambassadors. Once more the hostile armies confronted each other at Laghmán. On Jaipál's side were arrayed the flower of the Hindu chivalry, their numbers swollen by contingents from Dehli, Ajmír, Kalinga, and Kanauj. The abler general, however, won the day. An obstinate fight ended in the utter rout of Jaipál's warriors, the plunder of their vast camp, and the subjugation of the Pesháwar valley.

Thus began that new career of Mohammadan conquest, which led in due time to the subjection of all India under the Moghals. Mahmúd of Ghazni, Sabaktagin's son and successor, was not long in gratifying alike his ambition and

his religious zeal by a series of inroads amongst the rich idolators of Hindustan. In November, 1001, his fiery Turks and Afghans once more overthrew with heavy slaughter the myriads of horse and foot that barred his progress through the Pesháwar valley. Their aged leader, the luckless Jaipál, himself a prisoner at the close of that fatal day, was ere long set free on condition of paying his conqueror an annual tribute. But pride or reverence for the customs of his forefathers impelled the Rajah to court an early death in the flames of his own funeral pile ; and his son Anandpál mounted the tottering throne of Kashmir and Lahor.

One of his feudatories, the Rajah of Bhatnir,* on the northern edge of what is now the Bikanir Desert, refused to pay his share of the promised tribute. Mahmúd turned upon him with his wonted energy ; but Bijai Rai and his bold Rajputs fought with the desperate courage of their race, and not till after many repulses did the Iconoclast Sultán of Ghazni succeed in driving them into their last stronghold. At length the Rajah slew himself in his despair, and his forfeit realm was annexed to the dominions of the conqueror. For the latter, fresh work had meanwhile been cut out by the rebel governor of Múltán, which had passed some time before under the Mohammadan yoke. This business settled and a Tartar inroad from Káshgar promptly repelled, Mahmúd once more set out to punish the Rajah of Lahor for help given to the Sultan's foes.

Again a great Hindu army, gathered from all parts of Upper India, and equipped with the aid of money raised on the gold and jewels of patriotic Hindu women, crossed the Indus and spread out in magnificent array over the

* It was once the chief city of Bhatíána, or the land of the Bhatís, an old Rajput tribe, traces of whose former civilisation are still found in the many ruined towns and villages scattered over the sandy wastes once watered by the Gagar and the Chitang.

broad plain that stretches up to the Khaibar. For forty days the armies faced each other. At length the Hindus advanced to the attack, or, as some say, to meet a feint attack on the part of Mahmúd, whose skilful soldiership made up for his inferior numbers. For a time fortune smiled on Anandpál. His strong contingent of wild highlanders from Kashmir soon drove the Turkish archers back to their entrenchments; the main line of Hindus swept forward as sure of victory over the hated Moslem, when suddenly the elephant ridden by Anandpál himself took fright at the arrows and burning naphtha-balls, and fled. Other elephants followed his example. Quick to profit by the consequent disorder, Mahmúd hurled his Tartar horsemen in masses upon the foe. That day their swords drank deep of blood, if it be true that twenty thousand of Anandpál's soldiers perished on the field.

The plunder of Nagarkot and its richly-endowed temples sufficed the conqueror for that present. Three years later, however, he swooped down upon the yet holier shrines of Thanesar, in Sirhind, only sixty miles from Dehli itself. Before the Hindu princes could rally to its defence, Mahmúd was on his way home, laden with untold wealth in gold and jewels, while two hundred thousand captives, say the Arab chroniclers, were sold as slaves among the people of Ghazni. Still thirsting for fresh plunder, the Moslem hordes, in the name of their Prophet, swept down the Jamna as far as Matta, in the year 1017, and carried off the gold and silver idols from a hundred shrines, besides levying rich tribute from Kanauj and other cities in their way.

Mahmud's heavy hand next fell upon Anandpál, who seems to have leagued with other princes in punishing the Rajah of Kanauj for making terms with the invader. Lashor, at any rate, was sacked in 1021, and its unfortunate monarch fled to Ajmir. Two years later Gwalior opened its gates to the formidable Sultán. But the best remem-

bered, if not the greatest, of Mahmúd's Indian campaigns was that of 1024, which issued in the capture of Somnáth, on the coast of Gujarat, one of the holiest and wealthiest shrines in all India. Endowed with the revenue of two thousand villages, and blest with the ministrations of as many Brahmans, to say nothing of the hundreds of barbers, minstrels, and dancing-girls, who waited on the presiding god, this far-famed temple-stronghold was for three days besieged in vain. At length, in one last despairing onset, led by Mahmúd himself, the besiegers stormed the place, slaying thousands of its defenders, and dealing havoc among the holy things. One huge idol the priests entreated and would have bribed their conquerors to spare. But Mahmúd, who gloried in the name of idol-breaker, struck the figure with his mace; the blows of his followers shattered it in pieces; and jewels of untold value rolled out in glittering heaps upon the floor.* Laden with these unforeseen spoils and the sandal-wood gates of Somnáth, the plunder-loving Sultán marched home a year later through the dreary deserts of Sindh, where thousands of his followers perished by the way. Gujarát itself, like most of the provinces overrun by Mahmúd, was left under the sway of a tributary prince.

In the year 1030, soon after Persia had fallen under the yoke of Ghazni, death put an end to the terrible Sultán's career. For a century and a half his dynasty held its ground with varying fortunes in the country beyond the Indus. In India, however, it never gained any permanent footing eastward of Lahor. Mahmúd's expeditions, indeed, had been little else than enormous raids, and his successors were too busy in fighting foes nearer home to keep in order their Hindu tributaries between the Satlaj and the Ganges. Before the middle of the eleventh century the king of Dehli threw off the Moslem yoke,

* Thornton denies the truth of this story about the jewels, as having been unknown to the earlier chroniclers.

other princes rallied to his side, and but for the desperate defence of its starving garrison, Lahor itself would have been rescued from the grasp of its new masters. In the middle of the twelfth century that city became the last refuge of the Ghaznevid Sultans, when the rest of their possessions had been torn from them by the Saljukian Turks and their own kinsmen, the Afghán princes of Ghor.

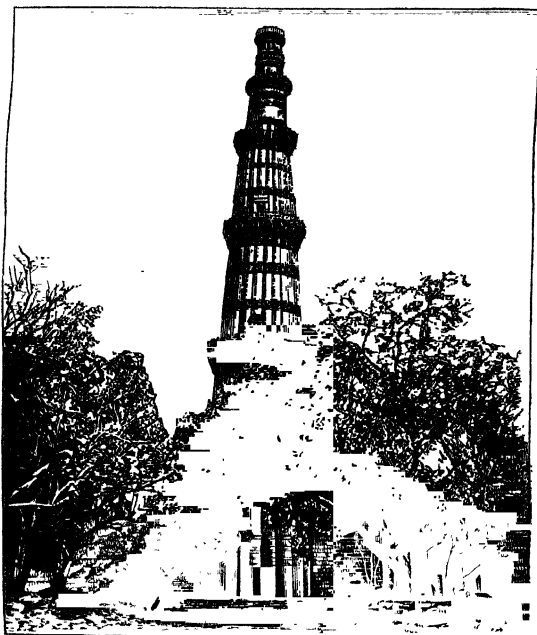
Thirty years later the descendants of Sabaktagin ceased to reign in the Panjáb also. In the year 1186, Shahab-uddin of Ghor, better known to history as Mohammad Ghori, crowned his former successes against Khnsru Malik, the Ghaznevid Sultan of Lahor, by seizing his capital and bearing the Sultan himself a prisoner to Ghor, where Mohammad's elder brother then held his court. Master of the Panjáb from Pesháwar to Multán, Mohammad presently led his warriors across the Satlaj to meet the allied Hindu hosts of Dehli and Ajmír on the banks of the sacred Saraswati. A great battle, fought near Thanesar, ended in the rout of the invaders ; and Mohammad, after a hot pursuit, was glad to place the Indus between his shattered forces and the foe. Two years later, in 1193, the beaten prince, burning for revenge, threw out fresh swarms of horsemen over the fair fields of Sirhind. Prithiráj, King of Dehli, his former foe, awaited him on the old battle-field, at the head of an immense array of horse and foot, marshalled under the foremost princes of Hindustan. The night before the battle which was to decide the fate of so many ancient kingdoms was spent by the Hindus in careless merriment, by the Turks in quiet preparations for attack. Before dawn Mohammad had crossed the Saraswati and well-nigh taken his opponents unawares. Still, with ranks hastily formed, they withstood for a time his most determined onsets. At length he ordered a retreat. The Hindus, in the eagerness of their pursuit, fell into disorder. Twelve thousand Turkish horsemen, led by Mohammad himself, thundered down

into their broken ranks. The best and bravest of their leaders were slain or captured, and the shattered remnants of that proud army fled from a field reeking with the blood of their dead and dying countrymen.

On that fatal day Aryan India lost far more than thousands of precious lives and the accumulated treasures of a vast camp. From this second battle of Naráyan dates the true beginning of India's long subjection to Mohammadan rule. After staining his victory with the slaughter of his royal captive, Prithiráj, and of many thousand Hindus whom the storming of Ajmir threw into his clutches, the resolute Ghorian made over his new conquests to his ablest general, Kutab-ud-din, who speedily carried his arms as far south as Koel, the modern Aligarh, and fixed the seat of his government in Dehli itself. Next year Mohammad, with a fresh army, returned from Ghazni to overthrow the immemorial kingdom of Kanauj and destroy or defile the temples of idolatrous Hindus at Banáras. On this occasion the Rhátors of Kanauj, one of the oldest Rájput tribes, sought honourable exile among the rocks and sandhills of Marwár, where they founded the still-existent kingdom and dynasty of Jodpúr.

Year by year the Mohammadan arms were carried by Mohammad or his generals, with almost unvarying success, now westward of the Jamna to Gwalior, Chitor, and even Gujarat, anon down the valley of the Lower Ganges into the heart of Bengal. If the Rájput princes of Upper India fought long and manfully against their doom, it took Kutab-ud-din's soldiers but one year to bring the rich plains and populous cities of Bengal under the Moslem yoke. Nadiya, the Hindu capital, was given over to plunder, and the seat of the new government fixed at Gaur, on a branch of the Lower Ganges, a city whose vast circuit of verdure-covered ruins still reveals some noteworthy traces of Mohammadan genius in the domain of architecture. Ruthless in destroying the idols and pil-

laging the holy places of the Hindus, the Mussulman conquerors of India in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries adorned their cities with mosques, palaces, tombs, and other buildings, conspicuous for bold outlines, square masses, and severe simplicity of detail. To the polished



THE KUTAB-MINAR, DEHLI.

masterpieces of a later day, whose glories blossomed in the graceful grandeur of Bijapur, Ahmadabad, Jaunpur, Fathipur Sikri, and bore ripest fruit in the buildings reared at Agra and Dehli by Sháhjahán, this old Pathan architecture bore much the same relation that the towers

of Exeter Cathedral bear to those of Canterbury, or the nave of Gloucester to the chapel of Henry VII. at Westminster.*

On the murder of Mohammad Ghorî in 1205 by some Panjâbi hill-men, who thus requited him for his cruel treatment of their countrymen, Mohammad's faithful viceroy, Kutab-ud-din, was invested by the dead king's successor with the sovereignty of Hindustan. The crown which he assumed at Lahor in 1206 he lived to wear but four years. His slave and son-in-law, Altamsh, whom the nobles of the new kingdom chose for their next ruler, had a stormy reign of twenty-five years, during which he repelled an invasion from Ghazni, wrested Sindh from a Mussulman rival, conquered Mâlwa, up to that time ruled by a prince of the great Vikram's line, captured the strong fort of Gwalior, and re-established his sway over the rebellious governors of Bengal. Of all the old Hindu kingdoms in Northern India there remained scarcely one outside the Mohammadan rule. A few princes were allowed still to reign on condition of paying tribute; but far the greater part of the country was governed directly by rulers of the conquering race.

It was in this reign that the Great Khan of Tartary,

* The monuments of early Pathan art in or near Dehli include the Kutab Minâr, one of the loftiest and most striking pillars in the world. The pointed arch first takes its place in Pathan buildings of the thirteenth century. At Bijâpûr, in Sattâra, the great dome of Mohammad Adil Shah's mausoleum, built in the first years of the seventeenth century, deserves special notice. The Jama Masjid of Ahmadabâd, built by Ahmad Shah in the fifteenth century, with its fifteen domes upheld by 260 pillars, and the delicate lattice-work of its stone screens, may rank among the most beautiful of Eastern mosques. At Ahmadabâd and Jaunpur the influence of Hindu on Mohammadan art is clearly traceable. The great mosque at Fathipur Sikri, twenty miles southwest of Agra, with its glorious gateways, vast quadrangle, and majestic cloisters, attests from the hill on which it stands the piety and the splendid taste of the great Akbar, who also built at Dehli, in honour of his father Humâyun, a marble monument second only as a work of art to its younger rival, the Taj at Agra.

Chingiz Khan, the scourge of Asia, swept with his countless hordes of Mongol horsemen, like a lava-flood, over the vast regions between the Caspian and the Pacific, overthrowing the Turkish monarchy of Kharizm, and chasing the son of its Sultan, who had also reigned in Kabul, beyond the Indus. Had Altamsh listened to the prayer of the fugitive prince, India also might have been involved in the general ruin. But Jalál-ud-din had to flee elsewhere, and the terrible Tartar contented himself with a flying raid through Sindh. Three centuries more had to elapse before a conqueror of the race of Chingiz founded a new empire in Hindustan.

On the death of Altamsh in 1236 his sceptre passed into the hands of a son, who was speedily set aside by his manly-hearted sister Rizia, whose only fault, says the historian Ferishta, lay in her being a woman. Her vigorous but troubled reign of three years collapsed in a rising among her nobles, who resented the favours she bestowed on her Abyssinian slave. Carried off a prisoner to Bathinda, she won the heart of her captor, became his wife, and, with his help, took the field against her rebellious brother Bairam. Fortune, however, again deserted her arms, and her second imprisonment was speedily followed by her violent death.

In the six following years two princes of the house of Altamsh successively exchanged the throne of Dehli for imprisonment and death at the hand of their restless or insulted nobles. Mahmúd, a younger son of Altamsh, was then called to the throne, which he held for twenty years, dying peacefully in his bed after a series of successful struggles with the Hindu warriors of Rájputána, Bundalkhand, and other revolted or independent states. His nephew, Sher Khan, even succeeded in driving the Moghal invaders out of Ghazni and reannexing it to the throne of Dehli. His successor, Balban, a Turkish slave whose merits had won him the hand of a daughter of

Altamsh and raised him to the post of Wazir, or prime minister, under Mahmúd, stepped without difficulty, but not without bloodshed, into the latter's place. Having in true Turkish fashion got rid of his foremost rivals, he ruled the country for twenty years with a strong but by no means heavy hand, except when he had to put down a revolt in Bengal or to enforce his edicts against wine and open profligacy. His death, at a ripe old age, was hastened by grief for the loss of his favourite son Moham-mad, who fell in the flush of victory over his Moghal foes. His splendid court, filled with poets, artists, philosophers from many lands, and refugee princes from the realms overrun by Chingiz and his successors, furnished a congenial theme for the pens of fervid historians. It is worthy of remark, however, that the prince who thus opened his doors to high-born or accomplished strangers, had little mercy to spare for the subject Hindus. Not one of that race, we are told, was allowed by him to rise in the service of the State.

CHAPTER II.

THE KHILJI DYNASTY OF DEHLI, A.D. 1288—1321.

Two years after Balban's death, Jalal-ud-din Firoz, a chief of the Khilji tribe that dwelt in the Afghan mountains, founded a new dynasty in the blood of Balban's worthless grandson, Kai-kobad. In the fifth year of his reign a Mussulman army, led by his nephew Ala-ud-din, began that series of invasions which was to end in the conquest of Southern India. Laden with the untold plunder of Deogarh, the modern Daulatabad, a famous hill-fort belonging to the Yádava kings of Máhárashtra, the victorious nephew returned home to plot, to compass in the most treacherous manner, the death of his confiding old uncle in the seventh year of his reign. This murder having been presently followed up by that of the king's two sons, Ala-ud-din mounted the vacant throne. His reign of twenty years was opened by the reconquest of Gujarat and the capture of its Rajput queen, who lived to adorn the conqueror's haram. Next year his own strength and the courage of his troops were yet more severely tried in repelling the inroads of a vast body of Moghal horsemen, who swept Northern India up to the very gates of his capital. A great battle in the plains near the Satlaj issued in the rout of the invaders, but the victory was dearly won by the death of the Pathán monarch's ablest general. A second inroad took place in 1303, while half of Ala-ud-din's army was engaged in a fresh invasion of Southern India, and he himself was about to lead thither another army flushed with the recent plunder of Chitor in

Rájputána.* The sudden retreat of the Moghals from the land they had wasted to their heart's content, was followed by their reappearance in 1305 and 1306. Once more the choicest warriors of Islam advanced, says their historian,† "like clouds and rain" against the infidel Tartars, and falling on them "like a raging storm" drove them with tremendous slaughter across the Indus. "Countless infidels were dispatched to hell," and many thousands were taken prisoners. With a cruelty not altogether unprovoked, the merciless Sultan ordered that his male captives should all be slain and beaten up into mortar for the Fort at Dehli. A bastion or pillar was likewise formed out of their heads.

Free from further alarms on his Western border, the energetic Sultan sent his general, Kafir, a promoted slave, to enforce payment of the tribute due from the Rajah of Deogarh. Yielding to necessity, the Rajah sued for easy and obtained liberal terms. Three years afterwards the same general subdued the kingdom of Warangúl, to the south of the Godávári, not very far from the modern Haidarábád. In besieging the walled town of Warangul the Mussulmans plied their "Western catapults" with such effect that the earthen walls were "pounded into dust" by the incessant shower of heavy stones. When the besiegers had stormed the outer works of the city,‡ its defenders lost heart and sued for terms. Little was granted them except their lives. Under fierce threats of

* During these centuries of trouble the Hindu princes, if they failed to avert disaster, knew at least how to die. Hopeless of resistance, the Queen of Chitor with the noblest of her ladies perished in the flames of their own kindling, while the Rajah and his faithful followers were finding the death they sought on the weapons of the foe. A similar issue had marked the siege of Rbantambhor in 1299.

† Mír Khusrú, author of the *Tárikh-i-Aláí*, which narrates the history of Ala-ud-din down to A.D. 1310. See Sir H. Elliot's "History of India as told by its own Historians," vol. iii.

‡ According to another historian, Barni, the besiegers took the out-works by escalade.

a general massacre, the unfortunate Rajah had to make all his treasures over to the conqueror, who returned to Dehli laden with the gathered wealth of a kingdom which for centuries had thriven peacefully under its Hindu lords. A hundred elephants, seven thousand horses, and treasure enough to load a thousand camels, were the visible tokens of Kafur's success. His new conquest remained under the rule of its Rajah, Iaddar Deo, on condition of his paying a yearly tribute to the Sultan.*

The following year saw Maabar, the modern Carnatic, overrun by the same commander, who left his footmarks everywhere in plundered cities, ruined temples, and idols broken into pieces or carried off as part of the prize. On his march south-eastward across the highlands of Maisor, he sacked the city of Dwar-Samudra, and defaced the beautiful temple which a king of the Bellal line had just reared in honour of Siva.† After bearing his standard to Madura, if not to Cape Comorin, and building a mosque at some place on the sea-coast opposite Ceylon, Kafur returned to Dehli in 1311 with a booty the like of which his countrymen there had never before seen. According to the native chroniclers, it included six hundred and twelve elephants, ninety-six thousand *mans* of gold,‡ several boxes of pearls and jewels, and twenty thousand horses. To each of his higher officers the Sultan distributed the gold in shares, ranging from half a *man* to four *mans*.

Once more, in 1312, Kafur invaded the Dakhan, to punish the refractory Prince of Deogarh, receive tribute from Warangul, and send home fresh spoils from conquered countries. Meanwhile his master, Ala-ud-din,

* Kafur's army appears to have been reinforced by large numbers of Maratha horse and foot furnished by the Rajah of Deogarh.

† Supposed to be the great temple of Halibed in Maisor, a marvel of florid decoration.

‡ A *man* or maund equals about 80 lbs. weight English.

wreaked a fearful vengeance on the "new Mussulmans," or converted Moghals, who had been taken into his service or allowed to settle on his lands. Suddenly reduced by his orders to poverty and forced idleness, some of them plotted to seize, if not to slay, the ruler who was accused of grinding down his subjects with fines and heavy burdens, and enforcing with cruel penalties the prohibitions of the Korán against wine and other strong drinks. In meeting this new danger, Ala-ud-din gave full swing to his own bloodthirsty nature; twenty thousand Moghals, most of whom knew nothing of the plot, being by his orders slaughtered in one day.

Throughout his reign, Ala-ud-din seems to have betrayed in turn the most opposite workings of a strong but ill-balanced nature. A cruel tyrant, he yet gave heed at times to the counsels of his more outspoken advisers, and made some attempts to administer a rude sort of justice among his people. From a life of the grossest debauchery he could pass for some years into one of outward temperance and self-denial. Illiterate himself, he encouraged the presence of learned men at his court, and even deigned for their sake to master the rudiments of the Persian language.* Utterly ruthless towards friends' or foes who might have stirred up his bile against them, he would sometimes listen with good humour, or at least with patience, to advice offered him under the faith of his kingly word. If he plotted the death of one of his bravest officers, he never tired of heaping favours on another who, all the while, was planning how to wrest the sceptre from his heirs. Fines, confiscations, and plunder went far to fill his treasury; but he checked the license of his nobles, tried to put down bribery and extortion among his revenue collectors, and punished with summary sternness every

* Barni, however, says that he "never associated with men of learning."

shopkeeper who was caught dealing in false weights or measures against the poor.*

In order to keep down the turbulence of his nobles, the exactions of his public servants, and to enforce obedience to his many stern decrees, Ala-ud-din maintained an army of spies and informers, who reported regularly whatever they might see or hear, even in the most private places. So great was the dread of them that many a noble dared hardly speak aloud in his own palace. A special edict, moreover, forbade the nobles and great men from giving feasts, holding meetings, marrying or giving in marriage without the Sultan's leave, or admitting strange guests into their houses. No wonder that feasting and hospitality fell into disuse, that the *sarais*, or public resting-places, were cleared of plotters, and that treason for a time became too perilous a game even for the boldest to play at, when his trustiest-seeming comrade might prove to be his direst foe.

Among other classes rebellion was to be disarmed by other means, such as heavy imposts, arbitrary fines, and sweeping resumptions of freehold estates. To the mass of the Sultan's subjects money became a thing unknown, and the people, says Barni, "were all so absorbed in obtaining the means of living, that the name of rebellion was never mentioned." For the millions of Hindus who had passed under the Mohammadan yoke this was indeed a time of bitter suffering. Like the Jews in Europe at that very date, they were fleeced and harried at every turn. From the *jiziyah*, or poll-tax, to the rack-rent levied on the land in the shape of half the gross produce, no effort was spared to reduce them to a common poverty.

* According to Barni, boys were frequently sent into the *bazar* to test the honesty of the shopkeepers. If one of these gave short weight, the inspector went to his shop, "took from it what was deficient, and afterwards cut from his haunches an equal weight of flesh, which was thrown down before his eyes."—Sir H. Elliot's "History of India," vol. iii. p. 196.

The poorest Hindu was taxed for the goat that gave him milk ; his neighbour for the bullock that ploughed his bit of land. To ride their own horses and wear fine clothing were luxuries reserved for very few of the subject race. Threats and blows enforced the tax-gatherer's merciless demands. No Hindu, says the historian,* "could hold up his head, and in their houses no sign of gold or silver or of any superfluity was to be seen." So hard became the struggle to live that the wives of Hindu landowners were often fain to serve for hire in the houses of the Mussulmans.

Nor did their troubles end here. It was the Sultan's ambition to keep up a large army on a low rate of pay—an achievement possible only if the price of provisions could be kept down. "The second Alexander," as he delighted in calling himself, proceeded to fix the market-prices of various grains. A good deal of the "tribute" or land-revenue was by his orders levied in kind. With the grain thus regularly accruing he filled his granaries. The grain-dealers were forced to sell again at a low uniform rate the corn which the *raiyats*, or peasants, had been forced to sell them after satisfying the wants of the royal treasury. In times of drought and dearth the royal granaries threw open their stores at the market-rates. Regrating was punished by heavy fines and forfeiture of the stock held back from sale. Any attempt to raise the market-prices was further checked by the punishment of the market-overseer himself. Horses, cattle, slaves, fruit, vegetables, grocery, shoes, needles, everything, in short, exposed for sale in the *bazars* or market-places had its value strictly regulated and kept down by royal command. Nothing might be exported, while importation was freely encouraged. Hours were fixed for opening and closing shops. The monarch's will, in short, became law, overriding even the precepts of the Koran

* Barni "Tārīkh-i-Fīroz Shāhi."

whenever these might clash with his own views of right and expediency. If his zeal for regulating everything led often to absurd injustice, or provoked repeated evasions of intolerable edicts, he appears at least to have succeeded in maintaining a cheap army, in keeping a tight hand on his unruly nobles, and in making life a sore burden to the mass of his Hindu subjects.

For some years of his reign Ala-ud-din governed vigorously and with fair success. Peace and order flourished everywhere; the nobles were quiet, the people outwardly loyal; life and property were pretty safe on the highways. Splendid buildings adorned his capital, and noble tanks stored up their water for the use of the dwellers in large towns. At length, however, the worse traits of his character and conduct began to bear answering fruit. The arrogance which had formerly shown itself in schemes for setting up a new religion, now tempted him to exchange his able ministers for worthless eunuchs and slaves who only pandered to his love of pleasure. A dropsy, brought on or heightened by self-indulgence, increased the violence of his temper. Mistrustful of most men, he yielded himself blindly into the hands of his cunning favourite—his partner in the foulest profligacy—Kafûr. Under this man's baneful influence he ordered the death of his brother-in-law and the imprisonment of his two elder sons. His nobles at length began to plot against him. Gujarat broke into fierce rebellion. Chitor was wrested from Moslem rule by the famous Rajput chief Hamîr, and the son-in-law of Ram Dêo drove the Mohammadans out of Mâhârâshtra. On hearing of these manifold disasters, the death-stricken monarch is said to have bitten his own flesh with rage. He died soon afterwards in the last days of the year 1316; and Kafûr, rightly or wrongly, was widely credited with a direct share in his death.

That he meant to profit by it was at once made clear enough by his seizure of the government, under a show of

acting as guardian to the youngest son and pretended heir of the late king. The eyes of the two eldest sons were put out by his orders, and nothing but his own death at the hands of some officers of the palace-guard saved the family of his late master from the doom which so often follows a change of dynasties, or even of kindred rulers, in the East.

The third son of the late king, Mobárak, had no sooner regained his own freedom, and mounted the throne under the title of Kutab-ud-din, than he too proceeded to assure his hold of it by blinding his youngest brother and slaying the officers to whom he owed his life and sceptre. His short reign of four years opened well with the release of many thousand political prisoners, the restoration of much confiscated land, and the annulling of nearly all the harsh laws devised by his father. The Hindus breathed freely under a king who refused to tax them to the starving-point, and the Mussulmans once more took their pleasure without fear of spies and cruel tortures. While an able general suppressed the revolt in Gujarat, the king himself marched into the Dakhan, retook the stronghold of Deogarh, and hunted the rebel leader, Harpál, out of his last hiding-place to a horrible death : he was flayed alive by order of the Sultan.

Leaving his favourite Khusrú, a converted Hindu, to overrun the Carnatic, Kutab-ud-din returned to Dehli. There, amidst his wine-cups, his women, and his flatterers, he gave small heed to passing affairs, except when a plot discovered or a rebellion suppressed might rouse him into a burst of vindictive savagery. At length he too fell an unpitied victim to the treachery of his trusted follower Khusrú, who clinched his crime by slaughtering all those members of the royal family whom his master had spared. Only for a few months, however, did the renegade Hindu enjoy his blood-bought crown. Gházi Khán Toghlak, Governor of the Panjab, led his veterans against the

usurper. The victory of Indrapat, crowned by the seizure and beheading of Khusrú, opened Dehli to the conqueror, who was hailed by his Mussulman countrymen as their deliverer from the yoke of "Hindus and Parwáris."*

* These Parwáris were a body of retainers from Gujarat.

CHAPTER III.

THE TOGHLAK, SAIYID, AND LODI DYNASTIES, A.D. 1321—
1526.

NOT one of the house of Khilji being found alive, Toghlak mounted the throne of Dehli with the title of Ghiyas-ud-din. Under the mild rule of this son of a Turkish slave by a Hindu mother the country prospered, the Mohamadans breathed freely, and even the Hindus had little cause to regret the change. After setting his finances in order and lowering the land-rents to a pitch so moderate that fresh fields might yearly be brought under the plough, the new king proceeded to strengthen his frontiers against the Moghals. In 1322 his son Juna Khan was deputed to invade Telingana and bring the refractory ruler of Warangul to terms. Repulsed with heavy losses on the first attack, he succeeded the next year in capturing the city and bearing its Rajah prisoner to Dehli. The name of the city was changed to Sultanpúr, and Mussulman officers were left in charge of the conquered province. The king's arms were equally successful against the Moghal invader on the north-west.

Next year the king himself marched into Laknauti, or Bengal, where the son of his old master, Balban, still held an almost independent sway.* After bestowing on Karra Khan a royal umbrella in token of kingly rank, and reducing to obedience the revolted provinces of Dakha and Jaunpur, he returned homewards, only to be crushed to

* See page 55.

death, by design or accident, in the pavilion which his son had built for his reception at Toghkakabad.

Juna Khan, who succeeded him in 1325 under the title of Mohammad Toghkak, appears to have been one of the most gifted, wayward, wrong-headed, and merciless princes of his age. Deeply read in Persian and Arabic lore, equally at home in Greek philosophy and the physical sciences, a good mathematician, a renowned orator and letter-writer, endowed with a wonderful memory, of temperate habits, dauntless courage, invincible energy, in word and deed a pious Mussulman,* he bade fair to outtop the highest achievements of any former reign. But the curse of absolute power, working on a heated brain, a proud heart, and a fierce, unbridled temper, turned all that teeming promise to naught; and the wonder of his age lived to become its direst scourge.

His first measure, the payment of a heavy bribe to get rid of the Moghals who had invaded the Panjab, was rewarded with a success it hardly deserved. The same good fortune, with better reason, followed his standard into Southern India, nearly all of which became thoroughly subjected to his rule. From Gujarat to Chittagong, from Lahor to Madura, stretched an empire wider than that of Aurangzib. But Mohammad hungered after new conquests. Three hundred and seventy thousand horsemen, according to Barni, were held for a whole year in readiness to enter Khorāsān. The cost of their maintenance, however, emptied his treasury, and the troops, collected for the conquest of Persia, repaid themselves on their way home with the plunder of their own people.

A few years later, in 1337, the restless Sultan sought to replenish a drained exchequer by throwing another

* "No learned or scientific man, or scribe, or poet, or wit, or physician, could have presumed," says Barni, "to argue with him about his own special pursuit, nor would he have been able to maintain his position against the throttling arguments of the Sultan."

large army somewhere across the Himálayas into Chinese Turkistan.* Checked in their advance by the courage or the numbers of the Chinese; wasted by hardships, disease, and the attacks of the hill-tribes in their rear, very few of the hundred thousand who set forth on that fatal errand survived the perils of a yet more ruinous retreat through fever-breathing forests and flooded plains.

Meanwhile Mohanmad seems to have tried all manner of devices for recruiting his diminished revenues. New cesses on the land reduced the bulk of the *raiya*ts, or peasants, to utter beggary, thousands of them leaving their untilled fields to roam the jungles in quest of food, or to lurk about the highways in hopes of plunder. Drought and high prices, the fruit in great measure of these exactions, brought on a famine which raged in the Ganges valley for several years, slaying "thousands upon thousands" of starving wretches, and breaking up many a household whose forefathers had dwelt for centuries in the same village. Large tracts of fruitful country were reduced to desert. In trying to mend matters the Sultan only made them worse. His scheme for circulating copper tokens of an artificial value in the place of gold and silver succeeded only in deranging the course of trade and enlarging the circle of popular suffering, without restoring the shattered finances of the state.

In this state of things, discontent, disorder, and rebellion grew more and more rife. Hardly had Múltán been reduced to obedience, when the king's nephew rose against him in the Dakhan, and a Mussulman noble drove the king's officers out of Bengal. With his usual energy Mohammad turned upon his assailants. His nephew was defeated, taken, and flayed alive. A popular outbreak in

* Barni talks of a march towards "the mountain of Karájal," which "lies between the territories of Hind and those of China." The capture of this mountain was somehow to aid Mohammad in his still-cherished designs on Khorásán.

the Doab, or country between the Jamna and the Ganges, was suppressed with hideous slaughter of innocent thousands. The great city of Kanauj was given over to a general massacre. While one of his officers was putting down a revolt in Lahor, the king himself marched from Deogarh to deal with a like disturbance in the Carnatic. Cholera, however, made such inroads into his camp at Warangúl, that he withdrew his troops to Deogarh, himself half dead from the same disease ; and presently Warangúl also threw off the imperial yoke. It is mentioned as a master-flight of whimsical self-conceit, that a tooth he had lost on his way homewards was buried with great pomp under a stately mausoleum at Bhír.

It was about this time that Mohammad's liking for Deogarh issued in a rash and disastrous attempt to substitute that place for Dehli as the seat of his rule. He changed its name to Daulatabád. When his new capital had been adorned with new buildings and strengthened with new lines of defence, he commanded the people of Dehli to leave the city, whose growing splendour had kept pace with the growth of Mohammadan conquests, and to march with all their household goods to the homes he had chosen for them beyond the Sâtpúra hills. The road thither had been planted with full-grown trees ; but thousands perished from the toils of that long journey, and as many more filled the graveyards of Daulatabád. Ere long the survivors were allowed to return home, but once more, under pain of death, were they compelled to emigrate afresh. The new capital, however, was not fated to prosper on the ruins of the old. Dehli was again re peopled, and Mohammad's last years were chiefly spent in the city that towers along the Jamna.

Those years were troubled with fresh storms, and fresh disasters followed each other, in spite of the Sultan's high abilities and of the countenance bestowed upon him by the nominal head of Islám, the reigning Khalif of Egypt.

Famine still raged in the Doab. His well-meant efforts to improve the revenue by bringing waste lands under tillage seem to have ended only in enriching a crew of official harpies at the public expense. Terrible punishments goaded his subjects into fresh outbreaks. The unprovoked slaughter of eighty "foreign Amirs," or converted Moghal settlers, by his willing tool, the governor of Malwa, roused their countrymen in Gujarat into a rebellion, the scene of which was afterwards shifted to Daulatabad. After wasting the former province with fire and sword, Mohammad hastened into the Dakhan; but while he was besieging Daulatabad, the news of a fresh rising recalled him into Gujarat. Here he was again successful; but meanwhile the Dakhan was slipping surely out of his grasp. With the help of the governor of Malwa the insurgents drove the king's troops across the Narbadha; and their new leader, Hasan Gangu, became the first king of an independent Bahmani line, whose sway was to flourish for the next hundred and eighty years.

Gujarat reduced to order and desolation, the active monarch turned his arms against Sindh, whose princes had given shelter to the fugitives from the neighbouring province. In spite of ill health he was pushing on towards Tatta, on the Indus, when death, hastened by a hearty meal of fish, brought all his cares, schemes, and follies to a sudden close, in the twenty-sixth year of his unquiet reign. Seldom has a prince of like capacity laboured with a will so forward for his own undoing. The erstwhile master of nearly the whole Indian peninsula had lived to see one province after another fall away from his sceptre. It was more than two centuries before an emperor of Delhi again held actual sway over the Mussulman lords of Bengal. For nearly the same period Bijayanagar, cradled among rugged hills on the right bank of the Tumbadra, remained the seat of a powerful Hindu realm, at one time reaching southwards to Madura. The Hindu Rajahs of Telingana

fixed their capital for about eighty years at Warangul, and when that stronghold fell into the hands of a Bahmani prince, they continued for another century to hold the rest of their dominions on the Kistna and the Godáviri by right of their own strong arms. Kulbarga, in the valley of the Upper Kistna, became the chief seat of the Bahmani* princes already named, whose sway extended eastward from the sea to Berár, and from the Tápti southward to the Tumbadra. Several other provinces, such as Malwa and Gujarat, were either in full revolt or smarting under heavy punishment for past outbreaks, when Mohammad Toghlak breathed his last.

His nephew and successor, Firoz Shah, made a vigorous but vain attempt to reconquer Bengal. By the treaties afterwards concluded with that province and the Dakhan, he accepted the issue he could no longer avert.† A subsequent expedition into Sindh resulted in the nominal submission of the Jám of Tatta, a Rajput of the dynasty which had lately succeeded the old Suméra line. With these exceptions and that of a temporary rising in Gujarat, his reign for many years was peaceful and prosperous, and marked by not a few wholesome enactments. The savage punishments and tortures inflicted by former rulers were nearly all done away.‡ A great many small and

* Hasan Gangu, founder of the dynasty, is said by Ferishta to have been an Afghan husbandman, settled near Dehli on the estate of a Brahman whose favour he had won by handing over to him some treasure found on the estate. The Brahman seems to have had friends at court, to whose notice he recommended his tenant. Taking his patron's name, Hasan rose in the king's service, and when he too became a king, he added the name of *Bahmani* in honour of the friendly Brahman.

† The rulers of those provinces seem still to have paid tribute to Dehli, but were otherwise independent sovereigns.

‡ "Amputation of hands and feet, ears and noses; tearing out the eyes, pouring molten lead into the throat, crushing the bones of the hands and feet with mallets, burning the body with fire, driving iron nails into the hands, feet, and bosom, cutting the sinews, sawing men

vexatious imposts were removed. The victims of his uncle's cruelty he consoled with gifts or restored to their forfeit honours. Lands wrested from their former owners were given back to them or their heirs. The needy and the unemployed he supplied with work. Learning was encouraged, vice in its worse and more open forms sternly repressed, and luxury discountenanced by the king's own example.

A devout Mussulman, he gave alms freely to the poor, built many mosques, monasteries, and colleges, repaired the tombs of former sultans and nobles, and founded hospitals for high and low. With a grim sort of justice he refused to exempt the Brahmans, "the very keys of the chamber of idolatry," from the hateful *Jiziya*, or poll-tax, levied on all other Hindus. At the same time he remitted the tax on every Hindu who would make profession of Islām, a stroke of policy which gained large numbers of converts to the dominant creed.* Gifts and honours further awaited these new soldiers of Mahomet; but for those who held fast to the creed of their forefathers he had little mercy to spare. Their temples were destroyed, their holy books, vessels, and idols publicly burnt, their leaders not seldom put to death.† If the Christian princes of that age were equally ruthless towards the heretic and the heathen, we cannot wonder at the intolerance shown by a believer in a religion which proclaimed the duty of converting infidels at the sword's point.

His religious training, however, bore fairer fruit than this. The historians of his day dwell with pride on the

asunder; these," says Firoz Shah himself, "and many similar tortures were practised. . . . Through God's mercy these severities and terrors have been exchanged for tenderness, kindness, and mercy."

* See the "*Tārīkh-i-Fīroz Shāhi*" of Shams-i-Sirāj, a contemporary of Firoz, and that monarch's own brief memoir of his reign, the "*Futūhāt-i-Fīroz Shāhi*"—both in vol. iii. of Elliot's "*History of India*."

† In spite of his own milder edicts, Firoz Shah had at least one poor Brahman burnt at the stake, according to the historian Shams-i-Sirāj.

many public works begun or carried through during the reign of Firoz Toghlak. He is said, we know not how accurately, to have built two hundred forts and cities, forty mosques, thirty colleges, a hundred hospitals, a hundred and twenty *khánkas*, or public inns and caravanserais, twenty palaces, five tombs, a hundred tanks for bathing, a hundred and fifty bridges, and ten monumental pillars. To him also was Upper India first indebted for water-works like those with which Southern India had long been blest. Besides damming fifty rivers and excavating thirty reservoirs, he carried a canal from Karnál, on the Upper Jamna, through the thirsty plains round Hansi and Hisar, to the Kágar river, and thence onward through once fertile Bhatiana to the Satlaj.*

After a reign of thirty-six years, the good old king resigned his throne to his son Násir-ud-din. But a year had hardly elapsed before the new king was declared by his rebellious nobles unfit to reign; and Firoz, recalled from his hard-won privacy, was glad to seek it again after he had placed the sceptre in the hands of his grandson Ghyas-ud-din. A few weeks later he himself, at the great age of ninety, had found the deeper privacy of the grave.

For the next ten years the history of the Toghlak dynasty is one of continual disorder, unrest, and strife. In little more than a year one king had been murdered by a rival brother, who in his turn had given place to his exiled uncle, Násir-ud-din. For months more the strife between uncle and nephew raged with varying fortune, before the twice-crowned son of Firoz Shah drove his nephew for the last time out of Dehli. His death in February, 1394, transferred the sceptre to his eldest son Humáyun, who, dying a few weeks later, was succeeded by his brother Mahmúd.

* Of this great irrigation-work some two hundred miles have since been reopened by the English Government in India with excellent results.

This prince's nominal reign of nineteen years began in trouble and closed in deep gloom. He was a mere boy when Mozaffar Khan, the son of a converted Rajput, set up an independent kingdom in Gujarat. His example was quickly followed by the neighbouring governors of Malwa and Kandesh, while his own Wazir founded another kingdom at Jaunpur on the river Gúmí, not far from Banáras. Dehli itself was torn by incessant broils between the followers of rival claimants to the throne.

In the midst of these disorders a remote descendant of Chingiz Khan swooped down from Samarkhand across the Indus into the fair plains of Hindustan. At the Satlaj this new invader, known in history as Timúr or Tamerlane,* was met by his grandson, fresh from the conquest of Múltán. Their march towards Dehli by the way of Bhatnár, Samána, and Pá nipat, was marked by the usual atrocities of their age and race. All these, however, were surpassed, if we may believe Timúr's own words, by the massacre of a hundred thousand prisoners in cold blood on his near approach to Dehli.† Mahmúd went forth to fight his fearful adversary, but his troops were no match for superior numbers, prowess, and military skill. The beaten monarch fled to Gujarat, and his capital fell into the hands of a conqueror whose deeds were continually clashing with his pledged words. His promises of quarter to the people of Dehli issued in a tremendous carnival of blood and plunder, which lasted for five days, he himself feasting all the while in state outside the city, in seeming helplessness to avert or stay the horrors let loose by his "savage Turks" within. His own account throws little light upon the real origin of a disaster which he com-

* A corruption of Timúr Lang, that is, Timúr the Lame. Timúr himself appears to have been more or a Turk than a Mongol by birth.

† See his autobiography, the *Malfuzáti-Timúri*, in vol. iii. of Elliot's "History of India." These "infidels and idolaters" were slain on grounds of alleged military expediency—a convenient excuse for the promptings of religious zeal.

placently ascribes to the will of God; the tone of his narrative betrays small regret; and his avowed attempt to seize all the Hindu refugees in the city provoked the tumults which his turbulent soldiery were so prompt to quench in blood.

Be that as it may, however, nearly the whole of Dehli was given up to plunder, its streets were piled with dead, and when the new Emperor of India, as Timúr now chose to call himself, set forth on his homeward march, a host of captives and an enormous booty of the richest kind followed in his train.

Having already, by his own account, slain some "lakhs"* of infidels, he resumed his holy war at Mirat, whose capture was attended by a general massacre. After raiding up the Ganges to Hardwár, at the foot of the Himalayas, and skirting that mighty range as far as Jammu, north of Lahor, he at length recrossed the Indus to renew elsewhere the horrors which had dogged his steps from that river to the Ganges. India at any rate saw him no more.

The exiled King of Dehli returned to his capital, but found little left him except the name of king over a sorry remnant of the empire once ruled by Mohammad Toghlak. For twelve years more he lived as a titled pensioner of one strong-handed noble after another. With his death in 1412 the house of Toghlak ceased to reign. A fight for the succession ended fifteen months later in the triumph of Khizr Khan, a Saiyid or descendant of Mahomet, whom Timúr had appointed Governor of the Panjab. The founder of the Saiyid dynasty, he still claimed to govern as viceroy of the Emperor Timúr. After a prosperous reign of seven years, he was succeeded by his son Mo-bárak, whose uneventful reign of fourteen years was cut short by the assassin's knife.

In the days of his son Mohammad, Dehli was saved by Belól Lodi, the Afghan Governor of Múltán, from falling

* A *lakh* is a hundred thousand.

into the hands of the independent King of Malwa. Ere long, however, Belól himself was laying siege to Dehli, but in vain. Withdrawing to his own provinces, he had not long to wait before Mohammad's death and the helpless condition of his son Ala-ud-din, whose sway extended only a few miles round the capital, again brought him with fairer prospects to the front. Ala-ud-din retired on a pension to Budaon, and in 1450 the grandson of the ennobled Afghan merchant founded a dynasty which reigned at Dehli for about seventy-six years.

For half that period the throne was occupied by Belól himself, who is said to have been "for those days a virtuous and mild prince, executing justice to the utmost of his knowledge." He treated his courtiers like friends, cared little for display, lived abstemiously, and enjoyed the company of learned men.* With the mingled courage and caution of his race, he put down one assailant after another, by fair means or foul, until nearly all the country between the Satlaj and the Ganges down to Banáras had been re-annexed to the kingdom of Dehli. His greatest achievement was the reconquest of Jaunpur after a war which, with varying fortunes and few pauses, raged for about twenty-six years.

Like so many Eastern sovereigns, his son Sikandar had to fight for his throne, first with the champions of his infant nephew, afterwards with two of his brothers. Unlike most conquerors of his race, however, the new Sultan treated his fallen rivals with forgiving courtesy, sometimes even with brotherly affection. A just and vigorous ruler, he yet reserved his kindnesses for men of his own faith. Towards the Hindus he proved a merciless bigot, forbidding their rites of bathing and pilgrimage, destroying their temples, and building mosques in their stead. One poor Brahman, a probable disciple of the reformer Khabír,† was put to death

* See Dow's "History of Hindostan," vol. ii

† See Book I. chap. iv.

for having dared to maintain before Mohammadan doctors the equal claims of all creeds, if honestly practised, to acceptance in the sight of God.

After a reign of twenty-eight years, during which Bahár was added to his father's dominions, Sikandar was succeeded by his son Ibrahim, whose pride and tyranny drove his subjects into frequent revolts, quenched by him in seas of blood. At length one of his tribesmen, Daulat Khan Lodi, Governor of the Panjab, turned for aid to Kabul, where Bábar, a descendant of Timúr,* after a strange career of perils, defeats, and victories, had finally fixed his throne some twenty years before. He was only fifteen when he set forth, in 1497, from Firghána, on the upper course of the Jaxartes (the river Syr), to conquer Samarkhand. A few months later he left that city to fight for the recovery of his native kingdom, which had risen in revolt against him. Again, in 1499, he won his way by stratagem into the capital of Timúr, which had meanwhile fallen into the hands of a powerful Uzbek chief. Blockaded by the Uzbeks in Samarkhand, he left that city a second time to find Firghána also wrested from his grasp. For the next few years Bábar was the sport of untoward fortune, successful at one moment only to be caught in sterner straits the next. Baffled at every turn, a wanderer hunted for his life, a prisoner in the hands of his worst enemies, the brave young chieftain never lost heart. Regaining his freedom he found shelter for a time in Kundúz, at the court of Khusrú Shah. Starting thence with an army chiefly recruited from Khusrú's troops, he marched on Kabul in 1504, and soon possessed himself of the country which his uncle had lately ruled.

From that time fortune, if still uncertain, smiled upon him in the main. After extending his dominions around Kabul, he crossed the Oxus in 1511, and for the third

* He was sixth in descent from Timúr and a remote descendant of Chingiz Khan.

time conquered Samarkhand. Driven thence in 1514 by his old enemies the Uzbeks, he at length turned his thoughts towards India. His first invasion of the Panjab took place in 1519. Twice again in the next five years he crossed the Indus; and in 1524 he made his way into Sirhind, at the invitation of the aforesaid Daulat Khan. But that shiftless or ill-used Afghan failed to convince Bábar of his trustworthiness, and the latter again withdrew to Kabul, leaving Ala-ud-din, brother to the Sultan of Dehli,* in charge of the Panjab.

The new governor, after fleeing from the hostility, was ere long enjoying the aid of Daulat Khan in his march upon Dehli. His defeat by his brother Ibrahim before the capital at length roused Bábar, flushed with victory over the Uzbek invaders of Balkh, to one more decisive effort for the empire of Hindustan. In the spring of 1526 some ten thousand Moghal horsemen, with a smaller body of foot and a few field-guns,† emerged from the hills at Rupur, and, taking up fresh forces on their way, at length found themselves on the plain of Pániapat, face to face with Ibrahim's army, reckoned by the chroniclers, more or less wildly, at a hundred thousand strong. On a battle-field since famous in Indian history, Bábar entrenched his small army. His guns and infantry ranged in well-knit line behind their breastworks, while clouds of watchful horsemen covered their flanks, Bábar, with his son Humáyun, calmly awaited an attack from four times their own numbers. Impatient of delay, the hosts of Ibrahim thundered down upon the foe. Their strength, however, was spent in vain upon that bristling barrier. Baffled and disordered, they were suddenly beset on their flanks and rear by Bábar's active horsemen, whose arrows seldom

* Some authorities call him uncle.

† Field-artillery are known to have been employed in India as far back as 1365 A.D., when the spoils taken by the Bahmani king of the Dakhan from the Hindu hosts of Bijayanagar at the battle of Raichúr included 300 gun-carriages.

missed their mark. Repeated charges, one of them led by Ibrahim himself, resulted only in heavier slaughter, in more confused retreat. Meanwhile Babar, issuing from his entrenchments, led his unbroken troops steadily for-



PATHANS.

ward into the heart of the hostile ranks. Ibrahim and five thousand of his best soldiers fell in one spot. Utterly disheartened by their monarch's fall, the Pathan army, says the historian, "recoiled like surges from a rocky shore, and the torrent of flight rolled towards the banks of the

Jamna,"* whither the Moghals kept up the pursuit, until Bábar, tired of useless bloodshed, gave the word to halt. Of the routed enemy he himself reckoned† that sixteen thousand died upon the field, and some thousands more must have fallen in their subsequent flight. On that fatal evening of April, 1526, the house of Lodi ceased to reign over the kingdom it had virtually recalled into being.

* Dow's "Hindustan," vol. ii.

† See Bábar's own Memoirs, translated by Mr. Erskine.

CHAPTER IV.

THE CONTEMPORARY INDIAN DYNASTIES.

AT the time when Bábar steps upon the stage of Indian history, it is well to pause for a moment and glance round over the great peninsula which his descendants were to bring for a season under their sway.

To begin with the cool, well-watered valley of Kashmir, nestled in the heart of the north-western Himálayas. That country had been ruled by a long succession of Hindu, Buddhist, and even Tartar princes, when, in the early part of the fourteenth century, it fell into the hands of Shah Mir, the Mohammadan vizier of its late rajah, the last of an ancient Hindu line. The new king, under the name of Shams-ud-din, governed mildly and well for twenty-three years; but one of his successors, about the close of the same century, proved a cruel persecutor of the prevalent Hindu faith. The long reign of Sikandar's nephew, Shádi Khan, brought better times to his Hindu subjects. From the day of his death to the battle of Pá nipat was a period mainly of civil commotion and frequent change of rulers, one of whom, Mohammad, great-grandson of the wise and good Shadi Khan, was four times deposed during a nominal reign of about fifty years. On the last of these occasions, in 1525, he had been set aside in favour of his grandson by one of Bábar's generals; but the timely departure of the Moghal troops opened the prison doors of the old king, whose few remaining years were spent in comparative peace upon his father's throne.

After its conquest by Mohammad Ghorí, in 1186, from

the Turks of Ghazni, the Panjab, or Land of Five Rivers, commonly shared the fortunes of the Dehli kingdom. Harassed in the thirteenth century by the Moghals, it was ruled in the first years of the fifteenth century by Khizr Khan, in the name of his master Timúr. Hardly had the founder of the Saiyid dynasty won Dehli, when he began to lose his hold upon the Panjab, which presently passed into the hands of Belól Lodi, the destined supplanter of the Saiyid line. From the middle of the fifteenth century to the time of Bábar's invasion, the Land of the Five Rivers formed part of the dominions ruled by the house of Lodi.

Múltán, like its northern neighbour, passed from one Mussulman conqueror to another, from the Ghaznevid princes to the house of Ghor, from thence to the Slave Kings of Dehli and their successors, down to the end of the fourteenth century. After Timúr's invasion, the country seems to have drifted away from its old allegiance, until in 1445 it fell into the guiding hands of the Afghan, Kutab-ud-din Langa, whose family during the next eighty years governed it without a master.

From the middle of the eighth century, when the Suméra Rajputs drove out the Arab invader, Sindh throve under a native Hindu dynasty for nearly five hundred years. Early in the thirteenth century the Suméra princes were ousted by a Mussulman named Násir-ud-din. After his death Sindh became the prize of another Rajput dynasty, that of the Jains, who paid some kind of tribute to the Sultan of Dehli, and towards the end of the fourteenth century embraced the creed of their Lord Paramount. A succession of Jain princes with Mohammadan names governed the country until, in 1520, the dynasty was displaced by that of the Arghúns from Khorásán, who presently became masters of Múltán also.

The old Hindu province of Gujarát or Sauráshtra, ruled by Ballabi princes for two centuries, passed in 524 under the sway of a Chaura dynasty, which flourished for about

four hundred years, giving place in its turn to the Salonka or Chalukya line of Rajput princes, led off by Mulráj, the warlike son-in-law of the last Ballabi king. Under these princes, who came from the Dakhan, the land of Krishna prospered fairly on the whole for two centuries, suffering less than its neighbours from Mohammadan inroads, and bearing on its surface many noble monuments of its rulers' piety, splendour, and care for the common good. It still abounds in temples built by Jain architects, and the great reservoir of Kuran Ságar—the Sea of Kuran—constructed in the eleventh century, was effaced by a flood so late as 1814.*

In 1228, this dynasty was replaced by a line of Waghila chiefs, who ruled the country during the rest of that century, until it passed under the sway of Ala-ud-din Khilji, then Sultan of Dehli. A hundred years later, about 1391, a new kingdom was founded in Gujarat by the son of a Rajput convert to Islam. Sent thither from Dehli to displace the mild-hearted governor Farat Khan, whose kindness to the Hindus had roused the rancour of his own countrymen, Mozaffar Khan set up as king of the province entrusted to him as viceroy, and marked his reign by fierce persecutions of the people who still clung to his ancestral faith. His grandson, Ahmad Shah, the builder of Ahmad-abád, was equally renowned for his wars, his splendid buildings, and his fierce zeal against idolaters. The peninsula of Katiawár, hitherto ruled in practice by its own Hindu chiefs, was now brought more closely under the Mussulman yoke. One of his successors, Mahmúd Shah, turned his arms with success against almost every neighbour, and raised his kingdom to its highest pitch of greatness by land and sea. An embassy from Dehli bore witness to his power ; and his fleets, in concert with those

* The Jain temples of Mount Abú were built by Bhím Déo about 1030, and his successor Kuran built those at Girnar, as well as the reservoir that bore his name.

of the Mamlúk Sultan of Egypt, inflicted a signal check upon the Portuguese invaders of Western India. In the reign of Mahmúd's descendant, Bahádur Shah, the kings of Kandésh, Bérúr, and Ahmadnagar paid formal homage to the king of Gujarát, while Málwa, after repeated struggles, became a part of his dominions.

The Mussulman kingdom of Malwa had thus lasted about a hundred and thirty years. That province, lying between Gujarat and Bundalkhand, with the Narbadha for its southern boundary, had been governed by a long succession of Hindu princes, including the far-famed Vikramaditya, and, some centuries later, the Rajah Bhoj, before it passed under the Mohammadan yoke in the beginning of the fourteenth century. For nearly a hundred years its rulers were viceroys of the kings of Delhi. At last, in 1401, Diláwar Khan of Ghor, a Pathan noble whom Firoz Toghlak had made Governor of Malwa, threw off the last shred of allegiance to Dehli and founded a kingdom whose sovereigns were always fighting with this neighbour or with that. One of them, Mahmúd Khilji, besieged Dehli itself in the days of Saiyid Mohammad, but was driven off, as we saw, by the timely prowess of Belól Lodi.* Another Mahmúd fled to Gujarat from the bondage prepared for him by his aggressive Hindu minister, Médni Rai. Restored to his throne by the help of King Mozaffar, he was taken prisoner by the troops of Rajah Sanga of Chitór, in a fruitless effort to drive Médni Rai out of Chandéri. The chivalrous Rajput forthwith set him free, a kindness which Mahmúd afterwards requited by wantonly attacking his son and successor, Rattan Singh. A fitting Nemesis however dogged his steps, in the shape of Bahádur Shah of Gujarat, who listened the more readily to the Hindu's prayer for help, in that he himself had cause to complain of Mahmúd's treachery to the son of his old ally. Mándu, the hill-crowning capital of Malwa, was

* Page 74.

stormed by the soldiers of Gujarat, Mahmúd himself taken prisoner, and his kingdom annexed to that of Bahádur Shah.

South of Malwa and south-east of Gujarat, lay the little Mohammadan kingdom of Kandésh, in those days a rich, smiling valley, watered by the Tapti and a host of smaller streams, which successive princes, Hindu or Mohammadan, applied to the enrichment of the surrounding fields. Ruled for long centuries from Malwa or Deogarh, it fell under the sway of its first Mohammadan governor in the reign of Firoz Toghlak. In 1399, Malik Rajah was succeeded by his son, Násir Khan, who first claimed the rank and honours of an independent king. His reign was marked by the capture of the strong hill-fortress of Asírgarh, one of the last remaining fastnesses of a Hindu dynasty, sprung from an old race of Shepherd Kings. The infernal treachery which issued in the seizure of a stronghold ruled by a friendly Hindu prince, and in the murder of the prince himself with all his family, was hailed by pious Moslems as a glorious triumph over the infidel. This noble deed was commemorated by the founding of Burhánpúr, a city which one of Násir's successors, Adil Khan, enriched with buildings and waterworks of surpassing beauty or magnificent design.* Under its Mohammadan kings Kandésh continued on the whole to prosper, until in the last days of the sixteenth century it passed under the wide sway of Akbar himself.

After his revolt from Mohammad Toghlak in 1338, Fakr-ud-din and his successors reigned for more than two centuries over Bengal. Of the events of that period not much is to be learned from the native chroniclers—a rare defect in the annals of any Mohammadan province. Frequent changes of dynasty happened of course in the usual violent way. One of the successful usurpers was Rajah

* Burhánpúr is still noted for the manufacture of rich and beautiful brocades, muslins, and other tissues.

Kans, a Hindu Zamindár, whose son became a Mohamadan, under the title of Jalál-ud-din. Several of the kings who reigned in the fifteenth century were Abyssinian slaves or chiefs. At the time of Bábar's advent, their rule had been replaced and their power utterly broken by the house of Ala-ud-din, whose sceptre was ere long to pass into the hands of Humáyun's conqueror, the redoubtable Afghan Shír Shah.

Divided by the Great Desert from Sindh and Múltán, and spreading eastward nearly to the Jamna, rolls the broad sea of sandy rock-crested plain once called Rajás-than, "the land of kings," but now generally known as Rájputána, "the country of the Rajputs." Here reigned from century to century, hither from time to time fled with thousands of their followers and clansmen from neighbouring countries the high-souled, pure-blooded descendants of ancient Aryan lords. Century after century, from the days of the Arab Kásim to those of the Moghal Bábar, these proud warrior chiefs defied the attacks or disowned in all but name the yoke of successive invaders. Some parts of the country were never conquered at all by the Pathan kings of Dchli. Others fluctuated between uneasy acquiescence and oft-recurring revolt. Foremost in bold, nor often vain resistance, were the Rajput princes of Mewár, whose capital, Chitór, crowned the rugged hills that guarded their eastern frontier. At the end of the twelfth century, the Rahtór clan of Rajputs left their early seats in Kanauj to wander westward across the Aravalli hills, and found a new kingdom in Marwár.*

Under the feudal system which bound chiefs and followers together by strong ties of blood and fellowship, these Rajput races succeeded for the most part in maintaining a steady front against all assailants. A nation of born soldiers, who held their lands by a kind of joint military tenure, they mustered readily at the call of their

* See page 51.

hereditary chiefs, inflaming their courage with songs and tales commemorative of past glories, and betraying alike in victory and defeat the ancestral virtues of a proud,



chivalrous, highbred, patriotic race;* virtues not wholly lost in their enfeebled, opium-eating children of the present day.

* "With them," says Elphinstone (p. 76), "the founder of a state, after reserving a demesne for himself, divided the rest of the country among his relations, according to the Hindu laws of partition. The chief to whom each share was assigned owed military service and general obedience to the prince, but exercised unlimited authority within his own lands. He in his turn divided his lands on similar terms among his relations, and a chain of vassal-chiefs was thus established, to whom the civil government as well as the military force of the country was committed."

One of the foremost Rajput princes of the days before Bābar, was the Rāna Sanga of Chitōr, who in the early years of the sixteenth century maintained a successful warfare against Gujarat, and defeated in battle Mahmūd, the Mohammadan king of Malwa. How courteously he treated his royal prisoner, and how meanly the courtesy was afterwards requited, we have already seen.*

After the death of Hasan Gangū, founder of the Bahmani kingdom in the Dakhan, his successors waged continual wars with the Hindu Rajahs of Telingāna on the east, and of Bijayanagar on the south of their dominions. In 1421, Ahmad Shah dispossessed the former of their chief city Warangūl, and made a savage inroad into Bijayanagar, part of which was added to his own broad realms. His son Ala-ud-din partially subdued the Kankan, lying between his western frontier and the sea, and removed his capital from Kulbarga to the heights where Bidar still towers in ruined majesty above the plain. In the reign of his grandson, Nizām Shah, the Dakhan, overrun by the King of Malwa, was saved from imminent ruin by the timely interference of the King of Gujarat. In 1477, Nizām's son Mohammad exacted tribute from the Rajah of Orissa, and carried his arms down the eastern coast as far as Kānchi, the modern Conjeveram. On the western coast he completed the subjection of the Kankan, part of which had for about forty years defied the arms of successive Bahmani kings.

The real conqueror of the Kankan, Mahmūd Gāwan, the king's chief minister, one of the noblest men of that or any age, now fell a blameless victim to the plots of rivals who envied him his well-earned honours and commanding influence with the king. Too late Mohammad learned the innocence of the minister he had doomed to a hasty death. From that time the glory of the Bahmani kingdom began to fade away. His own death in the following year paved

the way for the dismemberment of the Dakhan under his child-heir. One large slice of his kingdom, from the sea to the Bima and Kistna rivers, passed under the rule of Yusuf Adil Shah, who fixed his capital at Bijapúr. The bought slave and faithful follower of Mahmúd Gáwan, he governed his new kingdom ably for twenty-one years, beating off assailants from every quarter, and attaching his Marátha subjects to his rule by raising many of them to high civil and military posts. One of his successors, Ibrahim, adopted the Marátha language, instead of Persian, for the public accounts. The dynasty, which survived the reign of Bábar and lasted into that of Aurangzib, was involved in frequent wars, among others with the Portuguese, who steadily encroached upon its seaward possessions.

To the north of Bijapúr grew up the rival state of Ahmadnagar, founded by Nizám Shah, who gave his original name of Ahmad to the city he built for his capital. He also appears to have favoured his Marátha subjects; and his successor, Burhán Shah, for the first time recorded in Mohammadan history, raised a Brahman to the post of Peshwa, or prime minister. In spite of the Brahman's abilities, his master was compelled in 1530 to do homage to the King of Gujarat; but the dynasty struggled on with varying fortune to its final overthrow by the troops of the Emperor Shah Jahán.

Out of the eastern provinces of the Bahmani kingdom, Imád Shah, a converted Hindu, who had risen high in the service of Mahmúd Gáwan, carved for himself the kingdom of Bérúr, which extended from the Injúdri hills to the Godávári, with the highland city of Gáwilgarh for its capital. After a somewhat stormy existence of nearly ninety years, Bérúr was finally absorbed by its old rival Ahmadnagar.

A longer life, even to the days of Aurangzib, awaited the kingdom of Golkonda, founded in 1512 by Kutab Shah, a Turk whom Mahmúd Gáwan had appointed

governor of the country between the Godāvāri and the Kistna. During a reign of thirty-one years he made fresh conquests from the Rajahs of Telingāna and Bijayanagar. His successors enlarged their dominions at the expense of their Hindu neighbours in Orissa and the Carnatic, and one of them in 1589 founded the city of Haidarābad, which became in after years the splendid capital of the Nizam's dominions.* Meanwhile, the diminished sway of the old Bahmani kings was still represented by the dynasty of Barīd Shah, which ruled at Bidar down to the middle of the seventeenth century.

One of the countries with which these Mussulman princes waged frequent war was Orissa, the Holy Land of successive Hindu creeds, and the seat for a century and a half of a powerful Yāvan dynasty, founded apparently by Greek invaders from the regions watered by the Ganges. In this land of forest-covered hills and alluvial plains, stretching southwards from Midnapūr to Ganjām, with the broad Māhānadi winding through it to the Bay of Bengal, a race of Sanskrit-speaking Aryans seems to have settled some centuries before the reign of King Asōka, pushing the aboriginal dwellers westward into the hills. Thither, from about the fifth century B.C., a succession of Yāvan immigrants from the north brought with them the religion of Buddha, and the manners of a kindred but separate Aryan race, whom modern scholarship would identify with the Ionian Greeks. The worship of the sun, at any rate, came in time to be supplanted by that of Buddha, and the prevalence of the new faith for centuries afterwards is clearly attested by the rock-hewn caves, shrines, sculptures, and inscriptions, which cover the country with curious suggestions of Greek art applied to Buddhist purposes.†

* It was called at first Bhāgnagar, the name it still bears among the Hindus. His son Haidar changed the name to Haidarābād.

† See Hunter's "Orissa," vol. i. Mr. Hunter's attempt to prove the identity of the Yāvanas in Orissa with the Ionians of Greek history and the Greek settlers in Kabul and Lahor is well worth considering.

Certain it is, however, that a Yávan dynasty, entering Orissa from the sea, about 323 A.D., was expelled a hundred and fifty years later by a Hindu prince of the Késari line, whose advent paved the way for the gradual displacement of Buddhist by Brahmanic forms of worship. New temples everywhere arose in honour of Siva, whose worship in its turn succumbed in many places to the milder rites of the more genial Vishnu, best known to the myriads who yearly flock from all India to the priestly paradise of Púri under his later name of Jagannath, the Lord of Heaven.

The Késari dynasty, which ruled Orissa for about six hundred and fifty years, was succeeded in its turn by the house of Ganga Vansa, in whose days the worship of Vishnu won its way into the head-quarters of the Sivaite priesthood at Jajpúr on the Baitarani. In the thirteenth century Hindu architecture reached its zenith, and the Orissa kingdom extended almost to the Godávari. In the middle of that century the people of Orissa hurled back a Pathan invasion from Bengal, and ten years later another inroad was followed by a like defeat. In the middle of the fifteenth century the Rajah of Orissa joined his Hindu neighbours in a league against the Mussulman invaders of Southern India, but some thirty years later he himself was paying tribute to a Mohammadan king. In the beginning of the sixteenth century the armies of Orissa were aiding a Mussulman ally against the great Hindu monarch of the South, Krishna Ráya: but in vain. In 1563, the Orissa prince, no longer of the Ganga Vansa line, beat back a formidable inroad from Bengal; but this last flickering effort of native patriotism delayed for a few years only his country's doom. In 1567 the Afghan King of Bengal marched through Orissa at the head of an army which nothing could withstand, and for some unquiet years the country remained in the hands of its new masters. At last, when Bengal itself had acknowledged the superior

might of Akbar, Orissa also was finally conquered by his great Hindu general, Todor Mall.

Krishna Raya, the Arthur of Southern India, mounted the throne of Bijayanagar in the first years of the sixteenth century. Ever since 1347, if not much earlier, the Hindu kingdom of Bijayanagar had played a leading part in the history of Southern India. From the usual want, however, of native annalists, our knowledge of the country comes to us in glimpses offered by the historians of the neighbouring Mohammadan states. The kings of the country, whose seaward frontier extended from Goa to Calicut, waged frequent wars with the Bahmani princes, and one of them, in 1493, suffered a heavy defeat from the ruler of Bijapur. The glory and greatness of the kingdom culminated with Krishna Ráya, whose sway extended over nearly all Southern India south of the Kistna, and whose arms were often successful against his Mohammadan neighbours.

So great at last grew the power of Bijayanagar, that the kings of the four Mohammadan states in the Dakhan leagued together in 1565 against Rámraj, successor to Krishna Ráya. Their combined forces crossed the Kistna, and encountered the hosts of Rámraj and his two brothers near Tálíkót. The Hindu horse charged boldly down upon the foe, with a fury which nothing could check until they came within reach of the guns brought forward by the King of Ahmadnagar. Against these Rámraj hurled the pick of his infantry, who fell in heaps under their deadly hail. A timely charge of Mussulman cavalry turned the disorder into hopeless rout. The brave old king himself was taken prisoner and mercilessly beheaded; one of his brothers died fighting; the routed troops were followed up with fearful slaughter; and untold treasures fell into the victors' hands. Bijayanagar was presently sacked and well-nigh destroyed; and the last great Hindu kingdom in Southern India thenceforth ceased to be.

CHAPTER V.

THE PORTUGUESE IN INDIA.

ABOUT thirty years before Bábar's victory at Pánipat, one of the smaller Christian states in Europe began to take an ambitious part in the affairs of India. As early as 1415, the success of the Venetians and Genoese in securing a monopoly of the carrying trade between Europe and India had fired Prince Henry of Portugal with the hope of diverting some part of a trade so enviable to his own shores. It was not, however, till the reign of John II. that Bartholomew Diaz fulfilled Prince Henry's previsions by rounding, in 1486, the Cape of Storms, which was afterwards to bear the more cheering title of the Cape of Good Hope. Eleven years later, King John's successor, Emmanuel, despatched a fleet which, under the famous Vasco da Gama, rounded the Cape, discovered Natal, and in May of the following year cast anchor near the city of Calicut on the Malabar coast. Courteously entertained by the Zamorin, the Hindu ruler of the province, Da Gama failed wholly to baffle the intrigues of the Moorish traders from Egypt and Arabia, who saw in these western strangers their likely rivals and possible supplanters. He sailed homewards in August, his three ships followed for some way in vain by a fleet of forty vessels sent out to capture them.

A fleet of thirteen ships and 1,200 men under Pedro Cabral appeared before Calicut in the autumn of 1500, less one ship lost with all its crew on the voyage thither. The strangers were allowed to establish a factory, which

the wrathful Mohammadans carried by storm. This outrage the Portuguese commander requited by setting ten Moorish ships on fire after their cargoes had been emptied into his own vessels, and cannonading the city itself. At Cochin, where he was kindly received, Cabral resumed the lading of his fleet, and took in some further cargo at Kananór.

Soon after his departure homewards, the Zamorin of Calicut sent a powerful fleet to intercept the few ships which, under Juan de Nueva, were looking after Portuguese interests at Cochin and Kananór. Careless of the odds against him, the bold Portuguese made ready for action, and used his guns to such purpose that the assailants speedily sheered off.

In 1502 a much larger fleet than Cabral's, carrying several hundred soldiers on board, sailed out of the Tagus under Vasco da Gama, who was empowered to take full revenge for the previous insults offered to the Portuguese flag.

Improving upon orders not perhaps too mild, the fiery Christian harried the Mussulmans wherever he met them, capturing a shipload of Mecca-bound pilgrims, and dooming hundreds of helpless prisoners to a cruel death in the flames of their own vessels. The Zamorin of Calicut being backward in making amends for the treatment of Cabral, the ruthless admiral hanged some fifty natives taken out of fishing-boats in the harbour, destroyed great part of the town by bombardment, and set sail thence for Cochin, where his countrymen carried on a fair trade under the protection of its friendly Rajah.

In 1503 Da Gama returned to Europe. Meanwhile another fleet from Portugal, under Alfonso Albuquerque and his two brothers, arrived at Cochin in time to frustrate the Zamorin's designs against his vassal, the Rajah of that place, who had dared to encourage the pushing strangers from the west. Once more defeated and compelled to sue

for peace, the Zamorin availed himself of Albuquerque's departure to renew his attack upon Cochin, with a larger fleet than ever, and an army reinforced by the troops of his lord paramount, the Rajah of Bijayanagar. In a series of hard-fought battles against fearful odds, the brave Pacheco beat back the invader with heavy loss; and a fresh fleet from Portugal under Soarez followed up his comrade's successes by the bombardment of Calicut, and the capture of all the Zamorin's vessels in fair fight.

Four years later, in 1507, a grand attack upon the rising Portuguese power in the Indian seas was concerted between the Venetians, the Sultan of Egypt, the Zamorin, and the Mussulman king of Gujarát. Don Francis Almeida, the first Portuguese Viceroy in India, had to meet this new danger as he best could. The allied fleets bore down upon that of Portugal, commanded by Lorenzo, the viceroy's son. A sharp engagement near Chaul, on the Kankan coast, issued in the defeat of the Portuguese and the sinking of their flagship with nearly all on board, including Lorenzo himself. For this disaster Almeida soon took his revenge. The port of Dúbal destroyed by the guns of his fleet, he sailed northwards after the retiring foe, coming up with them off Diu, at the outer entrance to the Gulf of Cambay. The allied admirals at once accepted the challenge, and after a hard fight, in which all the best of the Mohammadan ships were burnt or captured, the remainder spread all sail in timely escape.

Almeida was ere long displaced as viceroy by Albuquerque, who raised the Portuguese power in the Indian seas to its greatest height, and won for it a noble and commanding seat by his final capture of Goa from the King of Bijápúr. His conquests ranged from Ormuz in the Persian Gulf to Malacca in the Malay Peninsula. Both towns were strongly fortified, and the whole sea-board of Western India became dotted with Portuguese factories. Baffled

in his attempts on Aden and Calicut, he yet forced the Zamorin to sue for peace, crushed the Mohammadan trade in the Indian seas, and diverted the bulk of India's export trade with the West from the Adriatic to the Tagus. In spite, however, of these splendid achievements, Albuquerque fell into disgrace at Lisbon, and the news of his supersession by his foe Soarez broke his heart in the last days of 1515. With his dying breath the great viceroy, whose successes had been marred by no acts of wanton cruelty, bequeathed his son and a small estate to his sovereign's care, and appealed to his Indian career as the eloquent witness to his real deserts.*

Six years after his death, Diego Lopez de Siquera, successor to Soarez, sailed against Diu with forty ships and three or four thousand men. But the bold front shown by the Gujaráti admiral cooled his courage, and not without heavy loss did his vessels make good their retreat to Chaul. In the following year Goa itself was besieged to no purpose by the King of Bijápúr. In 1527 the fleets of Gujarát were nearly destroyed in an unsuccessful attack on the Portuguese station of Chaul. Four years later Antonio di Silveira, with 400 ships and 22,000 men, made one more effort to capture Diu; but the genius and the guns of Rumi Khan, chief engineer to the King of Gujarát, drove him out of the bay.

In spite of their fresh repulse, the Portuguese ere long gained a firm foothold on the long-coveted port, by means of a well-timed alliance with Bahádur Shah, the enterprising ruler of Gujarát. That monarch's fears, however,

* Goa, the once splendid capital of the Portuguese in India, but now fallen into slow decay, lies in an island about twenty-four miles round. Its harbour, one of the noblest in India, is formed by an arm of the sea into which flows a small river. The old city still contains a number of fine churches, monasteries, and other buildings, the faded relics of former greatness. The Goa territory is about forty miles long by twenty broad, with a population of about 300,000, most of whom are Roman Catholics under a Portuguese archbishop.

were soon roused by the encroaching policy of his new friends, and his death in a chance affray between his attendants and the Portuguese gave rise to charges, not quite perhaps unfounded, of preconcerted treachery on both sides.*

Meanwhile a great fleet from Egypt, equipped by orders from Constantinople, and commanded by a Turkish admiral, bore down in September, 1537, for the Gulf of Cambay, with intent to drive the Portuguese out of Gujarát. But the brave Silveira, with only 600 men, prepared to defend to the last the new factory, which he had already turned into a little fortress. After eight months of imminent peril, of sufferings more and more enhanced by famine and disease,† the wasted garrison were gladdened by the approach of a fleet which the Viceroy of Goa had brought in the nick of time to their help. Sallying forth from their battered works, they drove before them the disheartened besiegers, and Diu was saved.

The history of the Portuguese during that century may as well be finished here. Two more futile attacks on Diu by Mahmúd Shah of Gujarát, in 1545 and 1548, were followed by about twenty years of chequered warfare and much intrigue on land, and of supreme dominion by sea. No ship without a Portuguese passport could sail with perfect safety over Indian waters. In many articles of trade the Portuguese monopoly was complete; and of what trade was still open to ships of other countries, the Portuguese captains secured the lion's share by enforcing the right to load their own vessels first. If the frequent cruelty and arrogance of Portuguese commanders earned them many foes, their alliance was often courted by neighbours who had learned to dread their prowess in the field, or to take due measure of the strength that lay unseen behind the

* See Elphinstone's "India," p. 678 (1th Edition).

† The ladies of the garrison bore no trifling part in the defence, and their heroic example went far to save the place.

few ships and soldiers that guarded their factories. Whether from policy or national instinct, the Portuguese never pushed their way far from the sea-coast, confining themselves even at Goa to a narrow strip of land between the sea and the Western Ghats. So long as their fleets ruled the ocean, nothing more was needed for the maintenance of their power. But the time was soon to come when stronger rivals pushed them from their watery throne, and their hold on India dwindled to a ruinous city, two small decaying seaports, Diu and Daman, and about 1,500 square miles of ground.

In 1570, however, the glory of Goa and the religious bigotry of its priesthood were at their height, when a great league was formed against it by the princes of Bijapur, Ahmadnagar, and Calicut. For ten months an immense army of horse and foot with 350 guns besieged in vain a city held out by its governor, Don Louis, with about 700 soldiers, aided by 1,300 monks and armed slaves. Wearied at last of a siege in which he lost 12,000 men alone, besides thousands of horses and cattle, and hundreds of elephants, the King of Bijapur withdrew his troops from what seemed a hopeless enterprise. A like repulse was all that Nizam Shah of Ahmadnagar obtained from his twice-attempted attack upon Chaul; and Chale near Calicut was defended with equal success against the Zamorin. For the rest of the sixteenth century the Portuguese power in India remained unshaken.

But early in the next century new rivals appeared upon the scene. In 1604 the Dutch, who had but lately won their independence of Spain, wrested Amboyna from the Portuguese, and even made an attempt upon Malacca. In 1612 a small English fleet defeated with heavy loss the Portuguese squadron which strove to bar its way into the harbour of Surat. Another English fleet drove the Portuguese, in 1622, from their flourishing settlement in the isle of Ormuz. Between the advances of two such rivals

the Portuguese power in the Indian seas gradually declined, and the trade monopoly which the countrymen of Albuquerque had held for a century passed into other and stronger hands.

BOOK III.

THE MOGHAL DYNASTY OF BABAR.

CHAPTER I.

BÁBAR AND HUMÁYUN—1526—1556.

WITH the fall of Ibrahim, and the rout of his army at Pá nipat, dates the beginning of a new empire in Hindústán. The two great cities of Dehli and Agra speedily acknowledged their new master. But the task before Bábar was still formidable. The new Emperor of India had yet to make his way through the broad regions lying to the south, east, and south-west of his new capital. His soldiers and his nobles were equally unwilling to go further. Cheered at length by his brave words, or shamed by his earnest reproaches, most of them resolved to follow his standard, and in the course of a few months the old Mussulman provinces in the valley of the Ganges had nearly all submitted to his rule.

Westward of the Jamna, however, a mighty force was gathering against him, under the powerful Rana Sanga, the Rájput sovereign of Mewár. Followed by all the chivalry of Marwár and Jaipúr, and strengthened by the troops of Mahmúd, a prince of the dispossessed house of Lodi, the great Rajah marched towards Dehli. At Sikri,*

* Since called Fathipúr Sikrí.

not far from Agra, he assailed and defeated the van of the Moghal army. Had he only dared to order a general advance, the future of India might have been very different, for a panic had seized upon the bravest of Bábar's troops. But the right moment was lost. Bábar's stirring remonstrances touched the hearts of his officers. Dropping a few brave words here and there as he galloped along the line he had formed in order of battle, the light-hearted Moghal led his troops against the foe. The Rájputs fought with their usual courage, but nothing could withstand the charge of Bábar's veterans. Rána Sanga's bloody defeat left Rájputána at the victor's mercy, and cleared the way for fresh victories over Mahmúd Lodi, who at length, with the shattered remnants of his army, retired beyond the Són.

Next year Bábar attacked and stormed Chandéri, the capital of a small Rájput kingdom carved by Medni Rai out of the lands he had wrested from the kings of Málwa. Once more Rájput heroism, hopeless of victory, preferred speedy death to the tender mercies of Mohanmadan rule. As the Moghal troops were storming the city, the garrison slew all their women, and then rushed upon the foe to die. Chandéri captured, the fiery Moghal darted across the Ganges into Audh, drove the Afghans before him in all directions, and ere long added Bahár also to his sway. The Sultan of Bengal was glad to sue for peace on terms which included the surrender of North Bahár.

By this time Bábar's health was fast breaking under the heavy strain of so many and prolonged exertions. His end was probably hastened by anxiety for his beloved son, Humáyun, who now lay dangerously ill at Agra. With pardonable superstition, the war-worn father, walking thrice round his son's bed, solemnly besought Heaven to spare Humáyun, and take himself instead. "I have borne it away! I have borne it away!" were the joyful words that presently escaped him. From that moment, say the his-

torians, the son began to recover, and the father to decline. Be that as it may, it was Bábar's own conviction that he would shortly die ; and it is certain that he met his end as cheerfully as he had battled through the darkest trials of his stormy life. After a few last words of wise and loving counsel to his sons and ministers, he died at Agra, in December, 1530, at the age of forty-nine.

The best picture of the great Moghal is that which he himself has drawn for us in his own delightful memoirs, replete with every charm of a frank, genial, yet manly nature, and a well-stored, inquiring mind. At once a poet, scholar, and musician, he had all the qualities which those words imply, mixed up with the tougher tissues that go to the making of the adventurous soldier and the hard-headed statesman. In a straightforward, lively, picturesque style, perfectly natural, yet never coarse nor inflated, he tells or suggests to us everything he did, saw, or suffered ; how he wept for his boyish playfellow ; how fond an interest he took in his mother and near kindred ; how keen were his sympathies alike with the pleasures and the misfortunes of his friends ; how lightly he bore his own reverses, riding a race with the only two friends who followed him, a houseless, half-starved wanderer, on his dreary journey from Samarkhand. With equal ease and lightness of touch, he describes the hardships he underwent, the bursts of revelry in which he and his companions not seldom indulged ; the scenery, climate, people, and products of the countries he passed through ; the sayings and doings of his friends ; his own successes, failures, and weaknesses ; the sense of loneliness that came over him as he ate a musk-melon brought from Kabul. Violent sometimes, and cruel when the fit was on him, he endeared himself to his friends and followers by many kindly actions, and treated his enemies on the whole with wonderful forbearance. His high courage never failed him, and his buoyant spirit nothing seemed to pull down. Fond of wine, and given to hard drinking, he

eschewed both in his latter years. No small part of his leisure hours was bestowed on public business, and his active habits were equally conspicuous in the camp, the council-room, and the hunting-field. In his last journey of 160 miles from Kalpí to Agra, in spite of failing health, he rode the distance in two days, and swam twice across the Ganges. Not content with the regular business of the state, his mind was always full of schemes for the public welfare, from the building of reservoirs and aqueducts to the introduction of new trade-products from abroad. No wonder that the memory of a king so lovable and so richly endowed should be cherished by the Mohammadaus of India beyond that of all other princes, save Akbar, of the same great line.

Humáyun, heir to his father's Indian throne, seems to have inherited something of his father's chequered fortunes. Much against his own will, he weakened his empire by handing Kabul and the Panjáb over to his brother, Kámran. To another of his brethren he assigned the province of Sambal or Rohilkhand, while a third was appointed Governor of Mewát, in Rájputána. The first two years of his reign were employed in quelling revolts in Bundalkhand, Jaunpúr, and Bahar. Then began a quarrel with Bahádur Shah of Gujarát, who had given shelter to Humáyun's brother-in-law, and furnished the uncle of the last Pathan king of Dehli with the means of waging war against the new dynasty. Defeated at Mandisór, and driven from place to place, the once powerful king of Gujarát found shelter at Diu, in the farthest corner of his realm.

Humayun's success was crowned by his daring capture of Chámpanér, seated on a lofty rock, up whose steep side he and 300 of his chosen followers clomb with the help of steel spikes. Leaving his brother, Mirza Askari, in charge of his new conquests, Humáyun marched back to Agra, in order to deal with a new rebellion got up by Shír Khan,

an Afghan noble, who had already made himself master of Bahár, and begun the conquest of Bengal. The strong fort of Chunar on the Ganges taken after a stout defence, the Moghal monarch pushed on to Gaur, the capital of Bengal. Here, however, his troops were sadly thinned by sickness, consequent on the heavy rains and floods of an Indian monsoon.* In spite of the weather, his Afghan foe made his way up to Jaunpúr, and threatened to cut off Humáyun's retreat. Leaving garrisons in his new conquests, Humáyun at length began his homeward march.

Once more, however, Shír Khan's skilful strategy turned his resources to their best account. After defeating a strong Moghal force at Monghír, he suddenly fell about daybreak on Humáyun's army encamped near Baxar, on the road to Banaras, routed it with heavy slaughter, and drove its leader, with the shattered remnant of his host, in wild flight across the Ganges. Humayun himself barely escaped drowning, his empress was taken prisoner, and the bulk of his best troops perished by the sword or in the river.

A like disaster befell him in the following year not far from Kanauj, where with fresh troops recruited from Kabul and Lahór he was again surprised by the same bold and crafty assailant. From this last crushing blow it took him many years to recover. Under the name of Shír Shah the victorious Afghan seated himself on the throne of Dehli, which he and his successors held for about sixteen years. While Humáyun, with a few faithful followers, was roaming perilously from place to place, from province to province, in vain quest of help, now from his brother Kámran at Lahór, anon from the rulers of Márwár and Sindh, Shír Shah was bringing province after province in Upper India under his sway, driving Kámran out of the

* The rainy season in Bengal lasts from June to the end of September.

Panjab, overrunning Rájputana, and wresting Chitór from the discomfited Rajah of Mewár.

His death before Kálinjar in the hour of victory transferred the crown to his second son Selim Shah, who, supplanting his feeble elder brother, reigned in peace for about nine years, and, like his able father, did much for the internal improvement of his dominions.* He was succeeded in 1553 by his brother Mohammad Shah, who secured his power by the murder of his child nephew, and lost half his dominions through successful revolts in the course of his three years' reign.

By this time fortune, tired of persecuting the eldest son of Bábar, opened the way for his triumphant return to India and his father's throne. The first five years of Humáyun's exile had been a time of perilous adventures, cruel hardships, and hairbreadth escapes. Driven from Lahór by his brother's self-seeking policy, he had fled to Sindh for the aid he was not to find there. Crossing the desert to Jodpúr with his household and a few followers, many of whom died of thirst and weariness by the way, he fared no better than before at the hands of a Hindu Rajah, who had more reason to hate than help him. Thrown once more upon the dreary desert, with enemies behind him and before, each day's march bringing its own hardships, each halt a fresh fight for water with the unfriendly villagers, he lost all hope when the horsemen of Márwár, led by the son of their Rajah, closed in upon his small band. But Rájput chivalry still spared the helpless. Reproaching Humáyun for entering the Rájput country without leave, and for slaying the cattle which the Hindus held sacred, the son of the Rajah supplied the fugitives with food and water, and bade them depart in peace. A few more days of wandering in the sandy desert brought Humáyun's diminished band to Amerkót on the borders of

* The stern-looking Pathan fort of Selímgarh at Dehli still bears his name, and was probably built in his reign.

Sindh, where they found rest and a kindly welcome from its Hindu chieftain, Rána Parsúd. Here it was that Humáyun's beloved Hamida gave birth, in October, 1542, to the son, who afterwards became the glory of India under the Moghals.

With the help of his new friend, Humáyun marched into Sindh, and was making his way there against his old enemy, Husén Arghún, when Rána Parsúd, fired by some real or fancied affront, left the camp with all his followers ; and Humáyun compounded with adverse fortune by retiring in 1543 towards Kandahar. Into that city his wife and child were admitted by his brother, Mirza Askari ; but Humáyun himself gained no rest from wandering until he found an asylum at Herát, then held by the Shah of Persia, who treated him on the whole with great, though fitful munificence, and agreed to aid him in wresting Kabul from his brother Kamrán, on condition of his embracing the Shia tenets of Islam, and ceding Kandahar to his Persian ally.

These terms accepted, the royal exile set forth on his appointed task with a few hundred of his own adherents, aided by 14,000 Persian horse. In the autumn of 1545 Kandahar surrendered ; but with the treachery of his race Humáyun took the first tempting occasion to turn out the Persian garrison and replace them by his own troops. Kabul, which he took at the beginning of that winter and lost again during his absence in Badakshán, was recaptured in the spring of the year 1547.

His hold upon the country was still, however, uncertain. A reconciliation between the four sons of Babar was ere long stultified by a fresh revolt on Kamrán's part ; fresh misnaps awaited the much-enduring Humáyun ; and not till 1551 did he find himself once more master of Kabul and the surrounding country. Chased from one shelter to another, Kámrán was at length betrayed into the hands of his long-suffering brother, who commuted with the loss of

his eyes the death-sentence awarded by the Moghal officers of state.*

Humáyun's thoughts still turned to the scene of his early greatness and his father's renown. The new Pathan empire was already breaking up, but years of peril had taught him caution. Superstition, however, came to the aid of his natural restlessness; encouraging omens bade him venture on the path to which many friends and many circumstances were already inviting him. At length, in December, 1554, he marched from Kabul, made his way to Lahór, inflicted a crushing defeat on Sikandar Shah at Sirhind,† and once more entered the gates of Dehli in July, 1555, after an absence of nearly sixteen years.

He was not, however, to enjoy his new-found throne for long. About six months afterwards, he was going down the stairs outside the terrace of his library, when the cry to prayer reached him from the nearest minaret. After praying like a good Mussulman on the spot, he was rising with the help of his staff, when it slipped on the smooth marble of the steps, and the king fell headlong over the low parapet. On the 25th January, four days after his fall, the brave but unlucky son of Bábar breathed his last, in the forty-ninth year of his age, after a career at least as stormy as his father's, set off by many of his father's noblest and most endearing, as well as some of his weaker traits.

* The "Memoirs" quoted by Elphinstone, book vii. chap. 4, say nothing of the previous sentence, but would lead us to regard the blinding of Káunán as an act of needless cruelty on Humáyun's part. That, however, seems to be an unfair view of Humáyun's character.

† Young Akbar, then but twelve years old, was in the thickest of the fight. Sikandar was a nephew of the great Shír Shah.

CHAPTER II.

JALÁL-UD-DIN AKBAR, 1556—1605.

THE throne to which Akbar succeeded in his fourteenth year was very different from that which he handed down to his successors. Enemies, open or secret, were plotting or rising against him on every side. He had hardly sent Sikandar Shah once more flying to the mountains, and despatched some of his troops to the help of his ministers in Kabul, when Hému, the Hindu general who still fought for Mohammad Shah, the last king of Shír Shah's line, advancing from Bengal, captured Agra, occupied Dehli, and encamped on the fatal field of Pánipat. It was a trying moment for the new dynasty when Akbar's general, Behráam Khan, resolved, with the young king's willing sanction, to stake the hopes of the Moghals on the issue of a battle against tremendous odds. On the morning of the 5th November, 1556, the fight began which ended in the utter rout of Hému's army and the capture of its brave leader, badly wounded. Urged by Behram Khan to win the title of "Ghazi"—Champion of the Faith—by slaying the captive with his own sword, the generous Akbar refused to strike a wounded foe, and the fatal stroke was dealt by Behráam himself.

A campaign in the Panjab ended in the final surrender of Sikandar Shah, who retired to Bengal, where the Pathans still held their ground. For the next three years the government of Dehli was wielded by the able but too imperious Behráam, some of whose actions galled the pride and imperilled the authority of his young master. At

length, in 1560, Akbar by a sudden effort took the reins of state into his own hands, and the unseated minister presently went into rebellion, in hopes of carving out a separate kingdom for himself. Foiled, however, by Akbar's promptitude, he had to throw himself on his sovereign's mercy. His prayers for pardon were heard by a prince who forgot his late offences in remembrance of his former great deeds. Raising the suppliant with his own hand, Akbar placed him by his side, and bade him choose between high office at court or elsewhere and an honourable retreat to Mecca. Behrám chose the latter, but was stabbed on his way through Gujarát by an Afghan whose father he had slain in battle.

For many years to come Akbar's throne was anything but a bed of roses. He had still to reconquer the greater part of India, to control his unruly nobles, to win the goodwill or break the power of formidable Hindu and Mohammadan princes, to restore order and well-being throughout his dominions, to lay anew, in short, the foundations of a great and lasting empire. His own countrymen were mere strangers in the land, compared with the Pathans, who had been taking root there for three centuries past, and who, like the Norman settlers in Ireland, had lost many of their distinctive features by close and continual contact with surrounding races. It was Akbar's chief glory that he saw clearly what he had to do as a wise ruler of a distracted country, and did it steadily with all his might. Through all the warfare of his long reign he acted on the principle of treating his enemies as though they might become his friends, and this far-seeing policy was justified by almost unvarying success. His highest aim was to unite all classes, creeds, and races in India under one mild equitable rule; and his achievements in that direction have been rivalled by very few princes in any age or country.

In the first four years of his reign, Akbar extended his

conquests over Ajmir, Gwalior, Audh, and Jaunpúr. In 1561 Málwa was wrested from the Afghans by Abdullah Khan, an Uzbek leader, who afterwards sought to keep the province for himself. Akbar was not long in marching against the rebel, who fled to Gujarát. The turbulence of commanders who tried to retain the government, or, at least, the plunder of the provinces they helped to win, would have reduced their young sovereign to a mere puppet, but for his boldness in dealing with so common a danger to the Mohammadan power. Zeman Khan, the conqueror of Jaunpúr, had once already succumbed to Akbar's resolute bearing ; but now he joined with the disaffected Uzbek lords in Malwa in leading a formidable revolt, which Akbar, with hands full of other annoyances, could not for several years succeed in quelling. While the emperor was chasing his disloyal brother Hakim out of the Panjab, the Uzbek rebels pushed their way into Audh and Allahabád. But Akbar's daring strategy served him well on this as on many another occasion. By a swift and sudden march, with only 2,000 men he swooped down upon the rebel camp across the Ganges, slew or captured several of their leaders, and drove the scared troops before him in wild disorder. They never rallied again, and thus a revolt which had made head against his best generals, was quelled at last by the brilliant energy of Akbar himself.

His arms were next turned against Chitór, whose Rajah, a son of the great Rána Sanga, retired into the hills, leaving behind him a picked garrison of 8,000 men. The siege of the fortress-city was carried on with patient skill by means of regular zigzags and well-laid mines. But the defence was equally stubborn, and not till their brave and skilful leader, Jai Mal, had fallen by a well-aimed shot from Akbar's own bow did the garrison lose heart. Then, with the usual wild courage of their race, they slew their women, and rushed out to meet their own fate from the Mussulmans

who had already mounted the breaches. They perished nearly to a man, and the fall of their famous stronghold sent a shiver of dismay through all Rajasthán. Udi Singh himself remained untouched in his native wilds; but the hill-forts of Rantambór and Kálinjar ere long fell to Akbar's arms, several of the foremost Rájput princes tendered their allegiance to the new power, and a few of them afterwards rendered it loyal service as soldiers, statesmen, or governors of important provinces. Princesses of the purest Rájput blood had already begun to enter the Imperial household as wives of Akbar, his sons, and kinsmen.* It is still the boast of the Ránas of Udaipúr—the city founded by the son of Udi Singh some years after the capture of Chitór—that the ladies of their house alone have never stooped to intermarry with the kings of Delhi.

Akbar's merciful treatment of the Hindus bore good fruit in his subsequent warfare against his cousins and their allies in Gujarát. In 1572 the last king of that country had made him a formal tender of his crown, and Akbar at once proceeded to make himself master of his new kingdom. In one of his rapid marches he found himself with only 156 men in front of 1,000 of the enemy. But his little band included the Rajah of Jaipúr and his nephew Mán Singh, and their steadfast courage not only saved his life, but enabled him also to beat off and scatter his assailants. One of his rebel cousins was afterwards routed by Rajah Rai Singh of Márwár.

Hardly had Akbar returned to Agra from the conquest of Gujarát, when his cousin Mirza Husén once more defied him to the issue of battle. With a force of about 3,000 picked men the prompt Moghal marched more than 450 miles in nine days, and suddenly confronted the insurgent troops near Ahmadábád. In a succession of bold charges

* Akbar had married two queens from the houses of Jaipúr and Márwár, and a princess of Jaipúr was already married to his eldest son.

he swept through and through the astonished foe ; a successful sally from the city crowned his own efforts, and the siege of Ahmadábád was raised. Peace restored to the country, he again returned to Agra, the capital of his choice.

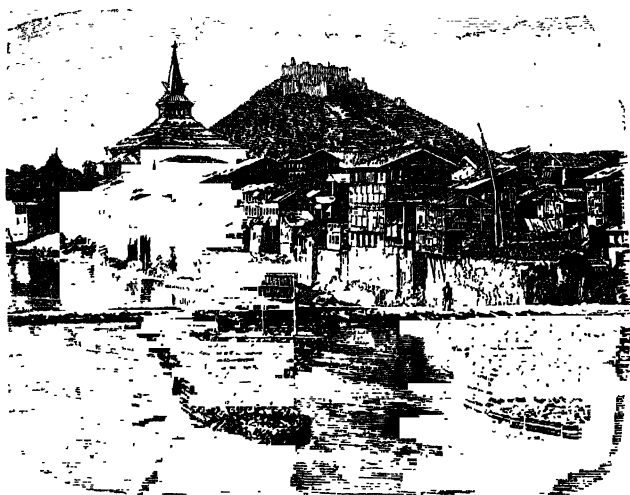
Two years afterwards he had entered upon the harder work of reconquering Bengal and the rest of Bahar from the Pathans, whose ruler, Dáúd Khan, had never paid his promised tribute to the Moghals. Before Akbar's steady advance Dáúd retired into Orissa, where he held his ground for a time against Akbar's generals, including the renowned Todar Mal, his Hindu Minister of Finance. Driven at length into a corner, he made peace on condition of retaining Orissa for himself. In a few months, however, he was again tempted to try his fortune with Akbar ; but his defeat and death in a pitched battle with the Moghal troops ensured the overthrow of the Afghan power in Bengal and Bahar. It was not, however, until three years later that these new conquests were brought into perfect order, after Todar Mal and his successor had put down a formidable rising among Akbar's own troops ; and not till 1592 was the Afghan power in Orissa finally broken by Mán Singh.

Meanwhile Akbar himself had had to deal with his restless brother Mirza Hakím, who in 1581 invaded the Panjáb from Kabul, and drove the governor, Mán Singh, into Lahór. After chasing him back to Kabul, and thence into the mountains, Akbar, with his usual nobleness, forgave his brother's offences, and left him in charge of Kabul until his death. This generous policy, however, was not always equally successful. At this very time the late king of Gujarát, Mozaffar Shah, on whom Akbar had bestowed a jágir, or feudal estate, started a new insurrection in his former kingdom. Driven out of the inland provinces, Mozaffar still held his ground in Katiawár for a few years longer, until in 1593 he was given up to the

Imperial commanders, and slew himself on his way to the Emperor's court.

Master of Kabul, Akbar ere long set himself to conquer Kashmir. The invading army made its way in 1587 to Srinagar, the capital; and the king, on making his submission, was compensated with a noble jágir in Bahár.

Meanwhile Akbar's generals were engaged in a vain



SRINAGAR, CAPITAL OF KASHMIR.

attempt to subdue the lawless mountaineers of Swát and the Khaibar. In 1586 the Moghal troops got hopelessly entangled among the rugged hills and gorges of Swát; the Rajah Bir Bal's division perished nearly to a man under the swords of the daring Yusufzais; and his colleague Zain Khan was driven back with heavy loss to Atak, where Akbar had lately built the fort that still overlooks the Indus. Fresh troops sent into the mountains under Todar

Mal and Mán Singh made some impression upon the foe by cutting off supplies and establishing a chain of strong posts in commanding positions. But the Yusufzais were never thoroughly subdued, and the legacy of trouble which Akbar bequeathed to his successors has not yet been exhausted even under the British rule.

It was about this time that Kandahar and Sindh were annexed to Akbar's dominions; * the one conquest completing the range of his old hereditary possessions, the other leaving him undisputed master of all India northward of the Narbadha, save perhaps the tract of country still held against him by the Rána of Udaipúr.

Akbar's hopes were now turned to the Dakhan, whither a way for his arms seemed to open itself in the offer made him by one of the rival claimants to the throne of Ahmadnagar. His troops marched upon the capital, but the brave woman Chánd Bibí, who held it for her child-nephew, maintained a defence so stout and heroic, that, after more than one attempt to storm the city, Prince Morád was fain to let her alone on condition of being allowed to occupy Berar.

A few months later war was renewed. Chánd Bibí had fallen into the power of her own minister, who forced her, in spite of the late treaty, to enter into a league with the other princes of the Dakhan. Early in the next year Prince Morád encountered the allies at Sonpat on the Godávári. A furious battle, which lasted two days, led to no more tangible issue than a protracted quarrel between the Moghal prince and his colleagues in command. At length Akbar himself resolved to interfere in person. Leaving the Panjáb, where he had long been staying, he reached the Narbadha in 1599, and sent an army to renew the siege of Ahmadnagar. In spite of the murder of the brave Chánd Bibí by the agents of a hostile faction, in the

* In his war against Akbar the chief of Sindh employed Portuguese soldiers and native *Sipahis*, dressed as Europeans.

midst of her efforts to treat for peace, the Moghals soon stormed the place with heavy slaughter; the young king was sent prisoner to Gwalior, and the final conquest of the whole kingdom might have been forestalled by many years had Akbar's return homeward not been hastened by unforeseen events. As it was, however, he stayed in the Dakhan long enough to complete the conquest of Khandesh, to betroth one of his sons to a princess of Bijápúr, and to cripple beyond recovery the power of the Ahmadnagar kingdom.

The cause of his sudden return to Hindustan was the revolt of his eldest son Selim, who, left in charge of the home government, took advantage of his father's absence to seize upon Audh and Bahár, plunder the treasury at Allahábád, and proclaim himself a king. Cruel, violent, and revengeful, he had already, at thirty years of age, impaired his great mental powers and heightened his worst traits by hard drinking and excess of opium. Akbar, in terms of fatherly loving-kindness, entreated him to forego his unfilial projects, and all would be forgiven. In the very midst of their negotiations Selim was plotting the death of Abul Fazl, one of Akbar's most trusted friends and officers, and the chief historian of his reign. In happy ignorance of his son's share in the murder of so dear a friend, Akbar renewed his offers of reconciliation, and Selim, returning to a show of duty, took up his abode at Allahábád.

Fresh quarrels, the fruit of fresh excesses on Selim's part, were hardly appeased when Akbar, who had already lost his son Morád from illness, had to mourn the death of his third son, Prince Dánial, from chronic drunkenness. All these things preyed upon his own failing health, and his dying hours were further embittered by the intrigues of opposing factions at his court. Plans were formed for setting the unpopular Selim aside in favour of his eldest son Khusrú, the child of his Rájput wife. Akbar's in-

fluence, however, asserted itself in the jaws of death. The plot came to nothing; and in the presence of his weeping son and reconciled nobles, the dying king murmured his last injunctions to peace, goodwill, and loyal discharge of duties on the part of each and all there assembled. Entreating the forgiveness of any whom he might have offended, and commending to his son's care his own friends and the ladies of his household, Bábar's glorious grandson ere long passed away amidst the prayers of his chief Mullah, on the last day of his sixty-third year, in the fifty-second year of a reign which began two years before and ended two years after that of our own Elizabeth.

He died in outward seeming a better Mussulman than he had lived. His early devotion to the faith of Islam had long since yielded to a spirit of philosophical inquiry and large-hearted tolerance for all kinds of worship, as expressions of human yearning towards a common God. The same generous instinct which shrank from slaying the captive Hemu afterwards led him, in the teeth of the prevailing bigotry, to show equal courtesy to men of every creed, and to encourage Christian priests and Brahman pandits in holding free discussion with the learned doctors of Islam. The Christians he treated with marked respect, paying reverence even to images of Christ and the Virgin Mary, and allowing his son Morád to study the Christian Gospels. His innate piety, guided by a powerful intellect, a tender heart, and a romantic sense of justice, taught him to see good in forms of worship the most diverse, and to eschew the persecuting habits so dear to well-meaning zealots of every creed. In his hands the sword of Mahomet became a sceptre of upright and merciful dealing with all whom circumstances placed under his power.

In accordance with his love of evenhanded justice, he annulled all legal sanctions even for practices ordered by the Korán. No man was any longer forced by law to fast, attend public worship, go on pilgrimage, or abstain from

wine and unclean meats ; and the rite of circumcision was put off till the age of twelve, in order that the young believer might be free in a measure to choose his religion for himself. In the same spirit he forbade the burning of Hindu widows against their will, the marriage of Hindu children before a fit age, and the Hindu practice of trial by ordeal.* The latest efforts of English legislation in India were forestalled by a decree allowing Hindu widows to marry again. All taxes on pilgrims, temples, religious rites, and the hateful Jiziya or poll-tax so long exacted from the conquered Hindus were done away, and a stop was put to the cruel old Mohammadan practice of selling into slavery all prisoners taken in war. The more zealous Mussulmans shrugged their shoulders at these lapses from orthodox usage ; but the reforming emperor held his own way, and their anger seldom broke into open remonstrance against changes decreed by " God's Khalif," with the virtual assent of doctors learned in Mohammadan law.†

In substituting a new era dating from his own accession for that of the Hijra, he may have been impelled by the same kind of vanity which led him to enforce the un-Mohammadan practice of prostration before the king. His extreme intolerance of the beards worn by all good Mussulmans appears to lack even the excuse of public policy, claimed for the war which Tzar Peter afterwards waged against the beards of Muscovite orthodoxy. But in the former instance it is only fair to credit him with the good results of a change, which at least included the more scientific method of reckoning by solar instead of lunar months and years.

Improving on the example of the Bijapur kings, Akbar

* On one occasion, hearing that the Rajah of Jodpûr was forcing his son's widow to do *Sati*, he rode off to the spot to prevent the intended sacrifice.

† Akbar took care to obtain the legal opinion of his chief lawyers, that as head of the Church he had a right to govern it according to his own judgment. (Elphinstone's "India," book ix. chap. 3.)

gave high employment to Hindus of mark or promise. The Rajah Mán Singh became one of his foremost generals and most trusty governors. Bir Bal perished as we saw among the hills of Swát. Bhagwán Dás of Jaipur, Akbar's brother-in-law, took a leading part in the conquest of Kashmir; while Rajah Todar Mal eclipsed his own renown as a successful soldier by his civil government of Bengal and the great financial reforms which, as Akbar's prime minister, he succeeded in carrying through.* Under men like these, thousands of Hindus fought in the Imperial ranks, or found a wide field for their talents in every branch of the civil service, except the judicial, which was still reserved for Mohammadans alone. In all suits, however, between Hindus, justice was dealt out by the Mohamadan judges in strict accordance with Hindu law.

At once among the bravest and most merciful of men, Akbar never took the field himself without chaining victory to his standard, nor ever stained his arms with needless cruelties. But the need for his presence over, he left his commanders to follow up his own successes; and enjoining them to deal humanely with the conquered, betook himself with unfeigned pleasure to works of peace, especially to the great work of establishing order and good government throughout the fifteen provinces of his empire.

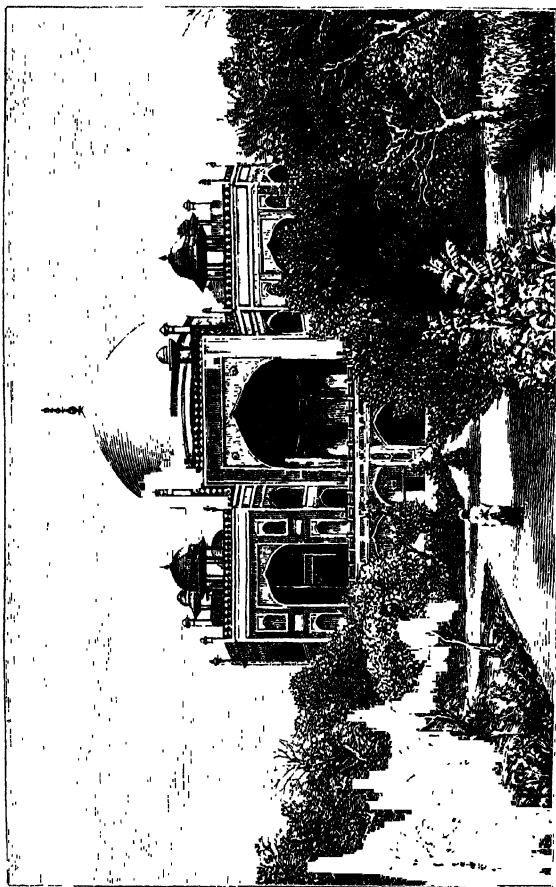
For this end he found a fitting helpmate in Todar Mal, whose scheme for settling the land-revenue seems in the main to have developed the reforming policy of Humáyun's conqueror, Shír Shah. The land was divided into three classes, whose degrees of fruitfulness were measured by one uniform standard. For each bigah—equal to about two-thirds of an acre—the average yield of its class was taken, and of the common average one-third was set apart for the government claim. The money value of that third was reckoned upon an average of prices for nineteen years back, and the husbandman was free to pay the State's

* Todar Mal was a Hindu from Lahór.

share either in money or in kind. These assessments, at first made yearly, were afterwards revised only once in ten years, on an average of payments for the previous ten. All matters bearing on these settlements were duly entered from time to time in the village registers. No existing tenures were altered or ignored. Great care was taken to respect the rights and redress the grievances of every husbandman. For revenue purposes the country was parcelled out into districts of a certain value, each placed under its own collector. A great many vexatious fees and taxes were removed, and the system of farming the revenue was done away. The net result of these measures was to lighten the land of many burdens without much reducing its fiscal value to the State. Reforms like these, however imperfect, went far to secure the happiness of the people, and served as the foundation on which our own countrymen were afterwards to build.*

In reforms of police and public justice the great emperor showed himself equally zealous, in his own despotic fashion, for his people's good. Criminals were punished without needless cruelty in certain prescribed ways; torture was wholly forbidden; and in ordinary cases no one could be judicially put to death until his sentence had been confirmed by Akbar himself. His troops were regularly paid in cash, their equipment carefully supervised, and false returns of men and horses checked by musters taken before each issue of pay. Each of the officers appointed by the king had to keep so many men, horse, foot, matchlock-men, and archers, ready for service at need. The army thus maintained, however fit for its purpose, was still a mere collection of chance levies, compared with the standing armies of modern Europe.

* Elphinstone's "India," book ix. chap. 3. Colonel Meadows Taylor ("Manual of Indian History") points to the close resemblance between Akbar's revenue-settlement and the recent survey and assessment of Bombay.



TOMB OF HI MAYUN

With a soldier's eye for defensive purposes, Akbar built the river-fortresses of Atak on the Indus, Agra on the Jamna, and Allahábád at the meeting of the Jamna with the Ganges. In all branches of public business, his hand was visible, sweeping away old abuses, retrenching needless outlay, and devoting part of his great revenues* to works of public usefulness or æsthetic grandeur. His piety reared near Dehli a noble tomb to the memory of his father Humáyun. His splendid taste in architecture shone out in the mighty gateways, broad quadrangles, and white marble domes of Fathipúr Sikri, whose ruined glories still fix the traveller's wondering gaze.† Nor did he fail to repair and extend the system of canals and waterworks begun two centuries earlier by Firóz Toghlak. To a Mir-áb, or Chief of the Waters, he entrusted the supreme control of all such works, including the collection of water-rents and the even distribution of water to those who needed it, whether rich or poor. With kindly thought for his people's comfort, he ordered the planting of trees, "both for shade and blossom," along both sides of the canal first cut by Firóz between Karnál and Hissár.‡

Of this great and wise monarch little more remains here to tell. His tall but well-knit frame, mighty chest, and long sinewy arms, seem to hint something of that great bodily strength which delighted in walks of forty and in rides sometimes of a hundred miles a-day. His eyes were full and dark, his skin of a ruddy brown. He was equally at home in the battle-field, in the jungle hunting tigers or tracking wild elephants, in the palace weighing or refuting the arguments of rival priests or sages, in the council-room discussing points of statecraft with ministers

* He is said to have drawn from India a revenue of thirty millions sterling, more than half of which came directly from the land. See Thomas's "Revenue Resources of the Moghal Empire."

† Its magnificent ruins cover miles of ground on the road from Agra to Jaipur.

‡ Kaye's "Administration of the East India Company," p. 29.

like Abul Fazl and Todar Mal. Foud in his youth of wine and good living, in his after years he kept both these likings under stern control. Amidst the splendour of his public progresses and receptions, he astonished strangers from the West by his unstudied courtesies and simple tastes. He slept, we are told, but three hours a-day, spent hours together on public business, and took a keen interest in mechanical arts, especially in the casting of guns and the manufacture of other weapons. A steady friend, a generous foe; a forgiving father, a ruler merciful, upright, shrewd to select the fittest agents for his work, Akbar has left behind him one of the brightest names in the history of any country, a name whose lustre remains undimmed alike by the flatteries of indiscreet friends and the abuse of unsparing foes.*

* One of these indiscreet friends was Abul Fazl himself, whose "Akbar-námah" is one long panegyric. The most valuable record of Akbar's home government is the *Ain-i-Akbari*, or Code of Regulations, drawn up by Abul Fazl under his sovereign's direct supervision.

CHAPTER III.

JAHÁNGÍR, 1605—1627.

THE new emperor, Selim, under the sounding title of Jahánger, "Conqueror of the World," succeeded peacefully at the age of thirty-seven to his father's throne. His earlier measures went far to allay the fears engendered by his past shortcomings. His father's old officers were retained in their posts; some vexatious duties and barbarous practices which Akbar had left untouched were swept away; himself a notorious drunkard, he strictly forbade the use of wine and regulated that of opium. The Mohammadan creed reappeared upon the coinage, and the forms and ritual of the old religion resumed their place in the outward life of the imperial household.

The old nature of the man, however, soon revealed itself. In the spring of 1606, a few months after the emperor's accession, his son Khusrú broke into rebellion, but a month afterwards found himself a prisoner in his father's hands at Lahór. Seven hundred of his followers were forthwith impaled alive on a double line of stakes outside one of the city gates.* Along this ghastly avenue the wretched prince was borne upon an elephant, and compelled each day to witness the frightful agonies of the victims to his own ambition and his father's fierce revenge, so long as one of them remained alive. He himself was carried to Kabul, where the discovery of a plot for his release again hardened his father's heart just as the emperor had begun to relax the closeness of his son's confinement.

* Elphinstone, quoting Jahangir's Memoirs, gives that number, which Dow reduces to three hundred.

The next few years were marked by the efforts of the imperial commanders to subdue the Rána of Udaipúr, and to complete the conquest of the Dakhan, then ruled in fact by Malik Ambar, the great Abyssinian noble, who, for twenty years after the murder of the brave Chánd Sultána, upheld the sinking fortunes of the house of Nizám Shah. Very little progress did the Moghal arms make against the Rajput highlanders of Mewár, until the emperor's third son, Prince Khurram, ere long to be known as Shah Jahán, took the field in person, and proved his generalship by compelling the Rána of Udaipúr to sue for peace. Mindful of his grandfather's policy, Shah Jahán raised from the ground his suppliant foe, placed him by his own side, and treated him with all kingly courtesy. The heir to the glorious memories of Rana Sanga, the ruler of a kingdom independent for many centuries, now became the vassal of the great Moghal; but the country which Akbar had conquered from the kings of Mewár was restored to that vassal's keeping, and his son was raised to one of the chief posts of honour at Jahángir's court.

Two years after his successes in Rájputána, Shah Jahán was sent to retrieve the mishaps of former commanders in the war against Malik Ambar. Abandoned by his ally, the king of Bijápúr, the great Abyssinian was soon forced to surrender the provinces he had won back from the Moghals. Within four years, however, Shah Jahán was again marching towards the Narbadha to drive Malik Ambar's Afghans and Maráthas back to their appointed boundaries. In spite of his skilful soldiership, the champion of Ahmadnagar was brought to battle and again beaten by his former conqueror, who granted him the peace he asked for at a heavy price in territory and rupees.*

* One of Malik Ambar's chief followers was Shahjí, father of Sivají, founder of the Marátha power.

In the midst of these successes trouble was lying in wait for the victor himself at the hands of his stepmother Nur-Jahán. Some time before his own accession Jahángir had seen and loved the beautiful daughter of a Persian gentleman, who, after many misfortunes, had taken service in Akbar's court. But her hand was already plighted to one of Akbar's nobles, the brave Shír Afgan, who led her away with him to his manor in Bardwan. Still bent on winning her for himself, Jahangir, soon after he came to the throne, would have bribed her husband into giving up his treasure. On Shír Afgan's refusal, high words seem to have passed between him and Jahángir's agent, the Viceroy of Bengal. The latter fell under Shír Afgan's dagger, and the murderer in his turn was slain by the Viceroy's followers. Nur-Jahán, removed to Dehli, still turned a deaf ear to Jahángir's addresses. At last, however, she yielded to his prayers or her own ambition, and in 1611 the marriage was celebrated with unusual pomp.

From that time Nur-Jahán wielded over her husband an empire which ended only with his life. He caused her name to be inscribed on the coinage; in all matters which attracted her notice her will became law. Her father was made prime minister; her brother was raised to an important post. Her taste enhanced the magnificence, her good management kept down the expenses of the Emperor's court. His vicious tendencies were so far held in check by her sweet influence, that he seldom gave way to savage outbursts, and never allowed himself to get drunk before the evening.

To Shah Jahán, the ablest and best beloved of his sons, the husband of her own niece, the Emperor's acknowledged heir, she had hitherto given her powerful support. But the death of her father, followed by that of Prince Khusru, the marriage of her own daughter to the Emperor's fourth son, Prince Shahriár, and the serious illness of the Emperor himself in 1621, all conspired to turn the am-

bitious woman's heart against the object of her former liking. The report of her altered feelings, of her intrigues in favour of her new son-in-law, reached the ears of Shah Jahán, who had just been ordered to retake Kandahar from its Persian conquerors. His manifest unwillingness to leave India on such an errand at a time so critical, brought him into conflict with his deluded father. A year passed away in fruitless interchange of messages between Jahángir at Lahór and his mistrustful son at Mandu, then the capital of Gujarát. At last the quarrel blazed out into open war, which told disastrously against Shah Jahán. Driven out of the Dakhan by superior numbers, he suddenly turned northwards, led his troops boldly through Orissa into Bengal, and early in 1624 defeated the Governor of that province at Rajmahal.

For a short time he became master of Bengal and Bahár. But the Imperial leaders followed him up; his own troops began to melt away, he himself fell sick, and at length, in spite of the help afforded him in the Dakhan by Malik Ambar, the hard-pressed Shah Jahán was fain to accept the terms—surrender of his last strongholds, and of his two sons as hostages—on which alone his father would grant him peace and forgiveness.

By this time, however, a new quarrel of Nur-Jahán's provoking was about to involve the Emperor in new difficulties. Mohábat Khan, the Afghan general whom the Empress had employed to aid her against Shah Jahán, had aroused her jealousy by his late successes in the field and his growing influence at Court. False charges were brought against him, and by the Emperor's orders a cruel outrage was inflicted on his son-in-law.* Mohábat soon took his revenge. As the Emperor was marching towards Kabul, Mohábat, who had been ordered to accompany

* A young nobleman, who had married Mohábat's daughter without the Emperor's leave, was stripped naked and flogged with thorns in Jahángir's presence.

him, broke one morning into the tent where he lay sleeping off his last night's carouse. Jahángir awoke to find himself a prisoner, cut off from his troops on the other side of the Jhílam by a strong body of Rajputs, who guarded the bridge of boats. Baffled in a daring attempt to rescue her captive husband, Nur-Jahán resolved to share his confinement in the hope of ere long finding a way to set him free.

That hope was soon to be fulfilled. During a review of the Imperial troops at Kabul, a body of her own followers managed to strike in between the Emperor and his guards, and to bear the former away into the midst of assured friends. Mohábat Khan was pardoned on condition of restoring the Empress's brother, Asof Khan, to freedom, and promising to go in chase of her enemy Shah Jahán. The fortunes of that prince, a fugitive in Sindh, whom ill-health alone prevented from fleeing to Persia, had reached their lowest ebb, when the death of his brother Parváz was followed by new disagreements between his father and Mohábat Khan. The prince and his late pursuer joined forces in the Dakhan, and prepared to march towards Agra, when the death of Jahángir freed his son from further annoyances, and brought Nur-Jahan's power and plottings to a timely end. Thenceforth, until her own death in 1646, Jahángir's widow took no part in public affairs, devoting her life and the bulk of her magnificent pension to the memory of her uxorious husband.

It was during the last two reigns that our countrymen first made their way to the court of the Great Moghal. In 1607 Captain Hawkins had been sent out by the East India Company with a view to obtain some footing for English trade in Indian ports. Some twenty years earlier two English travellers, Ralph Fitch and John Newbery, had found themselves, after many hardships and narrow escapes by land and sea, safe at last in Akbar's own city of Fathipur Síkrí. Little, however, came of this journey

whose quaint and interesting details are recorded in Hakluyt's Voyages,* save fresh encouragement to that spirit of English enterprise which the voyages and achievements of Drake, Hawkins, Raleigh, and other of Elizabeth's captains, had just called into active play. Captain Lancaster's first voyage in 1591, if it added little to our knowledge of India itself, whetted the greed or the curiosity of Englishmen at home. In December, 1600, the Earl of Cumberland and 215 knights, aldermen, and merchants were enrolled by royal charter into a company of merchants trading to the East Indies, and invested among other privileges with the monopoly of our Eastern trade for the next fifteen years. Their modest capital of £75,000 was at once laid out in five vessels freighted with goods and bullion, and placed under the command of Captain Lancaster, who in due time brought home a goodly cargo from Sumatra and Java, enriched with the spoils of a large vessel captured from the Portuguese. Fresh fleets were afterwards despatched under Middleton, Keeling, and other captains, who refilled their vessels, by fair means or foul, with equal scorn for the feelings of native traders and the exclusive claims of their Portuguese rivals.

In company with Keeling went Captain Hawkins, who, after many adventures and much resistance from the Portuguese and their friends at Surat, met with a gracious welcome at Agra, in 1609, from Jahāngir himself. For a time all went hopefully with the English stranger. He was promised a handsome salary while he stayed at court; an Armenian maiden was sought out and given him for wife; his pleadings on behalf of the new company were heard with seeming approval; and leave was granted him under the Emperor's seal to establish a factory at Surat.

* Richard Hakluyt, Archdeacon of Westminster, first published in 1582 a small collection of Voyages and Discoveries, afterwards much enlarged in 1589—1600. He became the first historiographer to the old East India Company, founded in 1600.

At last, however, his prospects began to change for the worse. The intrigues of his enemies at Surat and of Portuguese agents at Agra prevailed against him; his salary was left unpaid; his interviews with the Emperor grew less frequent; and at length, in November, 1611, Hawkins set out on his homeward journey with the main object of his mission unfulfilled.

A few months afterwards, however, Captain Best recovered the ground which Hawkins had won and lost. With his four ships he inflicted a signal defeat on a Portuguese squadron, which sought to keep English traders out of Surat. His victory taught the Imperial officers to respect those whom they had hitherto despised. In 1613 Jahangir confirmed by formal treaty the privileges first bestowed on Hawkins; and from that time Surat became the chief seat of English trade in Western India.

The footing thus gained by the East India Company was quickly followed up by the despatch of another embassy to the Moghal Court. In the last days of 1615 Sir Thomas Roe presented his letters from King James I. to Jahangir, who received him with marked distinction at Ajmir, and treated him for two years as an honoured and even familiar guest. With very few exceptions, the great men and courtiers followed the Emperor's example. Their good-will indeed could not always be secured without heavy bribes; nor did Shah Jahán himself * look kindly on the new-comers who sympathised with his brother Khusru, and shared, however innocently, in the drunken revellings at his father's court. In the end, however, Sir Thomas overcame all obstacles by dint of unwearied patience and cool address; and he returned to Surat armed with fresh powers on behalf of the Company, whose

* Roe describes him as a tyrant and a bigot, who never smiled, nor paid court to any one in particular; "flattered by some, envied by others, loved by none;" but the picture must be taken with large allowance for outward appearances and the force of personal prejudice.

rights of trading were thenceforth extended to the whole of India.

It was one thing to secure these rights on paper, but quite another to enforce them against jealous rivals from the West, and unwilling servants of the Moghal. Little by little, however, the Company enlarged their outlay and found new markets for their trade. A few years of joint action between the Dutch and English companies in the eastern seas closed abruptly in 1623 with the torture and execution of twelve Englishmen at Amboyna,* on an utterly false charge of conspiring to seize the Dutch fort. Driven from the spice-bearing Moluccas, the English turned their attention more and more to India itself, where, besides their growing trade with Surat, they had already gained a footing on the Malabar coast. In 1625, their first settlement on the eastern or Coromandel coast was founded at Arnegaum, a little to the south of Vellór. Within three years the new factory was armed with twelve guns and manned by a small body of factors and soldiers. Thither was removed the trade which some years earlier had flowed to Masulipatam. Ere long, however, the trade of Arnegaum proved so unprofitable, that in 1639 Mr. Day got leave from a native chief to build a new factory at Madraspatam, the germ of Fort St. George and the populous city of Madras. But we must not further anticipate the events which have to be recorded in the following chapters.

* One of the largest of the Moluccas, or Spice Islands, in the Eastern Archipelago.

CHAPTER IV.

SHAH JAHÁN, 1628—1658.

ON the death of Jahangír, his son Shah Jahán hastened to Agra, where with the help of Nur-Jahán's brother, Asaf Khan, he quietly mounted his father's throne. Freed from present anxieties by the capture and death of Shahriár,* the new emperor gave the reins to his taste for splendid pageantry and architectural grandeur. In the midst of festivals costing millions of rupees, and of magnificent plans for rebuilding and adorning Dehli, he was suddenly called upon to put down a formidable revolt headed by Khan Jahán Lodi, one of his great lords and former opponents, who claimed descent from the Pathan kings of Dehli. Mistrustful of the emperor's feelings towards himself, he suddenly broke away from Agra with his household and armed retainers, beat back the pursuing troops at the Chambal, and, plunging into the wilds of Bundalkhand and Gondwána, made his way into the Dakhan, where he counted on bringing many an old friend to his side, if not on raising the whole of Southern India against the Moghal. From the King of Ahmadnagar, who had just lost his able minister, Malik Ambar, he met with a warm welcome; but the Kings of Bijápúr and Golkonda held aloof; and the Marátha chieftain, Shahjí, soon saw reason to abandon his former friend, and enter into the service of Shah Jahán. Defeated, hunted from place to place, and baffled in every attempt to make a stand, Khan Jahán fell

* Not only Shahriár, but the sons of Prince Dániál also, were put to death by Shah Jahán's orders.

at last fighting bravely near Kalinjar, at the head of a few of his remaining followers.

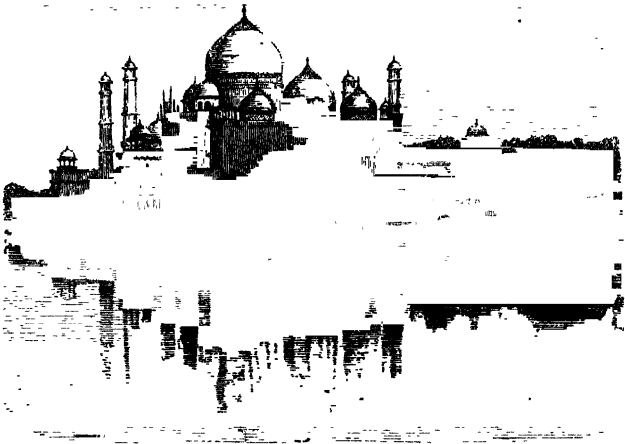
After his death the war which he had kindled in the Dakhan blazed up afresh. The King of Bijapur at length took part with his neighbour of Ahmadnagar. On the murder of the latter by his minister, Fattah Khan, the son of Malik Ambar, his people made peace with the emperor, who turned his arms against Bijapur. For several years the king of that country defied the efforts of such able commanders as Asaf Khan and Mohábat Khan. Ahmadnagar, under its new master, Shahji, again joined the conflict on the side of Bijapur; and not till 1636 did Adil Shah of Bijapur give up the doubtful game, on condition of paying a yearly tribute to Shah Jahan in return for a large slice of the Ahmadnagar state. Next year Shahji also made peace, and thenceforth Ahmadnagar ceased to be an independent kingdom.

Meanwhile, in 1632, the Portuguese were finally driven out of Húghli, near Calcutta, by order of Shah Jahan, who had not forgotten the refusal of the Portuguese governor to aid him in his hour of need against his father's troops. After an existence of nearly a century, the fort at Húghli was stormed by the Moghals, a thousand of the garrison were put to the sword, besides several thousands taken prisoners, and only three out of three hundred ships in the river made their escape. Thenceforth the Portuguese power in Bengal was crushed for ever.

In 1637, Kandahar, the old appanage of the House of Bábar, was surrendered to the Moghals by its governor, Ali Mardan Khan. Ten years later, however, it fell again into Persian hands, and the bravest efforts of Shah Jahan's officers and men failed, after three sieges, in winning it back. Meanwhile, Ali Mardan had tried the mettle of his troops, including 14,000 Rajputs, in conquering Balkh for Shah Jahan. After two years, however, of harassing warfare with the Uzbeks from beyond the Oxus, Shah Jahan

was glad to make over his new conquest to its former master.

For two years after the failure of the last attempt on Kandahar, the empire enjoyed unbroken peace. Shah Jahán employed that interval in extending to the Dakhan the revenue system shaped out by Todar Mal. Emulous of Akbar's great example, his grandson governed well and justly according to Eastern ideas, treating his subjects,



THE TAJ-MAHAL AT AGRA.

says Tavernier, as a father would treat his children, and choosing for his ministers men like Saad Ullah Khan, ablest and most upright of Indian viziers. In spite of his lavish outlay on the court, on public shows, and the embellishment of great cities, he seems to have raised with ease a revenue of more than fifty millions, and he left as much as twenty-four millions behind him in his treasury. His people, on the whole, were prosperous and

contented. The noblest streets in modern Dehli, the fortified palace with its marble halls and wide courts, and the Jama Masjid, or Great Mosque of that city, attest the splendour of his taste in building; while the exquisite Taj Mahal at Agra, with its taper minarets, soft-swelling marble dome, delicate trellis-work, and flowing mosaics, has few, if any, rivals in the world for stately grace and symmetry of form, chaste brilliance of general effect, and finished beauty of rich but telling *décoration*. Reared in memory of his empress, Mumtáz-Mahal, it has since served to delight a long succession of strangers from the West.* A yet costlier, if less noble, monument of decorative art was the far-famed peacock-throne at Dehli, adorned with a mass of diamonds, rubies, sapphires, and other gems, after the fashion of a peacock's tail.

Meanwhile, however, the ambition of Aurangzib, one of the emperor's sons, and the intrigues of Mir Jumla, vizier to the King of Golkonda, rekindled the flames of war in the Dakhan, with results that proved ruinous in the long-run to the Moghal empire. Appointed viceroy of the Dakhan after his failure at Kandahar in 1653, Aurangzib took up Mir Jumla's quarrel with his master, and persuaded the emperor to let him work his will on the king of Golkonda. Haidarābād was sacked by the viceroy's troops, and Abdullah Kutab Shah, driven into a corner, accepted the hard terms imposed by Aurangzib.

At this moment died Mahmūd Adil Shah, the aged King of Bijāpūr, whose capital he had adorned with some of the noblest buildings to be seen in India. His death became the pretext for new aggressions on the part of Aurangzib, who claimed for the emperor the right of naming an heir to the vacant throne. A Moghal army made a sudden inroad into Bijāpūr. Marking his pro-

* Seen by moonlight, filling up one end of the cypress avenue leading from the outer gate to the marble terrace whereon it stands, the Taj gleams like a vision of fairyland.

gress with fire and sword, Aurangzib at length besieged the city of Bijápúr itself. The young king, whose troops were chiefly away in the Carnatic, was ready to accept such terms as his enemy might choose to force upon him, when news of the emperor's serious illness reached the camp of Aurangzib. Concluding a hasty peace with his lately despairing foe, that crafty prince made ready to take all advantage of an illness which at any moment might end in death.

Then began a fight for empire between the four sons of Shah Jahan. Dára Shuko, the eldest, who had for some time shared his father's power and duties, was now in his forty-second year—a frank, free-handed, open-hearted prince, of undoubted talent, marred by an overbearing temper and an utter want of common prudence. In religion a free-thinker of Akbar's school, he lacked one main source of the influence wielded by his abler, warier, more scheming, and far more bigoted brother, Aurangzib. Between these two came Prince Shujá, viceroy of Bengal, whose talents were neutralised by his love of wine and pleasure. Aurangzib's younger brother, Morád, viceroy of Gujarat, was brave and generous, but dull-witted, gluttonous, and a drunkard. In him, however, the third of his father's sons found a convenient tool for the carrying out of his own plans. Leaving Dara and Shujá to waste their strength against each other, Aurangzib soon taught the credulous Morád to look upon him as a firm upholder of Morád's claim to their father's throne. They agreed to join forces against the free-thinking Dára and his Hindu lieutenant, Jeswant Singh.

In April, 1658, Shujá, defeated by Soliman, the son of Dára, withdrew from his fruitless struggle into Bengal. Meanwhile Dára himself marched to his own defeat at the hands of Aurangzib. Falling back from Ujain to Agra, the beaten prince, impatient of his father's counsels, and trusting to his own superior numbers, staked his own and

his father's fortunes on a battle fought near Agra in the month of June. The day was nearly his own, when a panic seized his troops, and Aurangzib, pressing forward, drove them in wild flight from the field he had well-nigh lost. Pushing his advantage, he marched on to Agra, took his aged father prisoner, and, throwing off the mask he had hitherto worn, placed Morad also under close arrest. On reaching Dehli in August, he caused himself to be proclaimed emperor in the room of Shah Jahán. The deposed monarch lived for eight years longer, but his splendid reign of thirty years ceased with the entrance into Dehli of his undutiful son.

During these years the English made further progress in their Indian trade. In 1684 Shah Jahan gave the East India Company leave to trade with Bengal, and the first factory in that province was set up at Pipili, near the mouth of the Hughli river. Two years afterwards a successful cure wrought on the emperor's daughter by Mr. Boughton, one of the Company's surgeons, was rewarded, at his own request, by new concessions to his employers. In return for a like service rendered by that gentleman to the household of Prince Shuja, his countrymen were allowed to erect new factories at Hughli and Balasór.

Meanwhile a rival company, favoured, for his own purposes, by Charles I., attempted for about twenty years to trade on their own account in the Eastern seas. At length, however, the influence of the older body prevailed with Cromwell's councillors, and the two companies became one. Surat and Madras formed two presidencies; the former having control over the settlements in the Persian Gulf and Western India, while the latter held sway over the factories in Bengal and along the Coromandel coast.

CHAPTER V.

AURANGZĪB, 1658—1707.

UNDER the title of Alamgir, Lord of the World, the new Emperor began his reign. In the midst of his relentless pursuit of his brother Dāra, he was called away to encounter Shujā, who had once more taken the field with a well-appointed army, and had already reached Banaras on his march up towards Agra. The two brothers encountered each other at Kajwa, a few marches to the north-west of Allahābād. In spite of a sudden attack upon his rear by his old opponent Rajah Jeswant Singh, the Emperor bravely held his ground, until by a mixture of cool courage, able generalship, and good fortune, the imminent defeat was turned into a crushing victory. Allahābad surrendered to the conqueror, and Shuja, hotly pressed by Mir Jumla, fell back into the heart of Bengal. The rainy season compelled a pause in the pursuit; but by the year's end Shujā had been driven across the Brahmapūtra. A few months later he fled with a few followers into the Arakan hills, where all trace of him and his family very soon disappeared.*

Meanwhile Dāra, abandoned by Jeswant Singh, whom his crafty brother had at length bought over to his own side, led his recruited forces to a strong position near Ajmir. Once more a hard-fought battle ended in his defeat at the hands of his abler and more determined brother. Ahmadābād shut its gates on the princely

* It is supposed that they lost their lives through plotting against the Rajah of Arakan. (Elphinstone's "India," book ix. chap. 1.)

fugitive; his wife died of fatigue and suffering on the way to Kandahar; and ere long Dára himself, with one of his sons, was basely betrayed into the hands of his ruthless brother by a man whom he had once befriended, the chief of Jún in Eastern Sindh. Led in chains, on a sorry elephant, through the streets of that Dehli whose heart still yearned towards its recent master, the ill-starred captive was hurried to trial on the convenient charge of apostasy from the faith of Islam. When his head was brought to Aurangzib, the emperor made a show of weeping over the fruits of his own unsparing ambition.

By a strange coincidence the two sons of Dára and the son of his youngest brother Morád died shortly afterwards in the prison they had been sharing together in Gwalior. Morád himself, whose blind trust in Aurangzib had been requited by a long imprisonment, was finally brought to trial on a charge trumped up against him by his heartless brother, and paid with his life the penalty of standing too near the throne.

Soon afterwards another source of possible danger was removed out of the Emperor's way. His ablest general, Mir Jumla, had been ordered or encouraged to attempt the conquest of Assam. For a time Mir Jumla carried all before him; but the rain-floods stopped him in mid-career; sickness raged among his troops; and a disastrous retreat to Dacca ended in their great leader's death. His memory was honoured by his son's promotion, and an expressive eulogy from the pen of Aurangzib.*

By that time the Emperor's alarming illness had for a moment threatened his life as well as his throne. As he lay in the last stage of weakness, he learned that his enemies were plotting to set up Shah Jahán, or one of his own sons, in his stead. Propped up by pillows, he insisted on receiving anew the homage of his chief barons;

* "You have lost a father," he wrote to Mohammad Amín, "and I have lost the greatest and most dangerous of my friends."

and wrote out the orders which his tongue still refused to utter. By such means, with the help of his faithful sister, Raushanāra, he kept his enemies quiet until his recovered health put all hope of active resistance out of their heads.

About this time a new and more serious peril to the House of Bābar had begun to rear its head beyond the Narbadha. The bold Maratha chieftain Shahjī, whom we lately saw carving a new kingdom for himself in the Dakhan,* was son of Maloji Bhōsla, a Marātha captain of horse under the orders of Jādu Rao, a distinguished Rajput leader, who, after following the fortunes of the renowned Malik Ambar, had at length thrown him over for the sake of serving under Shah Jahān. In due time Maloji won for Shahjī the hand of Jādu's highborn daughter, to which he had long aspired in vain. By fair means or foul Shahjī in his turn fought his way among the wrecks of fallen dynasties and dismembered kingdoms to the lordship of large estates lying between Pūna and Bangalor.

His second son Sīvajī, the future founder of the Marātha empire, was brought up at Pūna under his mother's care, by his father's Brahman agent, Dadaji Pant. Inured from boyhood to hardy exercises, and mingling constantly with the wild Maratha highlanders in his neighbourhood, Sīvajī ere long broke from his tutor's care, and became the leader of a band of lawless youths ready to follow him in any raid, whether against the wild beasts of their native hills or the Mohammadan dwellers in the plains. At the age of nineteen he contrived to seize the strong hill-fort of Torna, twenty miles south-west of Pūna. In the following year he built a new stronghold on a neighbouring hill. Ere long several other forts were wrested from their Mohammadan masters, and placed under the charge of his Marātha followers. Emboldened by these successes, and enriched by the plunder of a con-

* See book iii. chap. 4.

voy on its way to Bijapur, he swooped down upon the Kankan, and brought under his sway a good deal of the rugged woody lowlands stretching westward from the Ghâts to the sea.*

At last the story of his exploits found its way to the court of Bijapur. His father, Shahji, was seized as a hostage for the offending son; and a cruel death stared him in the face, when Sivaji's appeal to the emperor Shah Jahan opened the prison door to Shahji, if it failed as yet to ensure his perfect freedom. Four years later, when Shahji's services were imperatively needed elsewhere, Sivaji, by this time the eldest of his father's surviving sons, began to renew his old raids, with a steadiness of purpose heightened by religious zeal, and a boldness all the more successful for the tiger-like cunning that knew how and when to give it free play. A true Marátha in that wily daring and unscrupulous pursuit of a given end, which marked off his Sudra countrymen from the high-souled thorough-bred Rajputs of the north, he had long since gathered, alike from the folk-lore of his native hills and the religious surroundings of his boyhood, abundant fuel for his ambition, and all needful sanction for his most unscrupulous deeds. Patriotism and piety alike impelled him on that path of conquest, which was to end in the last great struggle for empire between the Maráthas and the countrymen of Lord Wellesley.

Before the end of 1655 Sivaji had laid violent hands on the hill-country as far south as Satara. During the three years of Aurangzib's viceroyalty, the wily Hindu amused his powerful rival with loyal offers which he took care not to fulfil. On Aurangzib's departure, Sivaji renewed his old game against Bijapur. An army sent to punish him under Afzul Khan was lured into the woody

* The Ghâts, or Siádri Hills, from 3,000 to 5,000 feet high, run along the western coast of India from the Tapti southwards, thirty or forty miles from the sea.

ravines near his strong fort of Partábgarh, where Afzul himself fell treacherously murdered by Sivaji at a peaceful interview, and his troops were slain or scattered by a sudden onset of Marátha bands.

Next year the bold outlaw, hard pressed by his pursuers, escaped by a clever trick from the fort of Panala after a close siege of four months. For several months defeat and danger dogged his steps. It was not in Sivaji, however, to despair. Fortune once more smiled on its daring follower; and before the end of 1662, with the aid of his father, Shahjí, he had won from the King of Bijapur a peace which left him master of the Kankan from Kalian to Goa, and of the hill country between the Bima and the Kistna, a dominion 250 miles long by nearly 100 broad. His troops at this time already numbered 7,000 horse and 50,000 foot.

Freed from one enemy, Sivaji presently dared the wrath of another, by raiding almost up to the walls of Aurangabad. In vain did Aurangzib's generals bear down upon the foe, who gave way only to renew his attacks. Driven out of Púna and shut up for a time in a neighbouring stronghold, Sivaji suddenly burst away from his pursuers, and with 4,000 light-horsemen swooped down upon Surat. The English and Dutch factories beat off the invader; but the rich native city fell into his hands, and its plunder was safely lodged in his fort of Raigarh.

The death of Shahjí about this time threw into his son's hands a large tract of country on the southern frontier of Bijápúr. Armed with fresh means for mischief, Sivaji began to worry the Moghals by sea. After capturing many of their ships and taking heavy ransom from rich pilgrims

* One of Sivaji's most daring exploits was the attempt to slay Aurangzib's uncle, Shaista Khan, who had taken up his quarters in Sivaji's house at Púna. Entering the house in disguise, he so nearly effected his purpose, that Shaista Khan lost two fingers in getting away, while his son and most of his guards were cut to pieces by Sivaji's followers.

bound for Mecca, he sailed at the head of a large fleet down the coast to Barsalór, in Kanára, 130 miles south of Goa. Enriched with the plunder of that once busy seaport, the royal freebooter—he had just assumed the title of rajah—made a fresh inroad into the Moghal dominions. By this time, however, the wrathful emperor had despatched a large army under Rajah Jai Singh against his irrepressible foe, who deemed it best to purchase present safety by surrendering most of the forts he had wrested from the Moghals, on condition of holding the remainder as a jágir from Aurangzib. Another claim which the emperor tacitly yielded, Sivaji's right to the "chauth," or a fourth part of the Bijapur revenues, became a fruitful pretext for many a future inroad into the heart of the Moghal empire.

Under the standard of his countryman Jai Singh, Sivaji's warriors fought so bravely in the next campaign against Bijapur, that Aurangzib in flattering terms invited Sivaji himself to his court. So little, however, did the emperor's treatment of his new guest, whom he slighted as a mere adventurer and hated as a foe to Islam, appear to tally with his former promises, that Sivaji, swallowing down his rage and disappointment, quietly prepared to escape from the snares which his wily host had seemingly begun to weave around him. His friends and followers once fairly out of Dehli, he himself, in the dirt and rags of a Hindu fakir, made his way by baffling marches to the Dakhan; and, nine months after his flight from the capital, was safely lodged in his own cyrie at Raigarh.

This period, which also marks the death of Shah Jahán, was perhaps the most prosperous of Aurangzib's long reign. Little Tibet and Chittagong had just been added to his dominions. His capital was thronged with envoys from Arabia, Persia, Abyssinia, and the Khan of the Uzbeks. The only clouds that darkened his prospects were the failure of his designs on Bijapur, and the re-

newed activity of Sivaji himself. Even before the latter's return to Raigarh, his lieutenants had won back several of their master's former strongholds, and Sivaji lost no time in bettering their example. Jai Singh's successor, Jeswant Singh, was bribed, or frightened into making peace with his Marátha opponent on terms which the emperor, for his own purposes, deemed it best to sanction.

Confirmed in his recent conquests, and endowed with a new domain in Berár, Sivaji turned his arms against Bijápúr and Golkonda to such purpose, that the rulers of both those states were glad to buy off their old assailant with the promise of a yearly tribute. Two years of peace passed by, which Sivaji devoted to the better government of his various conquests. Great in peace as in war, he ruled his subjects with a firm yet light hand, enforcing equal justice between high and low, choosing his agents from the ablest men in the land, and recruiting his treasury by fair and regular processes. His troops were highly paid and kept under the strictest discipline, and a well-ordered economy marked every branch of the public service.

Meanwhile the crafty emperor tried every art to lure into his hands the one foe whom he seems to have chiefly dreaded. Baffled at every turn by the wary Marátha, he at length gave orders for his forcible seizure. The peace thus broken, Sivaji at once forestalled his enemies by a series of well-aimed and telling blows. By a daring night attack a choice body of his mountaineers recovered the strong fort of Singarh, near Puna. One of his generals overran Khandesh, and levied the chaauth on that province. He himself once more plundered Surat, and Jinjera, on the Kankan coast, only escaped his clutches by placing itself under the protection of the Moghals. An army of 40,000 men, under Mohábat Khan, son of Shah Jahán's old ally, was sent against him; but half their number were routed in fair fight by Sivaji's warriors, whose mettle

had never before been tried against the Moghals in the open field.

For several years the war in the Dakhan languished, while Aurangzib was engaged in a series of struggles, now with the hill tribes of Afghánistán, anon with Hindu fanatics and Rajput princes nearer home. Not till 1675 did he succeed in patching up a peace with the unruly Khaibari and Yusufzai borderers, who had destroyed a Moghal army five years before. Next year the revolt of the Satnaramis, a sect of Hindu devotees who had seized Narnól and beaten back the troops at first sent against them, was quelled with heavy bloodshed and fearful massacres. For some years back the emperor had done his worst to estrange his Hindu subjects by a series of attacks on their religion, by forbidding the further employment of Hindus in the public service, and by lightening the burdens of the Mohammadans at their expense. At last the reimposition of the hated Jiziya, and the attempt to seize the widow and children of Rajah Jeswant Singh, filled up the measure of his offences, and relit the flames of war in Rajputana.

Overawed by the emperor's swift movements and powerful array, the Rána of Mewár, or Udaipúr, agreed to a peaceful compromise, which a few months later he appears to have set at naught. A long and uncertain struggle, embittered by mutual hate, by the ruthless ravages of the Moghals, and revived by the defection of Prince Akbar from his father's side, ended in a peace which enabled Aurangzib once more to turn his whole attention to the Dakhan. But the old ties which had held the Rajputs faithful to the empire for a hundred years past were rent for ever. Aurangzib's bigotry had undone Akbar's work, and the strife, thus hardly allayed by mutual concessions, blazed up ever and anon during the rest of Aurangzib's stormy reign.

Meanwhile Sívaji had not been idle. The death of the

King of Bijápúr tempted him to renew his inroads on a country ruled by a weak ministry, in the name of a child-heir. Ere long nearly all the Southern Kankan had fallen into his hands. In June 1674, he had himself crowned with all solemnity at Raigarh. Next year he was beating up the Moghals in Khandesh, Berar, and the heart of Gujarat. A well-planned alliance with Golkonda opened the way for his long and successful march across the Kistna by way of Kadapah, Madras, and Jinji to Vellór. Fort after fort, including Jinji and Vellor, fell to his arms, his father's domains in Maisór were brought under his rule, the chaunth was levied through the Carnatic, and his half-brother, Venkaji, had to pay over half his revenue for the peaceful retention of Tanjór. By the middle of 1678 Sivaji returned in triumph to Raigarh.

A few months afterwards Sivaji was on his way to help Bijápúr against its Moghal assailants, who were soon compelled, by his active efforts in their rear, to raise the siege of that city. The price of his timely succour was the cession of the Raichór Doab, between the Tumbadra and the Kistna, and of full sovereignty over all Shahji's domains in Bijápúr. In the very flush of these last successes the great Marátha leader succumbed to a sterner foe than any he had yet encountered. A mortal illness carried him off in 1680, in the fifty-third year of his age, in the midst of a career not often paralleled in the history of any country. From a mere leader of banditti he had fought his way in thirty-four years, twenty of which had been spent in braving the might of Aurangzib himself, into the very highest rank of Indian heroes, and the lordship of a kingdom strong enough to survive the onsets, and ere long to break in pieces, the empire of the Moghals.

CHAPTER VI.

AURANGZIB—(*continued.*)

SÍVAJÍ's eldest son, Sambají, had no sooner mounted his father's throne, than he took a cruel revenge on all who had favoured the cause of his half-brother, Rajah Rám. Dissolute as well as cruel, he left the management of state affairs to his worthless favourite, Kalusha, while he himself launched out into all manner of sensual excesses. From these he roused himself to renew his father's attacks upon Jinjéra; but the Sídís or Abyssinians, who held that city, forced him to raise the siege, defeated his fleet in the harbour of Bombay, and laid waste a part of his own dominions.

He had not long returned to his favourite pleasures, when the advance of a Moghal army under Prince Moazzim called him again into the field. Aurangzib himself was marching southwards at the head of a powerful array of horse, foot, and guns, followed by a train the most magnificent that even India had ever seen. The fine army which Moazzim led among the rocks and forests of the Kaukan was so worried on its march by active Maráthá horsemen, and so worn with hunger and disease, that only a disordered remnant emerged into the country eastward of the Gháts. Prince Azim was equally unsuccessful in his first attempt against Bijapur. While the emperor himself in the following year was preparing to move forward from Ahmadnagar, Sambají's horsemen scoured the country in his rear, sacked and burned the great city of Burhanpúr, overran Khandesh, and threatened

Bérár. Next year the same tactics were employed with like success against Gujarat; and Baroch, at the mouth of the Narbaddha, shared the fate of Burhánpúr.

The emperor, however, was not to be lightly turned aside from his long-cherished schemes of conquest in Southern India. Golkonda having in the meantime been heavily punished for daring to accept aid from Sambaji, he led his troops in person against the magnificent capital of the Adil-Shahi kings of Bijápúr. A strict blockade forestalled the more hazardous issues of a direct assault, and on the 15th October, 1686, Aurangzib was borne in triumph over the breach his guns had already made. Three years afterwards, the last Pathan king of Bijápúr died a prisoner in his conqueror's hands, and the great city which his sires had embellished with mosques and palaces of surpassing beauty was consigned to neglect and its fatal follower, decay.

Within a year after the fall of Bijápúr, Golkonda also had succumbed to the arms and treachery of Aurangzib. For seven months Abul Hasan, the last king of the Kutab-Shahi line, defended his capital with the courage of despair; but treason fought against him, and in September, 1687, he too passed away from his throne to a prison in the fort of Daulatabád.

No time was lost in continuing the work of conquest on which Aurangzib had set his heart. Before the end of 1688, his rule extended to the borders of Tanjór; and Sambaji, steeped in debauchery, saw one after another of his father's conquests fall away from his enfeebled grasp. At length he himself, in the midst of a drunken revel, was surprised by a body of Moghals, and borne off a prisoner to the imperial camp. Offered his life on condition of abjuring his creed, the proud son of Sivaji spurned the bribe in terms of scornful ridicule, for which death alone was deemed too light a punishment by the enraged Moghal. After his eyes had been destroyed by a hot

iron, and his tongue cut out for reviling the Prophet, he was at length beheaded along with his favourite, Kalúsha.

For a time it seemed as if all India lay helpless at the feet of Aurangzib. So wide an empire had never been swayed by any former sovereign of Hindustan. But to the last his hold upon the Dakhan remained insecure. Province after province, fort after fort, was wrested from the Maráthas, and the conquered people for the most part bowed their necks to the heavy burdens imposed by their new master. But the most peaceful among them chafed under the exactions of the imperial officers, and the levying of the Jiziya rankled deep in the hearts of the wretched Hindus. The disbanded soldiery of Bijápúr and Golkonda roamed the country in lawless troops, or offered their services to Marátha leaders. There was little either of peace or order in the new conquests. The spirit of the Maráthas also remained unbroken by passing defeats. After Sambaji's death and the capture of his infant son, his brother, Rajah Ram, upheld the fortunes of his line, first at Raigarh, and, when that place was about to fall, in the remote southern stronghold of Jinji. From that corner of the Carnatic he cheered the hearts and guided the movements of the Maráthas against their puzzled foes. His trusty lieutenants teased the Moghals with a kind of partisan warfare, in which the latter with their heavy accoutrements and luxurious habits were no match for the little, hardy, light-clad, ubiquitous horsemen, whose usual food was a cake of millet with now and then an onion, who slept bridle in hand under the open sky, and whose strong, active, well-trained little steeds were always ready for the work required of them. Careful to avoid a charge from the heavy Moghal horse, they spread in countless bands over the country, plundering every district which refused to buy them off, hanging on the flanks of Moghal armies, cutting off their convoys, swooping down upon detached

bodies of troops, and never losing a chance of doing their enemies the greatest possible harm.

To attack these hornets in their nests was a task which long baffled the best of the Moghal commanders. Not till after several years of bootless efforts did Jinji itself fall, in 1698, into the hands of Zulfikar Khan. Even then, however, the bold Rajah Rām renewed the struggle from his next place of shelter at Satara on the Western Ghats, whence he himself at the head of a great army carried his ravages as far eastward as Jālma, in Bérār, before the Moghals succeeded in driving him back. Soon after his own death in 1700, Satara itself with several other strongholds was captured, after a brave defence, by the troops of the persevering emperor. But in spite of frequent reverses, of dissensions among themselves, and of Aurangzib's amended plans for their suppression, the Maratha leaders rallied again and again round the standard of the manly-hearted Tara Bai, who, for some years, ruled her people in the name of her late husband's heir, the boy Sívají.

For the next few years Aurangzib tried hard to crush his daring foes in the Dakhan. But for every fort he took he paid heavily with the lives of his own men; fresh swarms of Maráthas worried him at every turn; floods, famines, and deadly fevers weakened his resources or slew his troops. The untamable Rajputs of Mewár and the rebellious Játs of Bhartpúr kept drawing his attention beyond the Narbadha, while a large force was sent against the Sikh insurgents near Multan. His own troops began to mutiny for want of regular pay from his failing treasury. The Maráthas in the meantime began to recover their lost forts; were ere long pouring into Malwa, and carrying fire and sword through Gujarat. They hovered like flies about the grand army which Aurangzib himself had once more led against them; they derided his very overtures for peace; and worse and ever worse shame and disaster dogged his final retreat to Ahmadnagar, whence he had

marched out twenty years before in all the pomp and glory of another Xerxes.

A few months later the aged emperor breathed his last in the city which sheltered the wrecks of his beaten army, after a reign of forty-nine, and a life of more than eighty-eight years. To the last he seems to have retained all the mental and much of the bodily vigour which marked his prime, and won him a foremost place among the princes of his own dynasty. His close attention to the smallest details of government may have been sharpened by his habitual distrust of all around him; but, in spite of the evils caused by his suspicious temper and narrow religious zeal, his people on the whole were well governed and lightly taxed.* One of his edicts forbade the raising of the land-rents on those who had improved their farms at their own expense. In anything that concerned the public welfare, from the tillage of the soil to the daily hearing of causes in the Hall of Audience, from the appointment of a clerk to the supervision of a great province, he displayed a keen and enlightened interest. His sense of justice failed him only when bigotry or personal ambition clouded his mental view. Merciless to his betrayed or defeated brethren, he pardoned and employed their followers, set his face as a rule against savage or severe punishments, and dealt mildly with all offences that touched neither his power nor his religion.

Of courtly manners, great personal courage, varied accomplishments, and some military skill, Aurangzib failed to win the love of his own children, or the zealous co-

* His revenue from all sources has been reckoned, with seeming accuracy, at seventy to eighty millions sterling, at the rate of two shillings the rupee. His land-revenue alone amounted to thirty-four and a-half millions nett, about double that of Akbar's latter years, and twelve millions higher than that raised by Shah Jahán. His total revenue exceeded that of Jahángír by about thirty millions. These vast sums, equal then to about twice their present value, appear to have been collected with little effort.

operation of his chief officers. Never was a prince of his intellectual mark so often cheated or so badly served.* His best-planned enterprises were marred by the fruits of his fatally suspicious temper. Trusting no one, he was trusted in his turn by none. His son Moazzim he kept in prison for seven years. His favourite son, Akbar, joined in succession the standards of his Rajput and Marátha foes. Another son, Kámbakhsh, was placed in arrest on a groundless charge of plotting with the Maráthas. His ablest surviving general, Zulfikar Khan, was driven by his worrying treatment to the verge of open rebellion. Even Prince Azim, best beloved of his sons after Akbar's defection, saw only treachery in his father's earnest-seeming efforts to retain his love.

Craft and cunning, indeed, were Aurangzib's favourite weapons alike in the council and the field. "To succeed by art," says one historian,† "threw honour upon himself; to subdue by power acquired to others fame." This preference for crooked ways may even have gained strength in such a nature from the undoubted warmth of his religious zeal. Hypocrisy and devoutness often go together, and the true key to his conduct may be found, we think, in the bigotry which brought Prince Dara to a cruel end, which estranged the hearts of the emperor's Hindu subjects, sanctioned the use of treachery against foes of a different creed, and blinded him to the fatal folly of crushing the old Mohammadan princes of the Dakhan instead of helping them to put down the rising Marátha power.‡

* Elphinstone's "India," book xi. chap. 4.

† Dow's "Hindustan," vol. iii.

‡ The kings of Bijápúr and Golkonda belonged, like the Persians, to the *Shiá* sect of Mohammadans, who acknowledge and almost worship Ali as the true successor to his father-in-law Mahomet in the leadership of the faithful, and as the first of the twelve Imáms or Pontiffs of his line. Aurangzib, like his forefathers and the bulk of Indian Mussulmans in these days, was a *Sunní* Mohammadan, one of those who ignore Ali's murdered son Hosén as a true Khalíf. To this sect belong the Turks of the Turkish Empire.

A scholar and a poet, he banished poets from his court, abolished the office of royal historiographer, issued edicts against music and dancing, and turned every singer and musician out of the palace precincts. If his private morals were in keeping with the austere bent of his religious habits, he succeeded in uprooting the last traces of that wise and generous policy on which Akbar had sought to lay fast the foundations of the Moghal rule. If he neither drank, gambled, nor dallied with other than his lawful wives, he restored the old lunar year of the Mohamadans, maddened the Hindus with all kinds of petty persecutions, placed new weapons in the hands of his Marátha foes, and paved the way for the disruption of that broad empire which his own arms had helped to build up.

Two years after Aurangzib's accession Charles II. mounted the throne of England. Among his first acts was the granting of a charter to the united East India Company, empowering them to make peace and war with the natives of India, to administer justice, and to expel interlopers from their ground. A year later, in 1662, the island of Bombay, with its noble harbour, formed part of the dowry which the Princess Catherine of Braganza brought over to her English husband. After six years of profitless possession Charles II. transferred the island to the East India Company, under whose sway it was destined to become the fitting capital of Western India, and the seat of a trade exceeding thirty millions sterling. In 1676 the Company were allowed to set up a mint in their new possession, which had already been successfully defended against the Dutch. Nine years afterwards it displaced Surat as their chief station in the East Indies and the seat of the Western Presidency. In 1686 the President of Bombay was declared Governor-General of India. By that time ships of all nations had begun to anchor in the harbour of his new capital, and the Company's Indian

trade had risen to a hundred *lakhs* of rupees, or more than a million sterling.

Meanwhile, in Bengal things had not gone smoothly between the English and the Moghals. With the French, Dutch, and Danish factories on the Húghli, the English agents had no cause of quarrel. But the alleged exactions of the Moghals, and their Viceroy's refusal to let the English Company's servants fortify the mouth of the Húghli against interlopers from England, provoked or became the pretext for a hostile movement against the masters of Bengal. In 1686 an English fleet sailed up the Húghli, on its way to Chittagong. A quarrel between some English soldiers and the native police brought on a regular engagement, in which the natives were worsted. The English admiral opened fire on the town of Húghli. An attempt to treat on the part of the Nawab of Bengal came to nothing. At last Job Charnock, the chief of the English factory, withdrew to Chatanatti, the future site of the city which has since become the chief seat of the English power in India.

Followed thither by the Nawab's army, Charnock led his followers to the swamps of Hijali, an island at the mouth of the Húghli. Here in the next few months half of his little garrison had perished from disease, and the rest were far on the road to a like issue, when matters began to take a more hopeful turn. Charnock was allowed to re-enter Chatanatti, and peace was all but re-established on the old footing; but Captain Heath, who had just arrived with a fresh fleet from England, disallowed the treaty, and Charnock, with all his countrymen in Bengal, sailed down the Húghli for Madras. On its way thither the English fleet bombarded Balasór, and tried in vain to effect a landing at Chittagong.

Meanwhile, on the western side of India the Company had not gained much by the aggressive policy which its chairman, Sir Josiah Child, thought fit to pursue. The

seizure of pilgrim ships on their way to Mecca was requited by the capture of the English factory at Surat, by a partially successful attack upon Bombay, and by the expulsion of the English from nearly all their settlements in Southern India. At last, in 1690, the Governor of Bombay was glad to renew the peace so rashly broken. His envoys returned from Bijapur with concessions easily granted by an emperor fully alive to the benefits of a growing trade with the foreigner; and Charnock once more sailed up the Húghli to hoist his country's flag in the little hamlet of Chatanatti.

In 1695, three years after the death of Charnock,* his successor bought from the Moghals the three villages of Chatanatti, Govindpúr, and Calcutta, out of which the modern Calcutta was to arise. To fortify their new possession was now the first thought of its owners, whose dreams of empire had already begun to mould their general policy, and whose agents had some years before been exhorted to look after the increase of their revenue at least as carefully as the growth of their trade.† It was not long before their wish was gratified. During the height of a rebellion led by one of the old Pathan chiefs of Orissa, the French, Dutch, and English merchants on the Húghli got leave from the hard-pressed governor of Bengal to put their several factories in a state of defence. Fortified works sprang up accordingly around the new settlement of Calcutta, and the flag of England was soon floating above the ramparts of Fort William, so called in honour of William III.

* He was buried at Barrackpore, which the natives still call after him "Achának."

† "The increase of our revenue," wrote the Directors in 1689, "is the subject of our care as much as our trade; 'tis that must maintain our force when twenty accidents may interrupt our trade; 'tis that must make us a nation in India; without that we are but as a great number of interlopers, united by His Majesty's charter, fit only to trade where nobody of power thinks it their interest to oppose us."

In the second year of the 18th century, another success—if the triumph of a monopoly may be so considered—befel the Company in its contest with younger rivals. For years past a host of “interlopers,” licensed and unlicensed, had vexed the souls of the old chartered merchants by glutting the home markets with goods not seldom won by deeds of sheer piracy. The agents of rival companies intrigued against each other at home and abroad, their quarrels sometimes bursting into open warfare, while pirates like Captain Kidd* preyed impartially on all ships coming from India. At length the influence of the oldest company prevailed with the English Parliament to put an end to a rivalry so fraught with evil or unpleasant issues. In 1702 the chief of the rival companies were joined by royal charter into one “United Company of Merchants trading to the East.” A few years later Calcutta itself, under the name of Fort William, became the seat of a new presidency. At this time, and for many years afterwards, the Company’s servants, from the president to the lowest clerk, were free to eke out their small salaries with the profits which could then be gleaned from their private trade; profits so handsome, that ere long even the junior servants could sit down to dinner with music playing, and ride out in a carriage and four.†

* William Kidd, by birth a New-Yorker, had been sent out by William III. to cruise against pirates; but ere long turned pirate himself. At last he was captured, tried in England for murder, and hanged.

† The president’s salary was then fixed at £300 a-year, while his eight members of council drew £10, the junior merchants £30, the factors £15, and the writers £6 a-year.

CHAPTER VII.

SUCCESSORS OF AURANGZÍB—1707-1740.

IN the will he left behind him, Aurangzib had assigned the northern half of his wide dominions to his eldest son, Moazzim, with the title of emperor, and Dehli for his capital. Of the remainder, Azim was to rule from Agra all but the kingdoms of Bijápúr and Golkonda, which were reserved for Kámbakhsh. Prince Azim, however, took advantage of his brother's absence in Kabul to assume the sovereignty of all India. But it was not long before his pretensions and his life were put out together in a bloody battle fought near Agra between him and Prince Moazzim. The subsequent defeat and death of his youngest brother, Kámbakhsh, freed Moazzim from all present rivals, and left him, in fact as well as name, sole head of the Moghal empire, under the title of Bahádur Shah.

In the last-named victory, won at Haidarábád, a body of Maráthas fought on the conqueror's side, in fulfilment of a pledge obtained from Saho, Sambaji's lineal heir, on his release from the long, if mild, captivity enforced by the politic Aurangzib. Saho's gratitude to the Moghals seems to have survived the fall of Prince Azim, who had been first to set him free. At any rate, he transferred his services to Bahádur Shah, whose help enabled him to set up at Satára a rival sway to that of the regent Tara Bhai. A further treaty empowered him to receive the chaunh in the name of the new emperor, through the hands of Moghal officers alone.

Freed from anxiety on the side of the Marathas, the emperor turned his arms against the refractory princes of

Márwár and Jaipúr. Ere long, however, a new source of trouble drew his attention away from Rájputána to Sirhind. Granting the Rájput chiefs almost as easy terms as the Rána of Udaipúr had won already, Bahádur Shah hastened to check the growing boldness of the Sikhs, who, early in the 17th century, had been driven by Moslem bigotry to employ worldly weapons in aid of the religious movement begun by Nának more than a century before.* In the days of Guru Govind, the tenth high priest in succession to Nának, and grandson of Har Govind, who had taken up arms to avenge his father's murder, the process of development, so common in like cases, from a body of religious reformers into a nation of armed fanatics had well-nigh become complete. From the highlands of the Panjáb the Sikh warriors issued to try their strength anew against their Mohammadan persecutors, but in vain. After a long struggle with Aurangzib's soldiers, Guru Govind became a lonely wanderer in the Dakhan, and fell at last by the hand of a private foe near the monastery he had founded at Nándór.

To his old followers, however, remained a legacy of hatred and revenge, which a new leader, named Bandu, turned ere long to memorable account. Once more the Sikhs broke out from their highland shelter, to ravage Sirhind with fire and sword, and to repay, in the slaughter of *mullahs* and the destruction of mosques, the wrongs and insults which they and their fathers had suffered at Moslem hands. At length the emperor himself went forth to confront the danger which his officers on the spot had failed to put down. The Sikhs were driven back into the hills, and Bandu himself had a narrow escape from capture in the stronghold whose fall, after a brave resistance, closed for that year a bootless struggle against overpowering odds.

A few months afterwards the emperor himself died at

* See book i. chap. 2

Lahor, in the fifth year of his reign and the seventieth of his age. With him the glory of the house of Babar may be said to have departed. A fight for empire between his sons ended in the triumph of the eldest, Jahāndar Shah, a worthless debauchee, who began by slaying all his nearest kinsmen, and, after six months of costly dalliance with fiddlers and mistresses, perished in his turn at the hands of his nephew, Farokhsir. Installed as emperor at Dehli by the arms of two Saiyid* brothers, Hosēn Ali and Abdullah Khan, that nephew began his reign with the murder of Aurangzib's great general, Zulfikar Khan, the last emperor's able but overweening vizier.

After a few more murders, Farokhsir proceeded to abet some new favourites in plotting mischief against his Saiyid benefactors. Ajit Singh, the Rajah of Marwar, was secretly encouraged to hold out to the last against Hosēn Ali, who had been sent to subdue him. This plot baffled by the Rajah's timely acceptance of the peace offered by his opponent on liberal terms, the emperor next schemed to get rid of his powerful servant by making him viceroy of the Dakhan, in the room of Dāud Khan. The latter, too faithfully obeying his secret orders from Dehli, fell fighting at the head of his troops on the field which they for a moment had nearly won.

The same arts were employed by the emperor in the war which Hosēn Ali had to take up against the Marāthas. Once more, however, the wary Saiyid trumped his master's hand by concluding peace with Rajah Sāho and his able minister, Balaji Vishwanāth---a peace which left them masters of all Sivaji's former conquests in Southern India, and acknowledged the Marātha claim to chauth upon the whole of the Dakhan. Sāho's rival, Sambaji, the son of Tāra Bhai, was also acknowledged as Rajah of Kolāpūr. For these concessions, Sāho agreed to pay a

* They were sprung from a family of descendants of Mahomet who had settled in the town of Bāra.

yearly tribute, and to furnish for the emperor's service a body of 15,000 horse.

Meanwhile Bandu, the Sikh leader, had once more led his armed fanatics into the plains between the Satlaj and the Janna. In the midst, however, of their destroying career, they were checked, routed, scattered, hunted down by the victorious Moghals. Hundreds of their leading men were borne in triumph through the streets of Dehli, to the place where each in turn was beheaded, scorning to save his life by changing his creed. Bandu himself, after seeing his own child butchered before his eyes, was torn to pieces with hot pincers, exulting in the midst of his tortures at the vengeance which heaven at his hands had wreaked upon the wicked.

Unwarned by past failures, Farokhsir renewed his plottings against the Saiyids, one of whom, Abdullah, held the post of grand vizier. Some of his chief nobles would gladly have helped him to get rid of the two men whose greatness eclipsed their own; but the emperor's wavering policy broke up the league, and while he was yet dallying with a new favourite, Hosén Ali, with 10,000 Maráthas horse, marched up from the Dakhan to his brother's rescue. The frightened emperor soon found himself at the mercy of men who had small reason to show him any. A tumult in the streets of Dehli sealed his fate. Dragged from his hiding-place to a prison, he was ere long put to death; two of his young kinsmen, raised in turn to the throne, died of consumption in the course of a few months; but at last a healthier successor turned up in Prince Roshan Akhtar, who took the name of Mohammad Shah.

The new reign began stormily. Risings in Allahabad, the Panjab, and elsewhere, might be quelled with small trouble by force or cunning; Chín Kilich Khan, the future Nizám of the Dakhan, was not so easily put down. Of a good Turkish family, the son of a favourite officer of Aurangzib, he himself had risen under the same emperor

to high military command in the Dakhan, with the distinctive titles of Asof Jah and Nizám-ul-Mulk. As governor of the Dakhan for a few months after the death of Zulfikar Khan, he held the Maráthas in check until Hosen Ali came to supplant him. Transferred to the government of Malwa, Chín Kilich waited for the moment when his turn might come to triumph over the hateful Saiyid pair, whose influence at court still worked unfavourably for his own ambitious ends.

It was not long that he had to wait. By the middle of 1720 he had crossed the Narbadha, planted his standard on the fort of Asirghar, and defeated an army sent against him near Burhánpúr. Another victory at Bállapúr in Berár brought Hosen Ali himself into the field. On his march southwards, however, the Saiyid fell by an assassin's dagger; his brother Abdullah, defeated in battle by the emperor he sought to dethrone, remained a prisoner in the hands of Mohammad Shah; and ere long Chín Kilich Khan, already master of the Dakhan, re-entered Dehli as vizier.

But the pleasure-loving emperor and his dissolute friends soon tired of the company of the grave old statesman to whom they chiefly owed their deliverance from the Saiyid yoke. They sent him to displace the governor of Gujarat, who forthwith took up arms in his own defence. Chín Kilich put down the rebellion and added Gujarat also to his rule. His return to Dehli exposed him to fresh embroilments with the court. At length he threw up his post and retired to the Dakhan, where Mobáriz Khan, governor of Haidarábád, was secretly encouraged to withstand him. Once more the arts of the Dehli cabal were foiled by the defeat and death of their new tool; and their intended victim was free to fix at Haidarábád the seat of a sovereignty which his successors have wielded to this hour. It is true that he covered the seizure of independent power by occasional gifts to his lord paramount;

but the dismemberment of the empire had already begun.

It began indeed three years earlier, when Ajit Singh, the Rana of Mārwar or Jodpur, made up for his expulsion from Gujarat by wresting the Rajput province of Ajmir from the Moghals. If the Jāts of Bhartpūr were once more quelled by the loyal Rajah Jai Singh of Ambér, more worthily remembered for his great love of science than for his success as a ruler,* the Marāthas were already gaining ground in Malwa and Gujarat. On the death of King Sāho's able Pēshwa, Bālajī Vishwanath, in 1720, the sceptre he had wielded in the name of his puppet sovereign passed into the strong hands of his yet abler son, Bājī Rao. With a keen eye for the inward weakness of the Moghal empire, the new Pēshwa soon carried the Marātha arms across the Narbadha. "Let us strike," he said, "the withered trunk, and the branches will fall of themselves." His troops ravaged Malwa and levied chauth in Gujarat. Chín Kilich Khan himself had to back out of his craftily planned alliance with the rival Marātha house of Kolapūr. The head of that house, Saniba, was forced to acknowledge Sāho's right to all the Marātha country except that which immediately surrounded his own capital. A great Marātha chief, Dabāri, who took up arms to depose the Peshwa, was himself defeated and slain by his skilful opponent, and Gujarat itself lay helpless at the conqueror's feet. Pilajī Gaikwar, whose descendants still reign at Baroda, was set to govern the conquered province in the name of Dabāri's infant son. Two of Bājī Rao's lieutenants, Malhar Rao Holkar and Ranajī Sindia, founders of still existing dynasties at Indór and Gwalior, were already engaged in the work of wrest-

* Jai Singh, Rajah of Dhundar, a descendant of Akbar's friend and Jahāngir's father-in-law, Bhagwandās, was the greatest Hindu astronomer since Aryabhata. He erected observatories at Delhi, Matta, Banāras, Ujan, and Jaspūr, his new capital, founded by him in 1728. From him is descended the present dynasty of Jaspūr.

ing Málwa from the Moghals. In vain did the wily master of Haidarábád renew his old intrigues against his formidable neighbours. Loyalty to a tottering throne, filled by an ungrateful sovereign, formed no part of his political creed, nor had old age diminished his habitual caution. A compact formed between him and the Maráthas in 1731 left the latter free to push their conquests north of the Narbadha, so long as they forbore from harrying the subjects of the Nizám-ul-Mulk.

The murder of Pilaji Gaikwar by the patricide son of Ajit Singh brought fresh swarms of Maráthas into Gujarat. Driven out of the province he had hoped to reconquer for the Moghals, Abhi Singh, the murderer, retired into his own country. Ere long Málwa also was quietly surrendered by its governor, Jai Singh, into the hands of Sáo's Peshwa. Grateful for help received from that quarter, the Rajah of Bundalkhand had meanwhile placed the Maráthas in possession of his own domains around Jhánsi, on the Jamna.

Still hungering for fresh conquests, the daring Brahman kept making fresh demands on the emperor, who for some time could see no escape from further annoyance save in concessions which only whetted the greed of his insatiable foes. At length Chin Kilich, repenting of his recent quietude, came forward to the rescue of his nominal master; while Sádát Khan, the Persian nawáb or governor of Audh, marched forth to defend the empire on its north-eastern side. In spite of the check which Holkar's light horse received from the Nawáb on their raid towards Agra, Bájí Rao determined to show the emperor that he was still in Hindustan. Passing round the flank of a Moghal army encamped near Mattra, his swift-moving squadrons suddenly appeared before the gates of Dehli itself. After plundering the suburbs, beating back a sally from the city walls, and filling the citizens with utter dismay, they rode off again for the Dakhan, laden with rich spoils, before Chin

Kilich, the emperor's new vizier, had time to intercept them.

In the first days of the next year the aged ruler of the Dakhan, at the head of the strong and well-appointed army which he had led forth from Dehli, awaited near Bopál, on the Málwa border, the approach of Báji Rao. But in the course of a few weeks his own position in the midst of active foes, who laid waste the country, cut off his supplies, and assailed his outposts, became so perilous, that he could neither advance nor retreat without heavy loss. Attempting the latter alternative, he was soon compelled to save himself from worse misfortunes by a treaty which assigned to the Peshwa the whole of the country between the Chambal and the Narbadha, besides pledging the emperor to the payment of fifty lakhs of rupees, or half-a-million sterling of our money.

But a yet more cruel blow was now impending over the Moghal power. In 1722 Hosén Shah, the last of the Safavi kings of Persia, laid his crown at the feet of Mahmúd, the Khilji chief of Kandahar, whose victorious Afghans had for six months been closely besieging the Persian monarch in his own capital of Isfahán. On the death of Mahmúd two years afterwards, the crown thus won by him at the sword's point devolved upon his nephew Ashraf, whose wars with the Turks and Russians were followed by a sharper struggle with an enemy nearer home. His new assailant, Nádir Kúli, was the son of a Turkish shepherd in Khorásán. Beginning, like Sivaji, as a robber chief, he won his way to the leadership of an army which delivered his native country from the Abdáli Afghans, drove Ashraf out of Isfahán, fought successfully against the Turks, and set Tahmasp, the exiled son of Hosén, upon his father's throne.

Ere long, however, the new king had to make way for his abler protector, who began his reign by conquering Afghánistán. The internal weakness of the Moghal empire then turned his thoughts to the country beyond the Indus ;

and a joint letter* from Chin Kiliéh and Sadat Khan is said by the native chroniclers to have spurred him on to the cheap and alluring task of heightening his own renown by the plunder of a defenceless people. On one plea or another he set forth from Kabul in the autumn of 1738, passed safely through the mountains that barred his way, crossed the Indus, and easily defeated near Karnál the troops which Mohammad Shah had hastily brought up from Dehli to withstand him. Betrayed by his own officers, the luckless emperor sued in person for such mercy as the conqueror might deign to show. In the conqueror's train he returned to his own capital to collect the ransom which Nadir Shah was willing to accept.

But the worst for him and his people was yet to come. Two days after his return to Dehli, the rumoured death of his conqueror roused the citizens to sudden fury. They fell upon the few thousand Persian troops scattered about the city. The cowardly nobles made no attempt to stay the slaughter of those whom they had shrunk from facing in the field. Nádír Shah himself became a mark for stones and bullets as he rode next morning through the streets where lay the bodies of his murdered followers. One of his favourite officers fell dead by his side. Provoked beyond bearing by this last blow, he let loose his impatient soldiers on the raging crowd. In the next few hours the massacres of Timur's day were renewed within hearing, if not under the eyes, of Dehli's new master. Thirty thousand people are supposed to have perished, before Nádír Shah, moved perhaps by the emperor's humble entreaties, | ordered his obedient warriors to hold their hands.

* Elphinstone doubts the truth of this story, which Mr. Keene, on the contrary, believes (Keene's "Moghul Empire," p. 36).

† According to Dow, Mohammad Shah himself, followed by his chief nobles, entered the Mosque of Roshan-ud-daula, in the Chandni Chauk, the Regent Street of Dehli, where Nádír was sitting in gloomy silence, and with tears besought him to spare the Emperor's subjects; whereupon he stopped the massacre.

It remained to continue the work of spoliation already begun. Every man of the least wealth or mark in the city, from the emperor and his nobles down to the smaller tradesmen, had to contribute his share to the general ransom. Every house was ransacked for hidden treasure. Torture was employed in aid of threats. Numbers of the people died of ill-usage or slew themselves to avoid it. Among the latter appears to have been the traitor Sâdat Khan himself.* The native officers who had to collect the plunder filled their own pockets with untold sums at the cost of their helpless countrymen. Heavy fines were also drawn from the provinces. After two months employed on a quest so fruitful, the Persian conqueror marched out of Dehli laden with treasure in coin, jewels, and goods, whose value may have amounted to thirty crores of rupees, or more than thirty millions of our money. Conspicuous among his plunder was the famous peacock throne of Shah Jahan, the chiefest jewels in which were, more than a century after, to become the prize of a power at that time owning but a few square miles of Indian ground.

A year after Nâdir's return homewards, Baji Rao died in the midst of fresh plans for pursuing the work interrupted by the Persian monarch. Besides his northern forays, he had for some time past been engaged in warfare with the Portuguese, with the Sidis or Abyssinians of Jinjera, and with Angria, the pirate lord of Kolâba, near Bombay. The Portuguese his brother Chinnaji drove out of Salsette, Bassein, and other places in the Kankan; but the Sidis fought him on pretty equal terms, and the war with Angria, in spite of English aid, lingered on after the

* The story which Elphinstone quotes only to reject, is that Nâdir sent for Chîn Kilich and Sâdat Khan, and reviling them for their treachery to their king, spat on their beards: a disgrace which only death could wipe out. Chîn Kilich made a show of poisoning himself, and Sâdat, deceived by his clever acting, took real poison and died. Whether the story be a myth or no, however, Sâdat certainly killed himself on account of Nâdir's behaviour towards him.

Peshwa's death. Nor had Bájí Rao succeeded in his latest essay against the Dakhan, where Chin Kilich's brave son, Nasir Jang, had vigorously upheld the cause of his absent father. On the whole, however, in spite of partial failures abroad and dissensions among his own countrymen, the deceased Peshwa's daring policy had raised the Marátha power to a height whence nothing but the incurable folly of his successors could afterwards bring it down.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE MOGHAL EMPIRE TO THE BATTLE OF PÁNIPAT

BESIDES the plunder of a populous city and a broad province, Nadir Shah annexed the whole of the Moghal dominions in Kabul, Sindh, and the Panjab within the Indus. To the Moghal emperor he left a dishonoured crown, an empty treasury, and the wrecks of an empire already breaking to pieces. The closing years of Mohammad's reign were years of growing disorder, of ever-darkening prospects for the House of Bábar. Mohammad's court was rent with factions and filled with intrigues. Province after province slipped out of his feeble grasp. The princes of Rájputána disowned their allegiance with impunity. The Marátha Gaikwar reigned in Gujarat. A bold adventurer, Mohábat Jang, best known as Alivardi Khan, had bribed the Court of Dehli to sanction his seizure of Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa. Saikar Jang, the son of Sádát Khan, governed Andh as the equal rather than the servant of his liege lord. In Southern India remained not a foot of ground which the emperor could henceforth call his own, if his nominal lieges chose to deny the claim.

The very quarrels of Marátha leaders brought him no advantage. In return for help received from Bálaaji Rao, son and successor of the last Peshwa, against the daring raids of his rival Ragují Bhósla from Bérár into Bengal, the emperor was fain to grant him full possession of Malwa as a hereditary fief. A few months afterwards Bálaaji gave a new impulse to his countrymen's greed for

plunder and conquest by granting his late opponent the right to levy chauth on Bengal and Bahár, if not on provinces yet further north. Thus free to push his own fortunes, Raguji carried his arms and ravages into the heart of Bengal, to such purpose that neither the skill nor the soldiership of Alivardi Khan could long hold out against Marátha energy, backed by a mutiny among his best soldiers, a body of Afghans under Mustafa Khan. The treacherous murder of Báskar Pandit, the Marátha general, by the Moghal Viceroy himself, was requited six years later by the cession to Raguji of half Orissa, and a promise to pay chauth for Bengal.

If Alivardi had looked for help to the aged Viceroy of the Dakhan, he had looked in vain. After leaving his eldest son Gházi-ud-din as Vizier at Delhi, Chin Kilich on his return to Haidarábád had been for some time engaged in suppressing the revolt of his son Násir Jang. That misguided prince brought to his senses in 1742, his father's attention had next been called to the Carnatic, which one of Raguji's officers, Morári Rao, was employed in wresting from its Moghal Nawáb. The old Tartar's presence at the head of a large army brought the Maráthas to a timely compromise; Morari Rao retaining Gúti and some other districts, while the rest of the country was shared between Chin Kilich's grandson, Mozaffar Jang, and his faithful servant Anwar-ud-din. In 1748 Chin Kilich himself, the wily and ambitious Nizám-ul-Mulk, died at Burhánpúr at the age of seventy-seven; and his sons in the midst of their own quarrels could pay little heed to the affairs of remote Bengal.*

His death followed but a few weeks after that of Mohammad Shah himself, whose path had latterly been cheered by a victory gained over Afghan insurgents in

* According to some accounts, Chin Kilich died at the fabulous-seeming age of a hundred and four. Elphinstone's estimate, however, is probably much nearer the mark.

Rohilkhand,* and later still by his son Ahmad's defeat of Ahmad Khan, the formidable leader of a new invasion from Kandahar. An Abdali Afghan, sprung from the sacred Sadduzai branch of his tribe, Ahmad Khan had no sooner fought his way to the headship of the Afghan race and the mastery of Sindh, than he prepared to lead a small but resolute army across the Panjab into Upper Hindustan. His skilful strategy baffled all attempts to oppose him until, in March 1748, his soldiers found the Moghals under Prince Ahmad strongly entrenched near the city of Sirhind. A series of hard fights, continued for ten days, ended in the Abdali's repulse with heavy slaughter; and Dehli for a few years longer was saved from further suffering.

A month after his victory Prince Ahmad mounted his father's throne, with Safdar Jang of Audh for his vizier. It was not long before the latter, unable to cope by himself with a new Rohilla rising on a formidable scale, appealed for aid to the Jats and Maráthas in the provinces skirting the right bank of the Jamma. With their help the invaders were driven back into Rohilkhand; but this success was more than balanced by a Moghal defeat in Márwár, and by the conquest of the Paújáb by Ahmad Shah the Abdali, or, as he now styled himself, the Duráni, king of Afghanistan. The defeat of the Rohillas moreover placed new weapons of attack in the hands of Sindia and Holkar, who were free to ravage Rohilkhand under the cloak of levying their favourite black-mail.

Yet darker troubles awaited the luckless emperor. The streets of Dehli became the scene of a civil war between the vizier and his new rival Ghazi-ud-din, grandson of Chin Kilich and son of the late vizier. For six months the battle-cries of Persian and Moghal, Shia and Sunni, resounded through the city. Holkar and his Maráthas

* The Rohillas were a colony of Yusufzai and other Afghan tribes, which had lately conquered the country east of the Ganges, from Audh up to the Himálayas.

fought for the Moghal leader against their Hindu countrymen the Játs, whose Rajah, Suraj Mal, had espoused the cause of Safdar Jang. At length the latter withdrew from a fruitless struggle into his own province beyond the Ganges. The emperor, however, soon wearied of the burden he had brought upon his own shoulders, when he plotted with the youthful grandson of Chin Kilieh against the murderer of his favourite eunuch. In the midst of an effort to shake off his new tyrant, he fell into the hands of Gházi-ud-din himself, who straightway put out his eyes, and set up as emperor in his stead a son of Jahandar Shah, under the title of Alamgar II.

Meanwhile the new Marátha Peshwa, Balaji Rao, had been steadily building up the fabric of Marátha power with the mingled boldness, cunning, and perseverance of his caste and family. In 1719, the long reign of Rajah Saho, the grandson of Sivaji, the prisoner of Aurangzib, the patron or the puppet of three successive Peshwas, came to an end; and Rajah Rám II., grandson, real or pretended, of his dead namesake and the still living Tara Bhai, was installed as puppet sovereign in his place. While the titular heir of Sivaji held at Satára his phantom court, the Peshwa himself at Púna wielded the virtual sovereignty of all Máharashtra, and his orders were obeyed alike by Sindia on the Chambal and by Raguji Bhósla beyond the Kistna.

In spite of the intrigues of Tara Bhai, the turbulence of his cousin Sedásheo Bhao, and the part he himself played in the affairs of the Dakhan, Balaji Rao, with equal courage, skill, and good fortune, held his triumphant way through all snares and over all hindrances, until, by the time of Ahmad Shah's deposition, he had made the Marátha name a terror or a beacon throughout all India. In the fatal strife for power between the sons of Chin Kilieh, he contrived not only to baffle Salábat Jang and his French ally, Bussy, but to obtain the cession of West

Bérar from Salábat's eldest brother, Gházi-ud-din. In concert with the English Commodore James, his fleets in 1755 aided in capturing Angria's pirate stronghold of Savandrug, which was forthwith made over to him in exchange for his seaport town of Bankót.* To him also in the following year was transferred the old Marátha fort and town of Giriah, which the redoubtable Tulaji Angria had vainly defended against Admiral Watson and his colleague Colonel Clive, already a soldier of mark in the service of the East India Company.

A year earlier Balaji's brother Ragoba† had cleared away the last relic of Moghal rule in Gujarát by the capture of the old Pathan city of Ahmadabad. Sharing the rich spoils with his lieutenant, Damaji Gaikwar, the conqueror carried his arms, and successfully asserted the Marátha claim to chauth against the Hindu chiefs of Rajputána and Bhartpúr. In 1751 his troops set forth from Málwa on their way to Dehli at the prayer of the ruffianly Ghazi-ud-din the younger.

That luckless city had just been taken and despoiled by a second Nadir, in the person of Ahmad Shah, the Duráni, who had thus revenged himself for the Moghal Vizier's recent raid into Lahór. No sooner had he turned his back on Dehli, than Ghazi-ud-din besought the Maráthas to aid him in getting rid of Ahmad's deputy, the able and honest Rohilla chief, Najib-ud-daula. Under the wing of his new ally he re-entered Dehli in triumph, and Najib-ud-daula retired northwards to his own domain near Saháranpúr. Emboldened by this success, Ragoba a few months afterwards crossed the Satlaj, drove the Afghans out of the Panjab, and set up a governor of his own choosing at Lahór. One of his generals overran Rohilkhand. To crown all, his cousin "the Bhao," as Sedasheo Bhao was

* A town in the Ratnagíri district, sixty-eight miles south of Bombay, at the mouth of the river Savítri.

† His proper name was Ragunáth Ráo.

commonly called, was entering on a career of victory in the Dakhan, which began with the taking of Ahmadnagar, and ended in 1760 with the conquest of half the country ruled by Ghāzi-ud-din's successor, Salābat Jang.

The Maratha power had now reached its highest point. From the Indus and the Himālayas down to the borders of Travankor, Bāljī levied the Marātha blackmail, or ruled the country through his own officers. The seed which Sivaji had sown a century earlier, had sprung up into a noble tree, whose branches, like the banyan-tree of the country, had struck fresh roots, until the single trunk had multiplied into a mighty forest overshadowing the whole peninsula, and threatening, as it grew, to kill off all rival growths. While the Hindu genius for civil government found free play in the countries which had been fairly brought under the rule of Brahman Pēshwas, the old swarms of mounted freebooters had been strengthened or replaced by regular armies of horse and foot, well paid, fairly disciplined, and equipped with guns, not wholly useless against ordinary foes.

But the shadow of a great disaster was already creeping over the Pēshwa's path. The pride that goes before destruction impelled his cousin, the Bhao, to supplant Ragoba as Captain-General of the Marātha armies in Hindustan. Meanwhile, a Maratha force in Rohilkhand had been driven back across the Ganges by Shujā-ud-daula, the Nawāb of Audh. Ahmad Shah, the Durani, had once more issued from the Afghan hills to punish the bold invaders of his son's domains in the Panjab, and to drive the horsemen of Sindia and Holkar across the Chambal. The murder of Alamgir, by order of the blood-stained Ghāzi-ud-din, left Dehli without an emperor, but failed to arrest for a moment the issues dreaded by his murderer. Ahmad Shah marched on towards the Moghal capital, and an Afghan garrison ere long held the city in his name.

The Maráthas on their side were not idle. A mighty gathering of Rajputs, Játs, and Maráthas swept up the country to complete the downfall of Mohammadan rule, and drive the Durani across the Indus. Dehli itself was taken and once more despoiled by the soldiers of the Bhao, who would hardly wait to lead them against the Afghans before proclaiming Bálaji's son, Wiswás Rao, Emperor of Hindustan. Puffed up with his past successes and an overweening self-conceit, the Marátha leader gave no heed to the cautious counsels of his Jat ally, Suraj Mal, but led forth his whole array of horse, foot, and guns, to attack an army of about equal strength commanded by the foremost general of his day.

The first hard blow in the coming strife for empire between the Mohammadans and the Hindus was virtually struck when Ahmad Shah plunged into the swollen Jamna above Dehli, and by fording or swimming landed his troops on the other side in the face of their astonished foes. Entrenching himself on the ill-omened field of Panipat, the Bhao awaited an attack from the foe he had learned too late to value rightly. For two months the armies which were to decide the fate of India lay near each other, neither daring to move bodily out of its entrenchments, while outlying parties skirmished daily together, and flying columns beat up each other's quarters, cut off the enemy's convoys, or scoured the country for supplies. It needed all Ahmad's coolness and strength of will to curb the impatience of his Moghal and Rohilla officers, who were slow to see the wisdom of this long delay. But the far-seeing Afghan bade them sleep in peace, and trust all to a leader who knew what he was doing. "I will take care," he said, "that no harm befalls you," and he kept his word.*

* "His orders were obeyed like destiny," says the chronicler Kási Rai; "no man daring to hesitate or delay one moment in executing them."

At last the hour drew near when his patient watchfulness was to reap its due reward. Hemmed in on every side, their supplies cut off, their host of followers already starving, their huge camp reeking with the stench of dead bodies and the accumulated filth and refuse of near three hundred thousand souls, the Bhao's last efforts to treat with the double-dealing ruler of Audh frustrated by Shujá's fears, and by the stern antagonism of the Rohilla chief Najib-ud-daula, the whole Hindu army marched forth to battle in the early morning of the 6th January, 1761, with the courage less of hope than of sheer despair. "The ends of their turbans," says Grant Duff, "were let loose, their hands and faces anointed with a preparation of turmeric, signifying that they were come forth to die, and everything seemed to bespeak the despondency of sacrifice prepared instead of victory determined." On the side of Ahmad Shah were about 40,000 Afghans and Persians, mostly mounted, 13,000 Indian horse, and 38,000 Indian foot, with thirty guns and many wall-pieces. Under the Marátha flag were ranged some 50,000 splendid cavalry, at least 15,000 irregular horse, with an equal number of foot, mostly trained in the Dakhan by a Mussulman deserter from the French service, and 200 guns, besides a large number of wall-pieces. Both sides may also have mastered a large contingent of wild volunteer horsemen, whom the thirst for plunder and excitement had brought into the field.*

The centre of the Marátha line was led by Sedásheo Bhao himself, with whom rode his young kinsman, Wiswás Rao, and several chiefs of note in the Dakhan wars. Maháji Sindia commanded the right wing, while the left, under the Gaikwar, was strengthened by the 9,000 disciplined Sepoys whom Ibrahim Khan had brought up from the Dakhan. Malhar Rao Holkar took post in the right

* The Pindáris, of evil fame, are recorded as flocking to the Marátha standard.

centre. For one leader no place was to be found on that memorable morning. Suraj Mal, with many thousand Jāts and Rajputs, had already retired in dudgeon to his own land.

Hardly had the Marāthas begun their forward march, when the watchful Ahmad drew out his own array to meet them. His Grand Vizier, Shah Walli, held the centre, consisting chiefly of his own Afghans. On his right were posted several Moghal and Rohilla chiefs, while the left was entrusted to the brave Najib-ud-daula and the half-hearted Nawáb of Audh. All day the battle raged with varying fortune. Overpowered by the steady onset of the Dakhan Sepoys, the Afghan right gave way after a heavy slaughter. In the centre the Bhao's Marátha and Rajput horsemen swept like a vast thunder-cloud upon the Grand Vizier's Duranis, and, in spite of Afghan prowess and the Afghan leader's bold example, drove them back in disorder on their reserves. On the Afghan left a more equal battle was waged by Najib's Rohillas against the troops of Sindia and Holkar.

In vain did the Grand Vizier attempt by repeated charges to retrieve the ruin that threatened his centre. The Bhao, whose courage far outstripped his generalship, still led forward his famished warriors into the heart of the hostile ranks. Round him and the hapless son of Balaji the fight still raged with deadliest fury, and spears, swords, and battle-axes drank their fill of blood. At that moment of seeming defeat, Ahmad Shah by one supreme effort restored the fortunes of his hard-pressed troops. While every Hindu soldier was already engaged, his own reserves were still waiting the order to advance. Hurrying off a part of these to aid in turning the enemy's right, with the rest he rallied the fugitives from his own right and centre, and renewed the battle on that side.

The double movement soon bore fruit. Afghans and Rohillas reformed their broken lines, large bodies of fresh horsemen thundered down upon the weary foe, and Najib's

reinforced warriors pushed back until they had rolled up the Marátha right. Still the fight raged under the hot afternoon sun, until Wiswas Rao was seen to fall. Madened at the sight, or aware of coming doom, the Bhao



AFGHAN GROUP.

plunged into the thickest of the fray ; Holkar, to whom he had last spoken, led his own troops from the field, as if all were lost already ; * the Gaikwar followed his example ;

* He is said to have had a secret understanding with Shujá-ud-daula ; but this is very doubtful. It is more probable, as Sir J. Malcolm thinks, that so good a soldier saw in a timely retreat the only hope of saving his own followers from the general wreck. In so doing he may only have obeyed the Bhao's last injunctions.

and presently the whole of that great army was flying in wild disorder from the swiftly advancing foe. The slaughter that followed in a chase of many miles completed the horrors of that eventful day. No quarter was asked or given. Of those who escaped the swords of their pursuers, a great many were cut up by the villagers themselves, and many more were afterwards slain in cold blood by their Duráni captors. Among these last were Jankoji Sindia and the brave Ibrahim Khan. The Bhao himself had found the death he sought for in the field. It is reckoned that only a fourth of the fighting men, and about the same proportion of camp followers, survived that fearful carnage. Thousands of women and children found in the entrenched camp and in the town of Pánipat, were sold as slaves; and the vengeance of the conquerors for their own heavy losses was sated only when their victims had drained the cup of suffering to its last drop.

With the costly victory of Pánipat the league of Mohammadan princes against the common foe seems at once to have broken up. Ahmad Shah himself recrossed the Indus, leaving his late allies to settle their own affairs in their own way. If the Marátha power had received a permanent check, the Moghal Empire was never again to emerge from its late eclipse, although a nominal emperor might still hold his shadowy court at Dehli, and powerful princes were to offer him mock allegiance for kingdoms won by their own swords. Throughout Maháráshtra were heard the sounds of wailing for the carnage of Pánipat. The Peshwa himself, who was marching towards Dehli, broke up his camp, recrossed the Narbadra, and reached Puna only to die, bequeathing to his successors a broken sceptre and a losing struggle with a power already dominant in Bengal. How that power had meanwhile been advancing, the following chapter will show.

CHAPTER IX.

THE FRENCH AND ENGLISH IN INDIA.

For many years after the death of Aurangzib the English in Bengal continued to play the part of peaceful traders, jealous of all rivals from the West, ready to grasp at any new concession which prayers, clamours, or timely services might win from native rulers, and careful to hold aloof from the wars that might rage around them. The good fortune which enabled an English surgeon, Mr. Hamilton, to cure the Emperor Farokhsir of an illness which had baffled the skill of native Hakims, was requited, at Mr. Hamilton's own request, by an order exempting the Company's agents from all local charges on their merchandise, and by another which empowered the Company to buy over the lordship of thirty-eight villages near Calcutta. The help which the English afterwards received from the Viceroy, Shujá-ud-din, in their efforts to destroy the trade of an interloping company established at Ostend, consoled them for the dirt they had eaten under his unfriendly predecessor, Murshid Kúli Khan. During the troubles engendered by Alivardi Khan's long struggle with the Marátha invaders of Bengal, they obtained leave from the Viceroy to surround their settlement of Calcutta with an entrenchment afterwards known as "the Marátha Ditch."

On the opposite side of India, however, the English were sometimes less peacefully employed in defending their interests against the assaults of Marátha pirates, who became a terror and a nuisance to all vessels trading with the Kankan. The failure in 1722 of a joint attack by the

English and the Portuguese on Angria's stronghold of Kolába emboldened the pirates to fresh outrages; and not till more than thirty years after was the power of Angria's successors broken, by the combined attacks of English and Marátha forces on the rock-perched fastnesses of the pirate chiefs.

Meanwhile at Madras and in Southern India events had been happening which gave a new turn to the policy of the East India directors. While France and England were fighting at home, in India the merchants of either country had long been wont to follow peacefully, side by side, the business which took them so far away from their own land. Calcutta and Chandanagor, Madras and Pondicherry, were content to grow rich against each other, instead of taking an unprofitable part in the wars between the parent states. But in 1744, when France and England were once more at open strife, the bold Labourdonnais resolved, with the sanction of the French Government, to fight his country's enemies in India also.* Returning to the Isle of France, of which he was then governor, he looked out in vain for the promised armament from home. But his amazing energy overcame all drawbacks. In one way or another he got together a fleet manned with sailors whom he himself, a sailor by profession and something of an engineer, had trained for their destined work. In July, 1746, after beating off an English squadron sent to intercept him, he anchored off Pondicherry, took counsel with its able governor, M. Dupleix, and set off again two months later for his long-projected attack upon Madras.

On the 18th September his ships and land-batteries began to bombard the fort, which Governor Morse with his

* A full and interesting account of this adventurer's brilliant career in India and the Mauritius may be found in Colonel Malleison's "History of the French in India." During his rule, from 1733 to 1745, the Mauritius, or Isle of France, grew out of a wilderness into a flourishing colony.

three hundred Englishmen, of whom two-thirds only were soldiers, made a feeble show of holding out. Three days afterwards the garrison surrendered as prisoners of war for the time being, with the power of redeeming the captured settlement after a specified term on payment of nearly half a million sterling. A large amount of booty fell at once into the conquerors' hands, besides the handsome present of £40,000 reserved by the governor for Labourdonnais himself.

The convention, however, displeased Dupleix, who found several reasons, including the powers entrusted to himself as Governor-General of French India, for afterwards setting it aside. In the midst of an embittered squabble between two men who, working together, might have driven the English out of India, a fearful storm so shattered the fleet of Labourdonnais, that he set sail from Madras, leaving the treaty he had just signed with the English Governor to be kept or broken at pleasure by Dupleix.*

Thus freed from a troublesome rival, Dupleix had now to deal with a new opponent in the shape of Anwar-ud-din, the Nawáb or Governor of the Carnatic,† who sent troops to enforce fulfilment of the Frenchman's promise to surrender Madras into his hands. If Dupleix had ever thought of keeping his pledge, he was now bent on keeping the fortified place instead. In vain did ten thousand of the Nawáb's warriors encamp around Madras, in hopes of punishing the insolent strangers who had cheated him out of his due share in the wianings gained from his English

* At the Mauritius he found a new governor appointed in his place. On his way thence to France on board of a Dutch vessel, he fell into the hands of the English, was kindly treated in this country, and sent to France on his parole. There, however, he lay for three years in the Bastille, under charges of which he was at length acquitted. But he came out of prison penniless and broken-hearted, to die on the 9th September, 1753.

† Book iii. chap. 8.

friends. With four hundred Frenchmen and Sepoys drilled in French fashion, and two guns, their leader sallied forth against the Moghals. The Moghal horsemen came thundering down upon the little band, but a few well-aimed discharges from the French guns checked them in mid-career, causing them to waver, halt, and turn back in headlong flight from the foe they had ignorantly despised.

This brilliant success was soon followed by another. A French force of 230 white men and 700 Sepoys was on its way from Pondicherry to succour Madras, when it found about 10,000 of the Nawáb's troops guarding with their guns the passage of the little river Adyar, near Madras. In a moment Paradis and his men were across the river, up the opposite bank, and pouring a volley into the astonished foe. A charge with the bayonet drove the Moghals into the town of St. Thomé.* Once more the French fire swept through their disordered masses, and sent them flying helter-skelter out of their last refuge. At that moment the victorious garrison of Madras came up to complete the rout, and chase the panic-stricken Moghals back towards Arkot.

Flushed with these victories, Dupleix proceeded to attack the English in Fort St. David, about fifteen miles to the south of Pondicherry. But the troops sent out by him were badly led, and a sudden onset of the Nawab's soldiers drove them back in disorder to the French capital. An attack by sea on the Moghal town of Kadalór was defeated by a timely storm. In March, 1747, Dupleix's best officer, Paradis himself, laid siege to Fort St. David, whose slender garrison were saved for the second time by the approach of an English squadron sent from the Húghli to their relief.

By this time the wily governor of Pondicherry had seduced the fickle Anwar-ud-din from his English alliance. But the Nawáb's friendship was short-lived. In 1748 he

* Or Mahapúram.

is again enlisted on the side of the English, who have got all ready for a grand attack on Pondicherry itself. By the end of June a bold attempt of the French to surprise Kadalor had been baffled by the clever soldiership of Major Lawrence, the newly appointed commander of the English forces in India. It was not long, however, before Lawrence himself was taken prisoner by the brave defenders of Ariankopan, a kind of outwork to the defences of Pondicherry. Against the latter stronghold the renowned Admiral Boscawen opened his trenches on the 10th September with about 6,000 soldiers, aided by a powerful fleet. So skilfully, however, was the defence conducted by Dupleix himself, after the fall of his ablest engineer and stoutest helpmate, Paradis, that after six weeks of fruitless effort, in which young Clive,* the future victor of Plassy, nobly bore his part, Boscawen carried back his armament to Fort St. David, leaving behind him a thousand of his best soldiers dead from wounds or disease.

The victorious Frenchman took care to trumpet the news of his success throughout India. From all quarters, even from Delhi, letters of congratulation came pouring in. It seemed as if nothing remained to him but the easy task of driving the defeated and despised English out of the country. But in the midst of the movements which Dupleix was planning for that end, came the unwelcome tidings of peace concluded at Aix-la-Chapelle on terms which obliged the French to give back their recent conquests in Southern India. Madras was accordingly restored into English keeping, and the rival nations resumed the footing on which they had stood to each other five years before.

* As a "writer" or clerk of the East India Company, Robert Clive shared in the fruitless defence of Madras against Labourdonnais. Carried off a prisoner to Pondicherry, he escaped thence in disguise to Fort St. David, and exchanging the pen for the sword, served as an ensign at the siege of Pondicherry.

But neither of them was willing to let things remain as they were. The quarrels of the neighbouring native princes opened out new fields of enterprise to the servants of rival companies founded for the promotion of peaceful trade. On the plea of aiding the Marátha Rajah of Tanjör to regain his lost throne, the English under Major Lawrence besieged and took the fort of Devikátta ; the possession of which, with a strip of adjoining country, was afterwards secured to them by treaty with the Rajah's brother and victorious rival, Partab Singh.

Meanwhile Dupleix was busy weaving a larger web of the same kind, in concert with Chanda Sáhib, son-in-law of a former Nawáb of Arkot, and for some years past a state prisoner at the court of Satára. The recent death of the old Nizám-ul-Mulk, Chín Kilich Khan, enabled the plotters to push their scheme. Set free by the Frenchman's intercession, Chanda Sáhib made common cause with the Nizam's grandson, Mozaffar Jang, against his uncle Nasir Jang, the rival claimant to the throne of the Dakhan. At the head of a large force, aided by a choice French contingent, these two princes entered the Carnatic, and gave battle to Anwar-ud-din, whose fall completed their victory. The chief honours of the day were won by M. de Bussy, whose name was soon to figure prominently in the wars of the Dakhan. Marching on to Arkot, Mozaffar Jang proclaimed himself Subadár, or Viceroy of the Dakhan, with Chanda Sáhib as ruler of the Carnatic in his name. In proof of the latter's gratitude Dupleix himself was endowed with the lordship of eighty-one villages around his capital.*

Meanwhile Nasir Jang was raising a mighty army for the purpose of crushing his rival ; and Mohanmad Ali, a son of the dead Nawáb, had not asked in vain for the help of English bayonets from Madras. When the opposing armies were near each other, a mutiny in the French

* Malleson's "French in India," chap. vi.

contingent spread dismay among their allies. Chanda Súhib bravely covered the retreat of the French in the face of Morári Rao and his swift Marátha horsemen ; but Mozaffar Jang surrendered to his uncle, who loaded him with irons after having sworn upon the Korán to let him go free.

Nothing, however, seemed to daunt or overthrow Dupleix. He brought the leading mutineers to a stern reckoning, and shamed their followers back into the paths of discipline. His envoys took high ground in treating with Násir Jang. His trustiest messengers held secret conference with discontented nobles in Násir's camp. A few hundred of his soldiers beat up the quarters of Morári Rao, and frightened Násir Jang himself into a swift retreat from the neighbourhood of Pondicherry. He shipped off five hundred Frenchmen and Sepoys to recapture Masulipatam from the Moghals. With a force no larger D'Auteuil dared the attack of Mohammad Ali's thirty thousand men, including two thousand English and Sepoys. When the latter had withdrawn in dudgeon from the camp of their headstrong ally, D'Auteuil himself, emboldened by the arrival of fresh succours from Pondicherry, moved out against the Nawáb, and drove his army like a flock of frightened sheep across the Panár. A few days afterwards some fifteen hundred Frenchmen and Sepoys, led by the skilful Bussy, scattered ten thousand of Mohammad Ali's warriors, who had rallied under the walls of Jinji ; and, strengthened at the right moment by fresh troops, Bussy's heroes not only entered the town, but carried the rock-fortress which Sívaji had won through fraud, and Aurangzib's best commander had retaken only after a long blockade.

Disturbed by these successes, the master of the Dakhan began to treat with his daring assailants. But the terms on which Dupleix insisted were still too hard for his digestion. At the head of a combined host of Moghals,

Pathans, and Maráthas, he continued his advance on Jinji. But the traitors in his camp were numerous, and Dupleix was not a man to stick at scruples in pursuit of a given end. Ere long the Subadár was ready to yield all that the Frenchman had asked. But his offers came too late. Before a messenger from Dupleix could reach the French camp, a signal from the plotting nobles in that of Násir Jang had brought the French commander up to the scene of action. In the fight that ensued between his troops and the enemy the Patháns and Maráthas took no part. Guessing too late the meaning of their inaction, the angry Subadár rode up to the traitor chiefs, and scolded one of them, the Nawáb of Kadapah, for his cowardice. A bullet in his heart was the Nawáb's reply. In a few minutes the dead man's rival, Mozaffár Jang, found himself transformed from a prisoner in chains, under peril of instant death, into the newly-elected Subadár of the Dakhan.

When the fight was over the new Subadár set off for Pondicherry, where Dupleix, with much pomp and pageantry, installed him in his uncle's place. Dupleix himself, decked out in the robes of a Mohannadan "Amrah," or baron of the highest class, was invested with the government of all the Mógħal dominions to the south of the Kistna. Chanda Sáhib, as Nawáb of the Carnatic, became the new governor's acknowledged vassal. The bestowal of a goodly *jágir* or fief on Dupleix himself, a handsome present in money to his officers and men, and the assignment of fresh districts to the Company under whose flag they had fought, filled up the ungrudging measure of the Subadár's gratitude to his French allies. At that moment the fame and influence of Dupleix had reached their highest point. Through his own skilful daring, seconded by a mere handful of his countrymen, the son of a French merchant had become the ruler of broad provinces and the patron of the lord of Southern India.

Accompanied by a small force of French and Sepoys under Bussy, the new Subadár set out in the first days of 1751 for his own capital of Aurangábád. But the Pathan chiefs who had compassed the death of Násir Jang were already plotting against his successor, who had stinted them of their expected rewards. Their treachery discovered, they were attacked and defeated by Bussy's soldiers; but Mozaffar Jang, in the eagerness of pursuit, was slain by the hard-pressed Nawáb of Karnúl, who a moment after shared his victim's fate. Amidst the confusion caused by this event Bussy showed himself equal to the need. With the consent of his Moghal allies, Salabat Jang, a younger brother of Nasir Jang, was straightway advanced, like his late nephew, from a prison to the vacant throne.

CHAPTER X.

THE FIGHT BETWEEN FRENCH AND ENGLISH.

At the time of Salábat Jang's accession to the throne of the Dakhan, Mohammad Ali was intriguing with the English at Madras against his successful rival, Chanda Sahib. As soon as the hour seemed ripe for action, he threw off the mask of apparent readiness to make peace with his opponents, and refused to yield up Trichinopoly on any terms to the rival Nawáb. Once more, therefore, the French and English were arranged in arms, under opposing flags. While Chanda Sáhib, aided by a few hundred Frenchmen, was advancing on Trichinopoly, a small English force marched off to strengthen the native defenders of that place, and a somewhat larger body took the field in concert with their native ally. The latter force, however, crowned their defeat before Volkonda by an ignominious retreat upon Trichinopoly; and the troops of Chanda Sáhib promised themselves an easy capture of his rival's last stronghold.

But fortune and the skilful soldiership of two brave Englishmen were to spoil their reckonings. Captain Robert Clive, who had already earned some laurels before Pondicherry and at Devikáttá, now urged Mr. Saunders, the able Governor of Madras, to save Trichinopoly by making a dash at Arkot. With 200 Englishmen, 300 Sepoys, and eight guns, he was allowed to save Trichinopoly in his own way. In the midst of a fearful thunder-storm his daring band presented themselves at the gates of Chanda Sahib's capital. The astonished garrison offered

no resistance to men who could thus brave the wrath of the storm-god. Once master of the fort, which was more than a mile round, Clive set hard to work at strengthening its weak defences. The task seemed well-nigh hopeless, but a master-mind had taken it firmly in hand. In spite of Dupleix's entreaties, Chanda Sâhib detached some thousands of his best troops, under his son, Rajah Sâhib, to deal with Clive. For seven weeks the little garrison of Arkot withstood the assaults of 10,000 men, aided by a powerful battering-train; their numbers reduced by disease and wounds to 120 Englishmen and 200 Sepoys. The succours which Mr. Saunders strained every nerve to forward from Madras were beaten back, and the supplies of the garrison were running very short, when Rajah Sâhib, learning that the Marâthas under Morâri Rao were advancing to raise the siege, and foiled in his efforts to win the place by treating with Clive himself, gave the order for one last desperate assault.

On the 25th November, the fiftieth day of the siege, his troops rushed forward to the attack, drunk with bhang and religious ardour.* For many hours the fight raged at every assailable point, the Sepoys vying with their English comrades in the stoutness of their resistance to almost crushing odds. In their attempts to crown the breaches, the assailants were swept down by an unceasing fire of muskets and guns, each man of the little garrison having spare muskets ready to his hands, while Clive himself worked like a common gunner. At last the attack died away, the town itself was abandoned during the night, and the next morning saw Rajah Sâhib's shattered forces retreating on Vellôr.

The news of this heroic defence, maintained by a handful of men and half a dozen English officers, mostly raw volunteers, under a captain who had never before set a

* It was the day of the great Mussalman feast in memory of the martyred son of Ali.

full company in the field, turned in favour of the English that tide of native feeling which had hitherto been setting strongly against them. Reinforced from Madras, Clive started off in pursuit of his late assailants, turned their flank with the aid of his Maráthas, and drove them, with the loss of all their guns, from the field. Another great victory over Rajah Sáhíb and his French allies at Kavari-pák, on the road from Conjeveram to Arkot, left Clive free to arrange with Mr. Saunders for the relief of Trichinopoly, then closely blockaded by the troops of Chanda Sáhíb and M. Law.

At that moment, however, another brave Englishman, Major Lawrence, the victor of Devikáttá, who had meanwhile gone home to England, reappeared on the scene, as commander of the troops destined for the relief of Trichinopoly. With the hero of Arkot for his trusty lieutenant, he was not likely to fail without good cause. Trichinopoly was soon relieved; and the French, defeated or out-generalled at every turn, and cooped up at last in an island between two rivers, gave themselves up to Lawrence as prisoners of war. Forty-one guns, with heaps of warlike stores, were included among the spoils. Meanwhile the luckless Chanda Sáhíb, who had surrendered to the general commanding the native contingent from Tanjór, under a solemn promise that his life should be spared, was straightway put to death by order of his perjured captor, and his head was forwarded as a welcome present to Mohammad Ali.*

Foiled in his best efforts, Dupleix would not be disheartened. The son of Chanda Sáhíb was at once proclaimed Nawáb in his father's stead. Morári Rao and the Regent of Maisór soon turned against their late ally. The

* Lawrence has been blamed by Colonel Malleon for conniving at this piece of treachery; but Orme's statement hardly bears out the charge. The Nawáb surrendered not to the English, but to the forces of Mohammad Ali.

repulse of an English attack upon Jinji encouraged the French and their allies to renew the siege of Trichinopoly. For two more years strife raged in the Carnatic, Clive and Lawrence losing no chance of adding to their old renown, while the prompt courage of an English subaltern, Lieutenant Harrison, saved the fort of Trichinopoly from almost certain capture.

Meanwhile Bussy's tact and boldness had served his country well at the court of Salabat Jang. In spite of secret foes and open assailants, he had not only upheld his own nominee on the throne of the Dakhan, but had even won for himself the government of four fertile districts lying between the Eastern Ghâts and the Bay of Bengal, and stretching for nearly 500 miles from the Kistna northward to Ganjam. This valuable tract of country, since known as the Northern Sarkars, surpassed in extent and value the dominions which any other European power had hitherto swayed in India.

But a cruel blow was already being aimed at Dupleix's ambition and the power he had striven so hard to establish. While the siege of Trichinopoly was yet languidly going forward, there arrived at Pondicherry, in August, 1754, a special envoy empowered by the French Government to treat with Mr. Saunders for a speedy end to the strife between French and English on the Coromandel coast. M. Godeheu, himself a director of the French company, entered with a will on his appointed task. The truce to which both parties presently agreed was followed in December by a formal treaty, which bound both alike to refrain from mixing in the quarrels of native princes, and virtually to accept Mohammad Ali as the rightful Nawâb. Each side was to retain its present winnings until arrangements could be made for readjusting their several shares. Godeheu, in short, surrendered almost everything for which Dupleix had so long fought and schemed, with varying fortune, but with unflinching zeal.

But more to the English than all their other gains was the recall of the daring statesman who had dreamed of building up a great French empire in Southern India. The supplanted Governor of Pondicherry went home poor and in debt, to meet with a chilling welcome from the company he had served so well, to plead in vain for repayment of the great sums he had spent out of his own fortune on their account, and to die at last in disgrace and almost beggary, with the debtors' prison already staring him in the face.

The treaty thus concluded was soon broken. The Regent of Maisôr, on the strength of a promise once made by Mohammad Ali, pressed his claim to Trichinopoly, which the English refused to render up. An English force set out early in 1755 to help Mohammad Ali in exacting tribute from the Pálikárs of Tinivalli and Madura. The French in their turn gathered rents on behalf of the Regent of Maisôr, and even threatened Trichinopoly itself. Early in the next year a movement of the English against Vellôr was thwarted by the firmness of De Leyrit, who had succeeded Godcheu as Governor of Pondicherry. Before the year's end it was known that France and England were again at war, and De Leyrit lost no time in acting upon that knowledge. While the English were engaged elsewhere in helping the Nawab against his own subjects, a strong force of French and Sepoys once more endangered the safety of Trichinopoly. But the brave Captain Calliaud, by a skilful movement, circumvented the French commander, and forced him to retire to Pondicherry. For this repulse the French consoled themselves by a series of successful raids elsewhere, and the last days of 1757 left them masters of nearly all the strong places in the dominions of Mohammad Ali, while Bussy easily maintained his hold on the Northern Sarkárs.

Meanwhile Bengal had become the scene of a struggle on whose issue rested the future of all India. In April,

1756, Alivardi Khan, the able and stout-hearted Subadar of Bengal, was succeeded by his favourite grandson, Suraj-ud-daula, a youth whose feeble intellect and imperious temper had not been improved by a long course of debauchery and freedom from all control. One of his first acts as Subadár was to demand from Mr. Drake, the Governor of Fort William, the immediate surrender of a Hindu refugee, son of the wealthy governor of Dacca, and the destruction of all the new defences which Mr. Drake was accused of having erected round Calcutta. Enraged at the Englishman's evasion of the former demand, he led an army of fifty thousand men against a settlement in every way ill-prepared to defend itself. A garrison reduced by neglect to 174 men, weak defences, bad gunpowder, cowardice among the leaders, disorder and mismanagement everywhere, all combined to render the fort and city an easy prey to the furious Subadár. On the 19th June a general rush of men, women, and children, to get on board the shipping in the river, was followed by the flight thither of Mr. Drake and the military commandant.

Thus shamefully abandoned, Mr. Holwell, the ablest civil officer left behind, took command of the weakened garrison, and prepared to defend the fort. But everything was against him. Blind to all his signals of distress, the captains of the vessels, which had dropped two miles down the river, made no attempt to succour their deserted countrymen. The soldiers, who for two or three days had repulsed the enemy's attacks, at length broke into the liquor-stores, and became too drunk for further resistance. While Mr. Holwell was yet parleying with the besiegers, some of the latter rushed into the scene of disorder, and in a few minutes Fort William, with all its surviving defenders, fell into the conqueror's hands.

But the survivors had yet to taste the full measure of their misfortunes. On one of the hottest nights in the

year, when the climate of Bengal had changed from the heat of an open furnace to that of a well-warmed hothouse, a hundred and forty-six prisoners, including one or two women, were shut up in an old guard-room, or black-hole for soldiers, less than eighteen feet square, into which the air, yet further heated by the flames of burning warehouses, crept through two small windows strongly barred. None but the strongest and those who kept nearest the windows, had a chance of living through that awful night. In the fight for life that went on from hour to hour, few heeded other tortures than their own. The living trampled on the dying and the dead in their efforts to reach the windows, or to get at the water handed in to them through the bars. Mad with thirst, fever, pain, and the fearful stench, many of them sought to end their sufferings by provoking the guards outside to fire upon them. But their inhuman jailors laughed the louder at their revilings, held lights to the windows the better to enjoy the dreadful scene within, and gloated over the sight of thirsty wretches fighting for the water with which they were kept supplied.* Next morning, when the Subadár had slept off the effects of last night's debauch, there crawled out of that den of horrors Holwell himself, with twenty-one men and one woman,† most of them hardly more alive than the dead who lay heaped up in noisome ghastliness within.

Holwell and four others, including the woman, were carried off, in irons, to Murshidábád; but the rest were allowed to make their way to the ships, which forthwith dropped down to Falta, near the mouth of the Húghli. Three months afterwards Holwell and three of his fellow-

* Mr. Holwell, one of the survivors, wrote a detailed account of the horrors of that memorable night in language all the more powerful for its unadorned simplicity.

† Mrs. Carey, whose husband, a sea-officer, died in the Black Hole. When the survivors were released, she herself being, in Holwell's words, "too young and handsome," was reserved for the Prince's harem at Murshidábád.

sufferers were finally set free. It was not till the middle of December that the English refugees at Falta descried the fleet which Admiral Watson had led out from Madras two months before, laden with the troops destined to retrieve the disasters of the previous June, and to pave the way for the conquest of Hindústán. Their commander, Colonel Clive, who had returned to India in 1755 as Governor of Fort St. David, and had since shared with Admiral Watson in the taking of Gíriah,* lost no time in adding to his old renown. The fort of Baj-baj, a little way up the river, was soon taken by his troops and a body of seamen. On the 2nd of January, 1757, Calcutta and Fort William fell once more into English hands. Húghli itself was stormed on the 10th by Clive's best subaltern, Captain Eyre Coote, the future opponent of Haidar Ali.

Enraged at these unforeseen reverses, Suráj-ud-daula led a large army towards Calcutta, masking his purpose by a show of listening to the peaceful overtures from the Calcutta Council. At length, impatient of further dallying with a treacherous foe, Clive, on the 4th February, made a determined assault on the Moghal camp. A heavy fog marred the full execution of a well-conceived movement, and after some hard fighting Clive withdrew his troops. But the frightened Subadár had no mind to renew the struggle with such foes. Drawing off his army to a safe distance from Calcutta, he offered, this time sincerely, to make peace. On the 9th February was concluded a treaty which restored to the English all their former privileges and factories, gave them full permission to fortify Calcutta, to coin money at their own mint, and promised in some measure to make good their recent losses.

* See book iii. chap. 8.

CHAPTER XI.

THE ENGLISH TRIUMPHANT—1757–1761.

By this time Calcutta had learned the news of another war in Europe between France and England. Instead of returning to Madras, Clive at once resolved to attack the French settlement of Chandanagór, on the Húghli. The faithless Subadár, on the other hand, was already plotting with Bussy against his new friends, while the Calcutta Council, led by the wretched Drake, were bent on pledging their countrymen to remain strictly neutral towards the French in Bengal. But Clive's forecasting energy overrode all obstacles, and the way was further cleared for him by a threatening letter, in which Admiral Watson told the Subadár that, if any more plottings went on with the French, he would "kindle such a flame in the country as all the waters of the Ganges should not be able to extinguish." A humble answer from the frightened Suráj-ud-daula removed the last scruples from the mind of the honest sailor, who forthwith went heartily to work in aid of his less scrupulous colleague.

On the 14th March Clive made his first movement against the fort of Chandanagór. On the 17th his batteries opened their fire, to which the defenders kept up for some days a spirited reply. It was not till the 23rd that Watson could bring two of his men-of-war alongside the fort; but a few broadsides from the *Kent* and *Tiger* wrought such havoc that the French were driven to treat for a surrender, and before evening Chandanagór, with its

brave garrison and much treasure, had passed into Watson's hands, not without heavy loss to the conquerors.*

The Subadar was furious, but he took care to dissemble his rage and hatred of the victorious English. Cringing and insolent by turns, now bribing Bussy to come and help him against the common foe, anon seeking to lull Clive's suspicions by letters full of high-flown compliments, now threatening the English factory at Kasimbazar, anon sending to Calcutta a large instalment of the promised indemnity, he furnished Clive with ample pretexts for treating him as an enemy in disguise. The Englishman, however, for all his courage and his past achievements, would commit himself to no rash movement against the ruler of a rich and powerful province and the commander of countless legions. He preferred to meet cunning with cunning, plots with plots; and his opponent's folly lent itself to all his schemes. A plot for the Nawab's dethronement was carried on between the English leaders and some of the foremost statesmen and richest bankers in Bengal. It was agreed that Mir Jafir, brother-in-law of the late Subadar, should be raised to the forfeit throne, in return for vast sums of money payable to the English Company and their troops.

The plot was well-nigh ripe when Amin Chand, a rich Hindu banker, who had long played a doubtful part both towards the English and his own sovereign, threatened to disclose to the latter all that he had somehow learned, unless his silence could be purchased on his own terms. Clive at once resolved to outwit him with his own weapons. Two copies of the secret treaty with Mir Jafir were drawn up, in only one of which was inserted the agreement made

* Among the troops employed in the siege were the Bengal Battalion, afterwards the 1st Bengal European Fusiliers, and the Bengal Sipahi Battalion, afterwards the 1st Bengal Native Infantry. The latter regiment had been raised, armed, and drilled like an English regiment by Clive himself. (Broome's "History of the Bengal Army," p. 92 and 116.)

with the treacherous Hindu. Among the names affixed to this document was that of Admiral Watson, forged apparently by Clive himself with the assent of his more scrupulous colleague. In excuse for the part borne by Clive in these crooked proceedings, it must be remembered that many lives of Englishmen and natives in Bengal were staked on the good faith of a self-seeking scoundrel, who would else have sold to their worst enemy the secret he had ferreted out for himself.

By this time Suráj-ud-daula had heard of Ahmad Shah's retreat from Dehli into Afghanistan. Danger from that quarter he no longer feared; but the signs of danger nearer home had begun to attract his notice; and the flight of Watts, the English agent, from Murshidabad seemed to confirm his worst suspicions. While his own troops were once more mustering at Plassy, about forty miles to the south of Murshidabad, Clive was preparing to strike the blow which was to make him virtual master of Bengal. On the 13th June, 1757, he marched from Chandanagór at the head of 1,000 Englishmen and about 2,000 Sepoys, and ten guns. On the 17th the fort of Katwa was carried by his troops after a brief resistance. Here the monsoon or rainy season burst upon them with a violence which for a moment damped the spirits of their bold leader himself. The news that presently reached him from Mir Jaffir did little to allay his new-born doubts and misgivings. Defeat at that distance from all support meant utter ruin to his little army and to the hopes that centred in them. He wrote for help to the Rajah of Bardwan. For the first and last time in his life he called a council of war. His own vote, the first given, was in favour of halting at Katwa until the close of the monsoon. In spite of the counterpleadings of bold Major Coote, twelve officers out of nineteen voted with Colonel Clive.

But a few hours later the cloud had passed away from his soul, and the order was given for his troops to cross

the river next morning. A long march of fifteen miles through mud and water brought them, at one in the morning of the 23rd June, to a grove of mango trees beyond the village of Plassy, within easy hearing of the enemy's drums. The left of his little army rested on the Bhagirati river. A mile in front of him lay the enemy, 50,000 strong in infantry alone, besides 18,000 horsemen from the north, and fifty-three guns, mostly of great size.

Soon after daybreak the hosts of Suráj-ud-daula advanced from their entrenchments to the attack; a small party of Frenchmen with four light field-pieces leading the way. By eight o'clock the latter were engaged with a small body of English well posted in front of their main line. When the enemy's fire became too hot for his little force, Clive withdrew to the safer shelter of the grove. For some hours a cannonade was kept up on both sides, with little damage to the English, who from behind their own breastworks took leisurely aim at the masses in their front. At noon the enemy's ammunition was nearly all spoilt by a heavy shower. A charge of the enemy's horse was easily repulsed, and the fall of their leader himself struck the Subadár with sudden terror. By two p.m. the great bulk of his troops were already moving from the field, while their panic-stricken commander led the way with 2,000 horse to his own capital of Murshidábád. The French withdrew their guns into the entrenched camp. Mir Jáfír Khan, whose movements had hitherto puzzled the English commander, at length drew off his own men from Clive's right flank. No longer doubtful of the issue, Clive pushed boldly forward against the entrenchments, where the French still bravely held their ground. Ere long they also had to retire without their guns. By five o'clock the victors were in full possession of the enemy's camp with all the vast wealth it contained in baggage, cattle, guns, and warlike stores. The victory which was to seal the fate of India had been won with a loss of only

twenty-three soldiers killed and forty-nine wounded on the winning side.

Arrived at Murshidábád, Suráj-ud-daula took counsel with his officers of state. For a moment the bolder policy recommended by some of them revived his courage; but his old fears and suspicions speedily returned, and the next night he fled in disguise from his palace, only to fall a few days later into the hands of his enemy Mir Jáfír, whose son, impatient of his father's kindlier leanings, caused the grandson of his father's benefactor to be privily put to death.

Six days after the rout of Plassy, Clive entered Murshidábád. Mir Jáfír was formally saluted as Nawáb of Bengal, Bahár, and Orissa, and steps were taken to fulfil the compact which had placed him on his kinsman's throne. A large sum of money was at once sent down to Calcutta in part payment of the promised compensation for the losses suffered in 1756. On the East India Company was bestowed the fee simple of the land for six hundred yards around the Marátha Ditch, together with revenue rights over the country south of Calcutta. The members of the Calcutta Council, and the forces, naval and military, received handsome presents. The conqueror of Plassy, who might have helped himself to untold wealth out of the royal treasury, was content to accept a thank-offering of about two hundred thousand pounds.*

It was now time to undeceive the wretched Amin Chand. The genuine treaty was produced and read. On discovering the trick which had been played upon him, Amin Chand fell senseless to the ground. The shock to his avarice may have weakened his wits; it certainly sent him

* To those who afterwards upbraided him with his greed, he indignantly replied, "When I recollect entering the treasury at Murshidábád, with heaps of silver and gold to the right hand and to the left, and these crowned with jewels, I stand astonished at my own moderation."

on a pilgrimage to a famous Hindu shrine; but it did not afterwards keep him from mixing again in public affairs.*

Clive had now gained for his countrymen that pre-eminence in Bengal which Dupleix had once secured for the French in Southern India. As Governor of Fort William in reward for his brilliant services, he lost no time in following up his late achievements. The French were hunted out of Bahár into Audh by the dogged pertinacity of Major Coote. Several risings against the new Nawab of Bengal were promptly suppressed. Colonel Forde, one of Clive's best officers, was sent off to fight the French, no longer led by Bussy, in the Northern Sarkárs. By a series of bold movements and well-delivered blows that dashing commander wrested Masulipatam from the French, and frightened the Nizám, Salábat Jang, into ceding a large tract of adjacent country to the conquerors of his late friends. Shah Alam, son of the puppet Emperor of Delhi, sought, with the help of the Nawab of Audh, to carve out a kingdom for himself in Bengal. But the mere sound of Clive's coming forced him to raise the siege of Patna; the army he had got together melted away before the swift approach of Clive's warriors, who cared nothing for heat or superior numbers; and the prince himself, deserted by his ally, was glad to obtain from his pursuer the means of continuing his homeward flight. For this fresh service Clive was rewarded by Mir Jáfír with a jagir worth about £25,000 a-year.

But the new Nawab of Bengal had not yet learned the lesson of passing events. He began to intrigue with the Dutch at Chinsura against the power to which he owed everything. A Dutch fleet from Java, laden with troops, appeared in the Huglí. There was then no war between England and Holland, and Clive had some private reasons

* He is said to have died a drivelling idiot; but the story is very doubtful. See Broome's "Bengal Army," p. 154.

for avoiding a quarrel.* But he met the danger with his wonted readiness, and Dutch outrages provoked the struggle which, as a statesman, he had no wish to avert. On the 24th November six out of seven Dutch men-of-war were taken, after two hours' hard fighting, by three English ships of small burden,† and the seventh was afterwards caught near the mouth of the river. On the same day the bold Colonel Forde drove the Dutch, with heavy slaughter, back into Chinsura; and on the morrow another force of Dutchmen, Sepoys, and Malays, was well-nigh destroyed on the plain of Bidara by about half the number of English and native troops under the same leader. Thoroughly humbled, the Dutch at Chinsura sued for terms, which issued in a treaty binding them to pay the expenses of the war, to discharge the bulk of their troops, dismiss the vessels which Clive engaged to restore, and to resume the footing on which they had hitherto traded in Bengal.

Early in the next year Clive sailed for England, in the flush of his well-earned fame, at the age of thirty-four, to receive fresh honours from his admiring countrymen. Meanwhile in Southern India also the tide was turning fast and finally against the French. Lally, a brave but headstrong soldier, who had fought in the Irish Brigade at Fontenoy, strove hard but vainly to stem that tide. Fort St. David and Devikatta fell before his arms. The siege of Tanjor was raised by the timely intervention of an English force; and a French fleet, which might have done Lally good service, sailed off at a critical moment to the Isle of France. Arkot, on the other hand, was surrendered to the French by Mohammad Ali; and Bussy, who had been summoned in an evil hour to Lally's aid from the

* The bulk of his wealth had just been remitted to Europe through the Dutch East India Company.

† The largest, the *Calcutta*, measured only 761 tons. Four of the Dutchmen carried thirty-six guns a-piece, and two more twenty-six guns. (Broome's "Bengal Army," chap. 3.)

scene of his own successes, vainly attempted to dissuade his headstrong chief from undertaking the siege of Madras itself. In the last days of 1758 Lally's soldiers took up their posts in front of a stronghold defended by the veteran Colonel Lawrence. For two months they held their ground in spite of the resistance offered by the besieged, and the spirited efforts of Major Calliaud to annoy the besiegers from behind. In February, 1759, a breach was made in the walls of the Fort, and Lally was preparing to storm it if he could, when, on the 16th, an English fleet laden with succours anchored in the Roads. Next day the French were in full retreat on Arkot, leaving behind them fifty-two guns and many of their sick and wounded.

For yet another year the fight for empire in Southern India went forward to issues which grew daily clearer. The failure of the English in their first attack on Wandiwash was brilliantly retrieved a few months later by Coote's capture of that place, and the crushing defeat he afterwards inflicted on a French force which ventured to renew the siege. Bussy himself, who was among the prisoners, was generously allowed to return to Pondicherry. One strong place after another was taken or retaken by the victorious English. With the fall of Karikal in April, 1760, the French had little more to lose in Southern India besides Pondicherry itself. Hampered at every turn, now by want of stores and money, anon by the interference of his civil colleagues, or the mutinous conduct of his own ill-paid, starving troops, Lally saw his prospects growing darker and darker, until in September he and his countrymen were closely besieged in their Indian capital by the foe whom he had so lately thought to drive into the sea.

In vain had Lally looked round among the native princes to help him in his hour of need. Neither from Haidar Ali, the usurping ruler of Maisôr, nor from Bálaji Rao, the Marátha Peshwa, could any help be obtained. Week after week saw his chances grow more desperate, as the

English drew their circles closer around him, and the stock of food for his garrison melted away. Even the great storm of December, which destroyed the English batteries and sank or disabled many of the English ships, brought no relief to the despairing garrison and their sick commander. At length, on the 15th January, 1761, when his stock of food was on the point of being exhausted, Lally offered to surrender. Colonel Coote would listen to no conditions, and Lally could only bow to his fate. Next day, when the English marched into the surrendered stronghold, the wasted forms and wan faces of the soldiers drawn up to receive them told their own tale.

Pondicherry was afterwards levelled to the ground. Lally, hooted by its ungrateful citizens, withdrew to Madras, from thence to Paris, where misfortune still dogged his steps. The men who had persistently thwarted him in Pondicherry sent home their own version of past events. Bussy himself made common cause with De Leyrit's party against the man who had bravely done his best to save French India. In 1766, after languishing for three years in the Bastille, the luckless Irishman paid upon the scaffold the penalty in France so often awarded to ill-success.

With the fall of Pondicherry the French power in India passed away. Three months later the last of the French garrisons surrendered to an English force; and three years after the death of Lally the Company, which had made no effort to save one of its ablest servants, was itself consigned to extinction. Thenceforth the history of India becomes the history of British struggles and achievements in the path marked out for England by the victory of Plassy and the rout of Pánipat.

BOOK IV.

THE RULE OF THE COMPANY.

CHAPTER I.

THE ENGLISH IN BENGAL—1761–1774.

WITH the fall of Pondicherry and the battle of Pānipat, two leading events in the history of the same year, a new power has begun to raise its head among the peoples and princes of India. Before tracing the further growth of that power, it is well to take a rapid survey of Indian affairs about the year 1761.

If the strength of the Marathas was cruelly broken by the slaughter of Pānipat, the empire of Dehli had already dwindled away to a few districts around the capital. The Panjāb was ruled by the Afghan Ahmad Shāh. In Sindh the Tālpur chiefs acknowledged no master. Rohilkhand obeyed the orders of Najib-ud-daula. Shuja-ud-daula, the Nawāb Vizier of Audh, paid the merest show of obedience to his titular lord at Dehli. The Hindu princes of Rājputāna had won for themselves an independence tempered only by the need of paying now and then the Marāthā chauth. The Marāthā power, if its unity was broken at Pānipat, still swayed under separate princes a vast tract of country, from Gujarāt in the west to Tanjōr in the south. The Gaikwar reigned in Gujarāt, Sindia

and Holkar divided Málwa between them, the Bhosla dynasty was firmly seated in Nágpur, Maráthas held Tanjór and part of the Carnatic, the Rajahs of Kolápur and Satara were still supreme along the Western Gháts,



SIKH JAT.

and the Peshwa of Púna reigned over a long stretch of country from the borders of Maisór to Kalpi and Jhánsi on the Jamna. Orissa itself obeyed the Maráthas rule, and nothing but Clive's firmness had deterred the Maráthas from continuing to levy chauth in Bengal.

The Jāts, a warlike tribe of Hindu origin from the banks of the Indus, who had greatly troubled the officers of Aurangzib, had already under the daring Suraj Mal founded a strong state between Jaipur and Agra, with Bhartpur for its fortified capital. Salābat Jang, as Nizam of the Dakhan, ruled over a dominion sadly crippled by the conquests of his Marātha neighbours. In Maisōr the ambitious Mussulman soldier, Haidar Ali, had already won the virtual sovereignty of a kingdom hitherto swayed by a long succession of Hindu Rajahs. Mohanmad Ali, under English protection, held independent rule over the Carnatic from the Panār river to Tanjōr. The little states of Travankor and Cochīn were still governed by Hindu rulers. Goa and its few dependencies belonged to Portugal. Besides their old settlements on either coast, the actual possessions of the English were confined to certain districts around Calcutta and in the Northern Sarkārs. But the rich and populous provinces of Bengal and Bahār were ruled by a sovereign of their own choice, upheld on his throne by British bayonets, and liable at any moment to be set aside by those who had placed him there. It was, in short, the same tenure on which the Nawāb of the Carnatic held the dominions he had won with English aid from the French and their native allies.

Soon after his bootless raid into Bahār, Shah Alam, whose real name was Ali Johar, mounted the tottering throne of Dehli in the room of his murdered father.* Still hankering after Bengal, and afraid to enter his own capital, he marched with his new vizier, Shujā-ud-daula, and a large force upon Patna in the first days of 1760. Defeated, followed up, and checked at every turn by the active Colonel Calliand, he made a bold rush back from the neighbourhood of Murshidabad to Patna; and that city, closely besieged for nine days, was on the point of falling, when Captain Knox with 200 Englishmen, a

* Book iii, chap. 8.

regiment of Sepoys, and a few troops of horse, came up to the rescue after a long hurried march in the hottest season of the year. The rout and final scattering of Shah Alam's troops was followed up by a yet more daring attack on the 30,000 men and thirty guns, which the Nawáb of Parnia had brought up too late to the emperor's aid. A fight of six hours ended in such a victory for the handful of Knox's warriors, as clinched the hold already won by like feats of prowess on the native mind.

Meanwhile the government of Mir Jásfir was falling into worse and worse confusion. The death of his son, the cruel, profligate, but stronghanded Miran, brought matters to a speedy crisis. Mir Kásim, the old man's son-in-law, opened the way for his own advancement by settling out of his own purse the arrears of pay demanded by the mutinous soldiery of Bengal. His schemes for the dethronement of his weak father-in-law found ready countenance at Calcutta, where Mr. Vansittart was ruling in the place of Clive. In due time Mir Jásfir agreed, however reluctantly, to make way for Mir Kásim; and English help in the unpleasant business was repaid by the addition of Midnapúr, Bardwán, and Chittagong, to the realms of the East India Company; besides a gift of twenty lakhs of rupees, or £250,000, to Vansittart, Holwell, and their fellow-councillors.

But the bargain thus concluded bore little fruit for good. It was not long before the new Nawab began to aim at gradually shaking himself free from British control. He transferred his seat of government from Murshidábád to Monghir. His troops were disciplined on the English model and armed with muskets better than those which bore the Tower mark. A foundry for casting cannon was secretly set at work. A faithful friend of the English, Rammairin, Governor of Patna, was plundered of all his wealth with the assent of the feeble Vansittart, in spite of the efforts made by English officers in behalf of one whose safety had been guaranteed by the Calcutta Council.

At length the smouldering quarrel between the English and Mir Kásim blazed out into open war. A dispute concerning the undue extent to which the Company's servants had carried their right of exemption from transit duties on their own goods was inflamed by acts of violence on both sides. One Englishman was slain in a scuffle; Mr. Ellis, head of the Patna factory, and several other gentlemen were taken prisoners after a vain attempt to seize upon the city; some of the leading natives in Bengal shared the fate of their English friends; and before the middle of 1763 the troops on both sides were ready to take the field.

In the midst of the heavy July rains the campaign was opened by the English, who drove the Nawab's army before them at Katwa on the 19th, entered Murshidabad a few days later, and replaced Mir Jaffir, now old, leprous, and half-imbecile, on the throne he had been forced to abdicate three years before. A second victory, won at Giriah on the 2nd August after a hard fight, enraged Kásim beyond all bearing. Rámmarain and the great Sett bankers of Murshidábád were thrown into the Ganges; Rajah Rájballab, another old friend of the English, was put to death with all his sons; and an order was issued for the murder of every Englishman imprisoned at Patna. When Kasim's own officers declined to do such butcher's work, he found a ready instrument in Walter Reinhardt, a native of Luxemburg, who had deserted from one service into another until, escaping with Law's small band of Frenchmen from Chandanagor, he rose to high command under Mir Kásim. The nickname of Sombre, which his Swiss or English comrades at Bombay had given him for his dark complexion and sullen looks, his Bengali followers had turned into Sumru, the name by which English writers have handed him down to lasting infamy. This merciless ruffian, whose hatred of the English had helped to endear him to his new master, carried out so

thoroughly his savage errand, that more than fifty gentlemen and a hundred soldiers with a few women were shot down or cut to pieces in cold blood.

This happened in October, a few weeks after Major Adams with 3,000 men had utterly routed 50,000 of the enemy near Rājmahal, with the loss of 15,000 men and a hundred guns. On the 6th November Patna itself was stormed in the most brilliant style by Adams' unquailing heroes; English and Sepoys vying with each other in deeds of daring against formidable odds. A week later Adams set out in chace of the disheartened Nawāb, whose myriads were fast melting away from him under the spell of so many defeats. Before the year's end, however, Mir Kāsim and the ruffian Sumru had found shelter in Audh under the wing of his old enemy Shujā-ud-daula.

Worn out with toil and exposure, Major Adams now threw up the command of the little army which in less than five months he had led from Calcutta to the Karam-nāsa, defeating many times his own numbers of disciplined troops in two pitched battles, carrying four strong places by siege or assault, and capturing more than 400 pieces of cannon. It is sad to think that the foremost hero of a campaign, perhaps the most brilliant ever fought in India, was fated never to enjoy the honours he had so richly earned. Major Adams had hardly reached Calcutta on his way home, when he died amidst the unfeigned regrets of every Englishman in Bengal.*

Next year the struggle was renewed by the Nawāb-Vizier of Audh, who marched down towards the Ganges with the wandering Shah Alam and the ousted Mir Kāsim in his train. Chased out of Bengal in 1760, and shut out by the Marathas from his own capital, Shah Alam had

* Broome's "Bengal Army," chap. 4. "What," asks the author, "were the boasted Indian triumphs of Darins, of Alexander, or Seleucus Nicator, with their powerful and disciplined armies, opposed to unwarlike barbarians, divided amongst themselves, compared to this single campaign?"

lingered in Bahár, where early in 1761 he was twice encountered and defeated by Major Carnac. Among the prisoners taken in the well-fought action at Suan, near the city of Bahár, was the brave Frenchman Law, Clive's old opponent at Plassy, who surrendered only on condition of keeping his sword. The beaten emperor at length made peace, on terms which left him free to mend his tattered fortunes further north, with the help of a modest pension from his late foes. On his way up the country, however, he had fallen into the hands of Shuja-ud-daula, who kept guard over his titular sovereign as a kind of prisoner at large.

On the approach of the Nawab-Vizier's army, the English retired into Patna, which on the 3rd May, 1764, was attacked by the enemy for several hours with more of daring than success. As the rainy season drew near, Shuja-ud-daula fell back to Baxar. During the pause which followed the outbreak of the monsoon, the mutinous spirit which, earlier in the year, had spread for a time from the European soldiers to their native comrades, broke out again among the latter with such violence, that Major Munro, a king's officer who had just replaced the feeble Carnac in the chief command, was driven to quell it by blowing the ringleaders away from the cannon's mouth. His timely firmness nipped the new danger in the bud. The mutineers, who seem to have behaved like pettish children, returned at once to their duty, and Munro set forth in October towards Baxár with a force of about 900 Europeans, 6,000 native horse and foot, and twenty-eight guns.

On the 23rd he fought and won the famous battle of Baxár against an army about 50,000 strong, including Sumru's disciplined brigades, and thousands of Afghan horsemen who had fought under Ahmad Shah at Pá nipat. A hundred and thirty guns, mostly of large calibre, enhanced the odds against the English commander. Nothing,

however, could withstand Munro's skilful movements and the unfaltering prowess of his troops. After a day's hard fighting the English saw themselves masters of a field strewn with thousands of the enemy's dead. Thousands more perished in their headlong flight across a neighbouring stream, and but for the breaking of a bridge by Shujá's order a vast amount of treasure would have swelled the victor's gains. As it was, however, the enemy's camp and a hundred and thirty guns fell into their hands. For a victory which placed the whole of Bengal and a great part of Upper India at their mercy, the English paid with a loss of 847 in killed and wounded.

Shujá-ud-daula fled across the Gogra into Audh, while the English marched upon Allahábád. Want of money kept them from advancing further, and time was wasted in fruitless negotiations with Shah Alam, who had now had enough of Shujá's protection, and with the Nawáb-Vizier, who declined to yield up Sumru and Mir Kásim, but proposed, of course in vain, to despatch the former by underhand means. Two brave but unsuccessful assaults upon the rock-fortress of Chunar, a few miles above Banáras, close the record of English failures and successes for this year.

Once more in 1765 the Nawáb-Vizier, with the help of a Rohilla force from Rohilkhand, took the field, while Malhar Rao was bringing up his Maráthas from Gwalior to attack the English on that side. But Carnac, who had taken the command vacated by Munro, soon drove the Maráthas back across the Jamna, and, after beating Shujá himself in several encounters, forced him to make peace at any cost with his conquerors. The treatment he received was merciful enough, for Clive had once more appeared upon the scene. In the month of May the victor of Plassy sailed up the Húghli as Lord Clive, Governor and Commander-in-chief of the Company's possessions in Bengal. The years he had spent in England were years of frequent

warfare between him and the Court of Directors, who begrudged their ablest servant the estates conferred on him by their Indian allies. But Clive's great influence, and the course of later events in Bengal, had at last compelled them to lay aside their private jealousies, in favour of one marked out by the common voice for the work of restoring order and good government on that side of India.

One of Clive's first acts in India was to conclude with the suppliant ruler of Audh a treaty which surrendered to the Moghal emperor the districts of Korah and Allahábád, assured the payment of fifty lakhs of rupees as a fine to the Company, and empowered them to trade free of duty throughout the Nawáb's dominions. He next proceeded to ratify the agreement already made in effect with Shah Alam. In return for the revenues of the districts ceded by Shujá-ud-daula, and for twenty-six lakhs a-year from the revenues of Bengal and Bahár, the emperor on the 12th August formally endowed his English friends with the Dewani or virtual government of Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa—provinces which then contained about twenty-five million souls, and yielded a revenue of four millions sterling. The English, on the other hand, agreed to furnish the titular Nawáb of Murshidábád with the means of supporting his mock sovereignty, and a household suited to his rank. A new nominee of the Company, Najm-ud-daula, had just been raised to the unreal throne, whence death, hastened by the insolence of English greed, had finally removed his aged father, Mir Jáfír. As for the discrowned exile, Mir Kásim, he had already exchanged the cruel guardianship of Shujá-ud-daula for a life of unheeded poverty near Banáras; while the infamous Sumru, scenting danger from a prolonged stay in Audh, had just hired out his services to the Jâts of Bhartpur.

Thus, in less than ten years, the merchant-company whose life-struggles seemed to have been quenched in the

Black Hole of Calcutta, had gone so far on its new career of conquest as to dictate terms to half the princes of India, to make the Moghal emperor himself a mere pensioner and footstool of his English lieges, and to thwart the greatest native power in India, the Marátha League, in all its efforts to retrieve the disaster of Pánipat. "We have established," wrote Clive to the India House, "such a force that all the powers in Hindustán cannot deprive us of our possessions for many years." Yet Clive himself could not or would not see the goal to which events were already bearing the foreign masters of Bengal. He assured the Court of Directors of his firm resolve and hope always to confine their possessions to the provinces he had just obtained for them. To go any farther was "a scheme so extravagantly ambitious that no government in its senses would ever dream of it."

The work of conquest was not, however, to be resumed by Clive. Far other tasks devolved upon him during the brief remainder of his Indian career. A serious mutiny among his own officers, caused by a reduction of their extra pay in the field, had to be encountered with a strong hand; but Clive was equal to the need. The mutiny was promptly quelled with the aid of his faithful Sepoys;* and after some of the worst offenders had been cashiered by court-martial, the rest in all penitence returned to their duty.

A yet fiercer lion stood in Clive's way. The Company's servants in Bengal had been wont to eke out their small salaries by all manner of indirect gains, by means which made them a byword among their own countrymen, and a terror to the people at whose expense their ill-gotten riches were mostly earned. Intent on winning large fortunes in a few months, they overreached, plundered, oppressed their native customers, allies, and subjects at

* One Sepoy regiment marched 104 miles in fifty-four hours, reaching Surájpúr in time to prevent an outbreak among the Europeans.

every turn. "The people under their dominion," said a native chronicler of those times, "groan everywhere, and are reduced to poverty and distress." Nearly the whole inland trade of the country passed through the all-grasping hands of the Calcutta Council and their like-minded agents. No one, high or low, was safe from their unscrupulous greed. Their demands and exactions had hastened the death of Mir Jásfir. Twenty lakhs of rupees from the exhausted treasury at Marshidabád was the sum distributed among nine of the leading men at Calcutta, as the price of their agreeing to set up his infant son in his stead. While Bengal was going to ruin, and the Company at home grumbled over their small dividends, the Calcutta factors kept filling their own purses in utter disregard of justice, decency, and common patriotism. Clive mourned over the eclipse of his country's fame, and declared with honest scorn that "there were not five men of principle left at the presidency."

He had gone out again, however, determined, as he said himself, to "destroy these great and growing evils, or perish in the attempt." In less than two years, the task entrusted to him was fairly accomplished. Armed with the chief civil and military control, he cared nothing for the intrigues, clamours, and open resistance of his colleagues and subordinates. The taking of presents from the natives was forbidden under stern penalties, and the private trade of the Company's servants put down. Some of his opponents were turned out of office, and their places filled with gentlemen from Madras. Debarred by his instructions from raising the pay of the civil servants to a point commensurate with their official standing, Clive sought to check the tendency to make money through indirect and underhand means, by reserving the monopoly

* For a striking yet truthful picture of Bengal at this period the reader may turn with profit to Macaulay's masterly essay on "Lord Clive."

of salt, betel-nut, and tobacco, for the special use of the chief civil and military officers. After a certain sum had been set apart for the Company at home, the balance was parcelled out in so many shares among the members of council, colonels, senior merchants, factors, and other gentlemen, to each according to his rank. It is strange to think that a measure which at least succeeded in uprooting the worst abuses of a faulty system, was afterwards quoted against its author as the very wickedest of his alleged misdeeds.

In the beginning of 1767 Clive quitted for the last time the scene of achievements which, however blurred by a few acts of doubtful justice, entitle him to a foremost place in the hearts and memories of his countrymen. No other man of his age and mark, beset with like temptations, overcame them, on the whole, with loftier courage and cleaner hands. One of his last acts in India was to make over to the Company, in trust for invalided officers and soldiers, a sum of about £60,000, which Mir Jâffir had left him in his will.* In broken health he returned to England poorer than he had left it, although untold wealth from many quarters had lain within his reach.

The rest of his life-story is soon told. It was not long before his foes at the India House renewed their attacks on a hero, whose worst delinquencies were less intolerable than the good deeds of his latter years. To the blows he had struck at official knavery in Bengal, Lord Clive was mainly indebted for the storm of obloquy and personal slander, disguised as zeal for the public good, which embittered, if it did not even hasten, the close of his eventful life. Every bad act of his countrymen in India, whether done in his absence or against his express commands, was laid upon his shoulders; and the founder of our Indian Empire was held up to popular hatred as a

* Lord Clive's Fund was given up to his heirs a few years ago, after having done good service for nearly a hundred years.

monster of every vice and crime. The dreadful famine of 1770 in Bengal gave his enemies a fresh plea for venting their rancorous spite on a nobleman whose friends in Parliament were growing daily fewer. But Clive met their attacks with all his old courage and proud self-respect. From his place in the House of Commons he defended himself in a speech which for the moment silenced his accusers, and won from old Lord Chatham, who happened to hear it, the tribute of his highest praise. Before a committee of inquiry into Indian affairs he underwent an unsparing scrutiny into every act of his public life, claiming credit for the very things which his questioners sought to prove against him. He had deceived Amin Chand, but in the same circumstances he would certainly do once more the same thing. He had taken money from Mir Jâfir; but what then? Why should he feel ashamed of an act which was neither mean nor wicked? All things considered, he could only wonder that he had not taken much more.

At last, in 1772, a vote of censure was formally brought before the House of Commons. Once more Clive spoke with telling earnestness in his own defence; and the Commons, refusing to brand with infamy a name so worthy to be held in proud remembrance, resolved that Clive had rendered great and meritorious services to his country. But their verdict came too late to undo the effects of illness aggravated by years of mental anxiety. In November, 1774, the conqueror of Plassy, who had already won for his countrymen a kingdom larger and much more populous than their own, died by his own hand at the age of forty-nine.

CHAPTER II.

EVENTS IN SOUTHERN AND UPPER INDIA—1761-1775.

THE progress of events in Southern India after the fall of Pondicherry now claims our attention. With the expulsion of the French from India their English rivals found themselves charged with the military defence of the Carnatic on behalf of its nominal ruler, Mohammad Ali. But they had no money to spare for that purpose, and their spendthrift ally had even less. To replenish his own and the Madras exchequer by making war upon the Rajah of Tanjôr was Mohammad Ali's ready thought. But a peaceful settlement made with the Rajah under English prompting enabled the Madras Council to pay their way for that present, and in time the surplus revenues of the Carnatic passed entirely into their hands.

By the treaty of peace concluded between France and England in 1763, the factories taken from the French in India during the late war were given back to them, and both nations agreed to acknowledge Mohammad Ali as Nawáb of the Carnatic, and Salabat Jang as Subadar of the Dakhan. The latter, however, had been dethroned a year before by his brother Nizám Ali, who straightway put him to death as soon as he heard of the treaty. Not long afterwards the usurping fratricide invaded the Carnatic, ravaging the country as he passed along, until the bold front displayed by a small English column at Tirupatti compelled him to retrace his steps.

In pursuance of the treaty made by Clive with Shah Alam, the Madras government in 1766 sent troops to

occupy the Northern Sarkárs. But Nizám Ali, who had meanwhile turned his arms against Jánoji Bhósla, the Marátha sovereign of Berár, ill brooked the loss of further territory; and the English at Madras had no Clive at their head. Yielding to the threats of the prince they had so lately defied, they at length agreed to hold the ceded province as tributaries of Nizam Ali, and to make common cause with him against common foes.

One of these foes was Haidar Ali Khan, the Mohamadan soldier of fortune, whose stout arm and strong will, backed by a matchless talent for intrigue, had made him the foremost officer, ere long the self-chosen ruler of the old Hindu state of Maisór.* For some ten years past he had fought with varying success against the Maráthas, the Nizám, and the Nawáb of the Carnatic. But for the perils which then came near to overwhelm him in Maisór, he would have aided Lally in his last struggles against the victorious English. A few years later he had overcome all antagonists at home, had thrown into prison his old patron and ablest rival Nanjiraj, and dethroned the last and weakest of the princes who for several centuries had ruled Maisór. Since then he had carried his arms as far as Calicut and Bednór, until his growing power provoked the Peshwa Mádhu Rao to make war upon him in concert with Nizám Ali.

Early in 1767 the Maráthas invaded Maisór, and carried off rich plunder before the Nizám and his English allies were ready to fulfil their share of the compact. A few weeks later Colonel Smith, the English commander, saw too good reason to mistrust the good faith of his professed ally. At last the Nizám, who had succeeded in selling himself to his late foe, threw off the mask entirely, and marched with Haidar Ali against Smith, who had with-

* Haidar Naik, as he was first called, was born in 1702, the son of a Moghal officer in the Panjáb, where Haidar himself served as a naik, or captain, before he took service with the Rajah of Maisór.

drawn his troops from Nizám Ali's camp. On the 3rd September the allied armies, reckoned at 70,000 men, with more than 100 guns, attacked about 7,000 English and Sepoys with sixteen guns at Changáma in South Arkot, but were signally defeated with heavy loss. Retiring to Trinomalli for supplies and reinforcements, the victors, now 10,000 strong with thirty guns, were again attacked on the 26th by numbers nearly as great as before; and again their stubborn courage and steady discipline drove their assailants in disorder from the field. On that day and the next more than 4,000 of the enemy were killed or wounded, and half their guns taken by the victors, whose own loss was only 150 men. Ill supported by his ally, the resolute Haidar still kept the field; but his efforts to take the fort of Ambúr, on the road from Bangalór to Madras, were gloriously repulsed by the brave Captain Calvert, and Smith's timely appearance on the 7th December forced Haidar Ali to raise the siege and withdraw the bulk of his army into Maisór.

Early in the next year the Nizám's just fears of English vengeance were allayed by a treaty which bound him to help the Madras government in subduing his late ally, on condition of receiving tribute for the country which his new friends might conquer for themselves. Nizám Ali on his side agreed to acknowledge Mohammad Ali as ruler of the Carnatic; and the right of the Company to hold the Northern Sarkárs under the Imperial grant of 1765 was virtually admitted. Haidar himself was to be treated as a rebel and an usurper, who ought to be suppressed at any cost. By this bold if hazardous move against the ruler of Maisór, the Madras Council committed themselves and their unwilling masters at home to a deadly struggle with the boldest, fiercest, ablest, and most determined foe whom our arms have ever encountered in Southern India.

Meanwhile the Bombay government had done their best to cripple Haidar's naval power in the west, by sending

a fleet to take Mangalór and other places on the Malabar coast. It was not long, however, before the dreaded Mussulman won back his lost towns, including Mangalór, whose cowardly commander abandoned a large number of wounded English and Sepoys to the tender mercies of a ruthless and embittered foe. On the other side of his dominions, however, that foe kept losing so much ground before Colonel Smith's steady advance, that he was glad ere long to offer terms which the Madras government would have done well to accept. But the demands of the latter rose with their late successes, until Haidar, scorning to humble himself any further, and alive to every chance of bettering his own position, resolved to fight on and teach his enemies a lesson of wise forbearance in the hour of their seeming prosperity.

Before the year's end he had forced Smith to raise the siege of Baugalór, had defeated the English under Colonel Wood, had recovered the districts he would have ceded to the Company, and begun to ravage the borders of the Carnatic with fire and sword. Ere long, in spite of Smith's watchfulness, Haidar's active horsemen outflanked their opponents, and swept forward in full speed for Madras. Smith followed them, eager for revenge and victory; but it was too late. Frightened at Haidar's sudden appearance within a few miles of their own city, the Madras Council readily agreed to treat with the foe whose offers they had so lately spurned. Smith was ordered to halt his troops, while Haidar leisurely proceeded to dictate the terms of a treaty which left him master of all his former possessions, and bound both parties to help each other against all assailants. For this lame conclusion to their former menaces, the rulers of Madras excused themselves by pleading want of money to carry on the war.

About this time the Peshwa of the Maráthas had sent forth a mighty army to levy chauth on the princes of

Upper India. in the name of a power still bent on retrieving the losses of Pānīpat. When the Jāts and Rajputs had been duly plundered, the invaders swept over Rohilkhand, but were induced by timely overtures from Shujā-ud-daula to spare Audh. Masters of Dehli, they invited Shah Alam thither from his temporary capital at Allahābād. In spite of the warnings of his English friends, that weak but ambitious scion of the house of Bābar suffered himself to be escorted into Dehli by Marātha sabres, and installed by his Hindu patrons in the throne of Akbar and Aurangzib.

But the foolish Moghal soon began to chafe under the protection of his new masters, whose little finger was heavier than the loins of the Nawab-Vizier. In the latter part of 1772, when the Marāthas were engaged to the eastward in exacting fresh tribute from Rohilkhand, the Moghal Minister, Najaf Khan, was defeated by Tukaji Holkar in his attempt to ward off an attack of the Jāts upon one of the Emperor's feudatories. In vain did Najaf Khan rally his troops for yet another stand before Dehli. The Moghal capital opened its gates to the victorious Marāthas, and the fickle Emperor made his peace by disowning his brave defender, and yielding up the districts which Clive a few years before had transferred into his charge.

But the English were in no mood to suffer Maratha aggrandisement at their own expense. The presence of an English force deterred the Marāthas from entering the ceded provinces, which were afterwards handed over to the Nawāb of Audh, from whose charge they had been wrested by the English after the battle of Baxār. Meanwhile the death of the Peshwa, Madhu Rao, in November, 1772, gave the Maratha general a good excuse for withdrawing his army, laden with the plunder of many provinces, across the Narbadha before the middle of 1773.

While one great army had been thus engaged in the

north, another, led by Madhu Rao himself, had struck some heavy blows at the power of Haidar Ali, in return for his open defiance of claims pressed under former treaties. Fort after fort in his eastern provinces fell into the invaders' hands. A large part of Maisôr was ravaged by clouds of Marátha horsemen. Trimbak Máma, who took over the command from the ailing Peshwa, caught Haidar at a disadvantage on his retreat towards Seringapatam, and nothing but the Maratha greed for plunder saved Haidar's routed troops from utter annihilation. In vain did the stout-hearted ruler of Maisôr appeal to Madras for the succour which under recent treaties he had perhaps some right to claim, although he might seem to have forfeited that right by his wanton invasion of Marátha ground. The Madras Council would have given him the needful aid; but Sir John Lindsay had been sent out from England as King's envoy to the Court of Mohammad Ali, and the ruler of the Carnatic would hear of no friendly movement in behalf of his hard-pressed neighbour. Sir John himself shared the Nawab's feeling; and the Council, hampered by their conflicting duties, abandoned Haidar to his fate. Before the end of 1771 the turbulent sovereign of Maisôr was glad to obtain peace on conditions which stripped him of nearly half his kingdom, and saddled him with the payment of a heavy tribute to the Court of Puna. He never forgave the English for what he considered a cowardly breach of faith, and his son Tippu took up the legacy of revenge.

By this time a fit successor to Clive was about to assume the office which Clive's retirement had left for some years past in much weaker hands. During those years many things had gone wrong with the East India Company and its servants in Bengal. In Clive's absence the old abuses began to crop up again more and more thickly; the revenues, handsome in themselves, were wasted in the collection by all kinds of jobbery and mismanagement; the

people of Bengal suffered from heavy and unfair exactions on the part alike of English supervisors and native deputies. Immense grants of land enriched a few native jobbers at the expense of their English rulers. On the top of all this broke out the dreadful famine of 1770, when the husbandmen sold their cattle, their farming tools, their very sons and daughters for food, when the living were fain to eat the dead, when pestilence added its ravages to those of hunger, and tender women, laying aside all their wonted privacy, rushed forth unveiled into the streets to beg a handful of rice for their starving children. More than a third of the people in Bengal are reckoned to have died of famine or disease, and for years to come large tracts of once fertile country lay waste or overgrown with rank jungle.* From these and such like causes it happened that the Company was already deep in debt, at the very moment when its directors were declaring dividends of six per cent. on the half-year.

Conscious of the dangers that beset them in India, and frightened at the outcry waxing loud against them at home, the Court of Directors at length announced their resolve "to stand forth as Dewán, and to take on themselves the entire care and management of the revenues through the agency of their own servants." Hitherto the government of Bengal in all its branches had been carried on mainly through native officers, most of whom had wofully abused their powers. To the strong hands of Warren Hastings was now entrusted the execution of the desired reforms. That great, if sometimes erring statesman, had first gone out to India at the age of eighteen. Seven years later, in 1757, his talents had won the notice of the hero of Plassy, who placed him in the difficult post of Resident at the Court of Murshidabad. In 1760 he rose to be a member of the Calcutta Council, where his

* Hunter's "Annals of Rural Bengal"; Macaulay's "Essay on Lord Clive"; Girdlestone's "Report on Past Famines," &c.

great abilities and his upright dealings stood out in sharp relief against the shortcomings of profligate or blundering colleagues. Returning to England in 1764, with a good name and a purse but poorly stocked, he went out again five years later as second Member of Council at Madras. While he was doing his best there to retrieve the financial disorders consequent on the war with Haidar and the spendthrift rule of Mohammad Ali, he found himself appointed President of the Calcutta Council; and in April, 1772, Warren Hastings took charge of the post with which his name was to become inseparably linked for praise or blame in the minds of his countrymen at large.

The new Governor of Fort William lost no time in carrying out the orders he had received from home. It was to him a painful but necessary duty to begin by dealing harshly with Mohammad Reza Khan, the Mussulman Governor of Bengal, and with his Hindu helpmate, Rajah Shitáb Rai, who had fought like a Rájput hero under Captain Knox twelve years before, in the memorable rout of Shah Alam, under the walls of Patna. Both these nobles were removed from office, and afterwards brought to trial for alleged misdeeds which their accusers wholly failed to prove. Both, in due time, were formally acquitted, the Hindu with especial honour and every token of regret for the wrong unwittingly done him.

His chief foe, however, the wily Nand Kumár, who had been Governor of Húghli under Mir Jáfir, and made himself a bye-word for perfidy and intrigue, gained nothing by his unsparing efforts to supplant his worthier rivals. The powers which Hastings took out of their hands were not to be entrusted again to native overseers. Thenceforth the real government of Bengal and Bahár was handed over to the acknowledged servants of the Company. The seat of rule was finally transferred, with the Treasury and the Courts of Justice, from Murshidábád to Calcutta.

The little Nawáb himself was to retain nothing of his father's crippled sovereignty, save the name and social state of Nawáb. A son of Nand Kumár was appointed treasurer of his household. The courts of civil and crimi-



ZAMINDAR, DAGAR TRIBE.

nal justice in each district were placed under the charge of English officers ; and courts of appeal were established in Calcutta, under regulations drawn up for their guidance by the clear-headed governor himself.

Hand-in-hand with these reforms proceeded the task of

settling the revenues of the country. After a close but often baffling search into the rights of existing Zamindars or land-holders, the land of Bengal was farmed out to the highest bidders, by way of experiment, for five years.* In keeping with the immemorial usage of the country, with the practice alike of Hindu and Mohamadan rulers, Hastings looked to the land revenue as the mainstay of his new fiscal system. Several taxes which bore hard on the people, or yielded little to the Treasury, were abolished. In each district an English collector, aided by a staff of native officers, was appointed to collect the revenue, to settle all disputes between land-holders and tenants, to protect the Rayats or husbandmen from the extortions of Zamindars and native underlings, and to use his best efforts in furthering the trade and industry of his own district. To each group of districts was assigned its own commissioner, who travelled about the country as overseer or controller, and sent in his reports to a central board of revenue sitting in Calcutta.

While the new governor was thus engaged in Bengal, the process of reform was being applied by Parliament to his masters' affairs at home. The Select Committee of 1772 issued a report which became the groundwork of the Regulating Act, passed in the following year by the ministry of Lord North. An important change in the terms of admission into the Company and of election to the Court of Directors, reduced the number of stockholders greatly for the better,† and secured to each director four years of office at a time. The Governor of Fort William became Governor-General of India, with a salary of £25,000 a-year; and four members of Council, whose joint salaries amounted to £40,000 a-year, were to aid or check his movements. A Chief Justice and three puisne

* Kaye's "Administration of the East India Company," part ii, chap. 2.

† The qualification for a Proprietor was raised from £500 to £1,000.

judges, appointed by the Crown, were to form a Supreme Court of Judicature, wielding large but ill-defined powers over all persons except the Governor-General and his Council. The clamours of the Company against these inroads on their chartered rights were partly allayed by a loan of a million sterling from the Royal Exchequer; but the thin end of the wedge had been fairly driven into the fabric of their rule.

Meanwhile Hastings, urged by an empty treasury and the prayers of the Directors for more money, had been doing his best to set things financially straight in Bengal. The tribute to Shah Alam, a quarter of a million sterling, was no longer paid. For twice that sum he agreed to make over to the Nawab-Vizier of Audh the districts of Korah and Allahábád. For another large sum he agreed to lend the ambitious Shujá-ud-daula a body of English and native troops to aid in the conquest of Rohilkhand. His policy in this matter has often been denounced, by none more eloquently than Macaulay himself. But Hastings, handling the question as a statesman and a financier, paid small regard to the sentimental claims afterwards pleaded in behalf of a race of Pathan nobles too weak to bar out the Maráthas, and too turbulent to keep the peace among themselves. He knew that their leader, Háfiz Rahmat Khan, owed Shujá-ud-daula, for help given against the Maráthas, a sum which he could not or would not pay. He knew that the Moghal emperor had bestowed on our good friend, the Nawab-Vizier, the government of a province which a predecessor of Háfiz Rahmat had wrested from a Moghal emperor thirty years before. He knew that his own masters were sadly in want of money, that the troops lent out to a useful neighbour would cost his own treasury nothing in the meantime, and that a sure way of keeping the peace in Bengal was to be found in the maintenance of a strong government on its northern frontier. As for the bulk of the people in Rohilkhand, it was

not likely that they would lose on the whole by a change of masters which bade far to rescue them alike from internal troubles and foreign raids.

In accordance with these views an English force under Colonel Champion marched into the doomed province. On the 23rd April, 1774, his little army had to bear the brunt of a hard fight against 40,000 Rohillas, led by Háfiz Rahmat himself. In spite of these odds, enhanced by the cowardice of their allies, the English won the day, leaving 2,000 Rohillas with their brave leader dead or dying on the field. Bitterly did Colonel Champien inveigh against those "banditti," the men of Audh, who looked on at the fight from a safe distance and then hastened to plunder the enemy's camp. This victory sealed the doom of the Rohilla Pathans. Faizulla Khan indeed retained his father's fief of Rampur as the price of his timely submission to the Nawáb-Vizier; * but some 20,000 of his countrymen were driven out of the conquered province. It is certain, however, that the mass of the people in Rohilkhand, mostly of Hindu descent, suffered neither in purse nor person from the downfall of their late masters; and the stories of their cruel fate, as afterwards raked up in England by private and political foes of the great Governor-General, were little better than idle tales.†

Had Hastings been left free to pursue his own plans for the better government of Bengal and the safeguarding of its frontiers, some dark passages in the history of this period might have remained unwritten. But with the landing of the new councillors in October, 1771, his powers of independent action were to be sadly crippled by the malice or the misconceptions of men who combined to outvote him at every turn. Of the four members of his

* His descendants still hold their place as Nawábs of Rampur. (Keene's "Moghal Empire.")

† "The Hindu inhabitants, about 700,000, were in no way affected," writes Captain Hamilton in his "History of the Rohilla Afghans," founded on the works of Rohilla historians.

remodelled Council one only, Mr. Barwell, took the part of Hastings against a majority led by Philip Francis, one of the ablest, fiercest, wrongest-headed, most rancorous statesmen of his day. True to the character portrayed by himself in his own "Letters of Junius"—those master-pieces of spiteful satire clothed in powerful English—Francis set himself at once to the congenial task of hampering the ruler whom he had already learned to hate. Under the guise of patriotism, of upright scorn for wrongdoing, he gave full vent to the workings of a narrow mind and a thoroughly malignant heart; and in such a climate as that of Calcutta the natural sourness of his temper was pretty sure to derive fresh poison from the fierce summer heats.

His evil influence soon began to bear fruit. The Governor-General's agent at the Court of Shuja-ud-daula was replaced by another of his own choosing. In spite of Hastings' remonstrances, the English brigade was recalled from Rohilkhand. On the death of the Nawab-Vizier his successor, Asaf-ud-daula, was forced to make over the district of Banaras to his English allies, and to pay a larger subsidy for the use of his borrowed Sepoys. Francis and his friends in the Council thwarted and overrode Hastings at every turn. They interfered with a high hand in the affairs of Bombay and Madras; their meddling fingers left unseemly marks on the government of Bengal itself. They listened with greedy ears to every charge which the enemies of Hastings were but too ready to bring against a governor fallen into manifest disgrace. In India it is always easy to complete the ruin of dishonoured greatness by means of false witnesses and forged papers; and the friends of Francis in the Calcutta Council became ready dupes of all who owed Hastings a grudge or deemed it politic to win the favour of his opponents.

Foremost among the crows who hastened to peck at that wounded vulture was the wily Hindu Nand Kumar.

He had never forgiven Hastings for cheating him of his hoped-for succession to the post of Mohammad Reza Khan, and now it seemed as if the hour for his revenge had struck at last. This man, a master of intrigue and falsehood, openly charged the Governor-General with having taken bribes from the widow of Mir Jāffir, from Mohammad Reza Khan, and several others. In the Council he found a ready hearing. Scorning to defend himself against such a man before such a court, Hastings left the council-room, followed by his friend Barwell. But Francis and the other two voted themselves a council, went into the charges put forth by Nand Kumar, and declared Hastings guilty of having amassed no less than forty lakhs of rupees—£100,000—in two years and a-half by all kinds of underhand means.*

For a moment Nand Kumār could revel in the sweetness of gratified revenge. Courtied by many of his own countrymen, and strong in the support of Francis and his English partisans, he little knew what an undercurrent of disaster was about to drag him down into its lowest depths. Scorning defeat at the hands of such a foe, Hastings turned for help to the Supreme Court. A charge of false swearing and conspiracy was lodged against the villanous Brahman. While the trial was yet pending one Mohan Prasād renewed on his own account an old action for forgery against the Rajah, who had once been saved from impending danger by the timely intervention of Hastings himself. The case thus suspended a few years before was now transferred to the Supreme Court. Convicted on the clearest evidence, Nand Kumar was condemned to death in accordance with the law which Sir Elijah Impey and his brother judges were bound to administer.

It was not the first time that a native of India had been doomed to the same punishment for the same offence.

* The whole charge was afterwards proved to be a wilful falsehood, founded on letters forged by Nand Kumār himself.

Ten years before a Hindu of rank had only escaped hanging by a timely reprieve^{*}; but since then at least two natives had been less fortunate. With the arraignment of the guilty Rajah, Hastings had nothing whatever to do; still less, if possible, with his execution. He had been fairly tried before an English jury, and all four judges had concurred in dooming him to a felon's death. From that fate neither Francis nor his colleagues made any effort to save the prisoner. No prayer for respite was presented by any of the prisoner's friends, native or English, to the Supreme Court. One petition, indeed, was forwarded by Nand Kumar himself to General Clavering of the Supreme Council; but that petition was first presented at the Council Board eleven days after the writer's death, and Francis it was who proposed to have it burned as a libel by the hands of the common hangman.

On the morning of the 5th August, 1775, Nand Kumar underwent the doom which, as a British subject amenable to the stern English law of that day, he had richly deserved. The most brilliant of English essayists has drawn a powerful picture of the horror, grief, dismay, which the hanging of so eminent a Brahman, for an offence in native eyes so venial, produced upon the minds of his countrymen in Calcutta and elsewhere. More than one historian of British India has dressed up in his own words the lurid fiction which Francis was the first to circulate many years after the event. In plain truth, however, the sentence of the law was carried out before spectators moved far more by curiosity than concern.

Of the Hindus who thronged at the gallows' foot few gave any signs of wild excitement. No loud shriek of horror and despair went up to heaven from the gathered

* "Memoirs of Sir Elijah Impey," by his Son, pp. 99 and 299, &c. The reprieve of Râdachand Mithra had been owing to the fact that he was the first Hindu condemned for forgery under English law.

mass; but an audible hum of satisfaction went round the Mohammadans as the drop fell upon "the worst man in India," the perjured persecutor of Mohammad Reza Khan. As for the alleged rush of sorrowing Hindus to wash out the pollution of witnessing such a sight in the sacred Húghli, it was simply a natural movement from the scene of a tragedy already complete to the wonted bathing-gháts of a river that rolled hard by.¹

* It is a pity that Macaulay's splendid essay on Warren Hastings should have been marred by his rash adoption of the slanders circulated by Sir Philip Francis against both Hastings and Sir Elijah Impey. The whole story of Nand Kumár's trial and execution, as told in his pages, betrays a curious want of insight into the character of Francis, a perverse blindness to the legal questions involved in the case, and an unaccountable ignorance of the documents whence Mr. Impey drew the means of clearing not only his own father but Hastings himself from the groundless inventions of a spiteful partisan.

CHAPTER III.

WARREN HASTINGS—1775-1786.

THE troubles of Hastings were not over with the death of Nand Kunnár. His wiser policy was thwarted at every turn by the mischievous meddling of Francis and his partisans. In Andh their chosen agent, Bristow, supported the ladies of the late Nawáb's household in their seemingly unfounded claim to all the treasure, about two millions sterling, which Shuja-ud-daula had left behind him. In spite of his own empty treasury, of his growing debts to the Bengal Government, and of the Governor-General's earnest remonstrances, the new Nawab-Vizier was compelled to forego his just share of the property in dispute. A fearful mutiny among his unpaid troops, quelled at last with heavy loss of life, was the natural, if sad result of the measures sanctioned by the Calcutta Council.

Nor was the outlook for Hastings much brighter elsewhere. If he had many friends both in India and in England, the Prime Minister, Lord North, and a majority in the Court of Directors sided with his opponents in the Bengal Council. His measures were condemned by the Directors, who, under Lord North's prompting, sought to remove him from his post; but the Court of Proprietors flocked to his support, and quashed, by a large majority, the vote of their own directors. Thus encouraged, Hastings struggled on at his thankless task. At last, in September, 1776, the death of Colonel Monson gave him the casting vote in his own council. Once more he found himself

free to govern in his own way, unchecked by the ignorance or the malice of inferior men.

But a new danger ere long confronted him. During the previous troubles he had lodged with Colonel Maclean a conditional offer to resign his post. This offer, in spite of its subsequent withdrawal, the Directors chose to accept as final, and Mr. Wheeler was ordered out to replace him. Before his arrival the senior member of council, General Clavering, had installed himself as acting Governor-General, and commanded the troops in Fort William to obey no other orders than his own. Francis, of course, was ready to follow up any blow aimed at his hated rival. But Hastings had no mind to throw up a doubtful game. His own orders to the troops were cheerfully obeyed. Colonel Morgan at once closed the gates of Fort William against Clavering. A like answer came from Barrackpore. An appeal made by Hastings to the Supreme Court clinched the defeat of his opponents. Impey and his fellow judges ruled that Clavering had no power to assume an office which Hastings had not yet formally resigned. The General and his followers had the wisdom to accept the award, and Hastings, who had promised to accept it for worse or better, at once withdrew from all further action against his defeated colleague.*

Two months afterwards Clavering died, and Wheeler, who had gone out to replace Monson, usually voted with Francis against the Governor-General. Hastings, however, had still the casting vote, and the gallant Sir Eyre Coote, who presently took his seat in council as successor to Clavering in the chief command of the troops, gave small encouragement to the factious Francis.

During the lull which followed this passing squall, Hastings carried on the work of government with a firm and skilful hand. Before the last settlement of the land

* See letter from Sir E. Impey, quoted by his son. "Memoirs," pp. 162—5.

revenue expired in 1777, he had sent out commissioners to collect the means of renewing it in a better form, with especial regard for the just claims of the Ráyats or husbandmen to protection from the demands of encroaching or needy Zamindárs. The latter also were to be assessed at a lighter rate, for many of them had suffered heavily under the assessments of 1772. For the next four years the revised leases were renewed yearly, with such corrections as policy or justice might demand. Meanwhile the enemies of Hastings at home still found fault with everything he did or planned; but in spite of all their railings, the services of such a ruler were not to be lightly dispensed with at a time when England, hard pressed by a war with her American colonies and threatened on all sides by European foes, had special need of all her ablest men. At the end of his term of office in 1778, Hastings found himself reappointed for another five years.

At that time a new danger was met by the dauntless Viceroy with his usual readiness of resource. In 1775 the Bombay Government had somewhat rashly pledged itself to uphold the cause of Ragoba, the erstwhile conqueror of Lahór and sometime prisoner of his nephew Madhu Rao, against a rival claimant to the headship of the Marátha League. On the murder of Madhu's brother, the young and promising Narain Rao, in 1773, his restless uncle and suspected murderer, Ragoba, had declared himself Peshwa, while another party headed by the able Brahman Minister, Nána Farnawis, presently set up a posthumous son of Narain Rao on the throne of his murdered father. The Maratha leaders took different sides according as their interests or jealousies might lead them. Ragoba turned for help to the English at Bombay, who were nothing loath to turn his needs to their own advantage. Without consulting the Government of Bengal, they agreed to help him with a body of troops in return for

the cession of Salsette and Bassein, an island and a port near Bombay itself, and for a handsome yearly payment to the Bombay Treasury. Colonel Keating led his troops into the Marátha country, routed an army ten-fold stronger than his own at Arras, near Baróda, and drove the enemy across the Nabadha, while a heavy defeat was inflicted on the Maráthas by sea.

If Hastings condemned the Treaty of Surat as an impolitic measure which he had never sanctioned, he was not for rashly setting it aside in the face of these successes. But in these days the party of Francis had its own way in the Bengal Council; and the Bombay Government was ordered to withdraw all its troops forthwith. Colonel Upton was sent from Calcutta to undo the work so promisingly begun. But the insolence of the Púna Regency had well-nigh renewed the war, when Nána Farnawis at length accepted the compromise offered by the English envoy. By the Treaty of Puranda the English retained possession of Salsette, which they had already won; their claim on the revenues of Baróch was also acknowledged; but the rest of their agreement with Ragoba was formally annulled, in return for a pension allotted by the Puna Government to their late ally.

New causes of quarrel, however, soon arose. A despatch from the Court of Directors confirmed the former treaty with Ragoba. Neither at Bombay nor Púna was the new treaty carefully observed. From mutual bickerings the quarrel proceeded to words and acts of mutual defiance. Surat was occupied by troops from Bombay. Ragoba himself was welcomed to the former city as an honoured guest. On the other hand, a French adventurer was received at Púna with open arms as an accredited envoy from the King of France, who was just on the point of declaring war with England. Hastings also was now free to act according to his own judgment; and the timely secession of Sakharám Bápu from the Púna Regency

furnished a new plea for returning to the policy always favoured at Bombay.

At length, in the cold season of 1778, an English force took the field from the western capital, while a Bengal column under the skilful Colonel Goddard pushed on through Bundalkhand and Málwa, to cross the Narbadha before the close of the year. Meanwhile the Nána had struck some hard blows at his Marátha assailants; and Ragoba's prospects were already darkening when Colonel Egerton advanced towards Puna across the Gháts. They were now to become still darker. At Taligáon, within a forced march of Púna itself, a strange panic beset the Commissioner, Mr. Carnac, whose powers entirely overruled those of the English commanders. The order for retreat was given, the guns were hastily thrown into a pond, and nothing but the cool courage of Captain Hartley and his rear-guard of Sepoys saved the whole force from annihilation at the hands of an enemy who had hitherto shrunk from barring its advance. Two days later, on the 13th January, 1779, the English leaders crowned their disgrace by bargaining for a safe retreat for an army which under better handling might have borne Ragoba in triumph to the Maratha capital.

A new gleam of hope, however, was soon to shine for that luckless prince. Neither at Bombay nor Calcutta was any respect shown for the disgraceful Convention of Worgáom. Its English authors were dismissed the Company's service. Colonel Goddard brought his troops in safety to Surat. His proposals for a fresh treaty falling through, he took the field at the beginning of 1780, captured among other places Ahmadábád, the stately capital of Gujarát, and twice defeated the Marátha troops of Sindia and Holkar. The gallant Hartley pushed his way in the Kánkan. Meanwhile, another Bengal column under the daring Major Popham, which had been sent by Hastings across the Jamna, drove Sindia's Maráthas before

them, stormed the fort of Lahor, and carried by a well-planned escalade the formidable rock-fortress of Gwalior, which Coote himself had deemed it madness to attack.* Before the year's end Bassein had surrendered to Goddard, and the dashing Hartley crowned his former exploits by signally defeating 20,000 Marathas who had been pressing him hard for two days.

These successes were followed by the surprise and rout of Sindia,† in March, 1781, at the hands of Popham's successor, Colonel Camac. On the west, however, Goddard was less fortunate. A mighty gathering of the Maratha hosts barred his way to Puna from the top of the Ghâts and went near to cut off his retreat. To advance was hopeless, to stand still was little better. It only remained for him to attempt a hazardous retreat before 60,000 pursuers, keen for his destruction. Thanks to their own courage and their leader's skill, his troops succeeded in the attempt, but not without paying dearly for their success.

By this time evil tidings had come to Hastings from Madras. Ever since their rejection of his prayers for help against the Marathas, Haider Ali had been nursing his revenge against the English. For some years, however, he contented himself with trying to repair his crippled fortunes at every turn. Before the end of 1772 he had subdued the brave highlanders of Kurg, hundreds of whom were murdered by his orders in cold blood. In little more than a year later he had made good all his former losses, and before the end of 1776 new provinces had been added to his widening frontier. Two years later his northern frontier had been pushed up to the Kistna.

Meanwhile Haider's fear of the Marathas had tempted

* It was taken by Captain Bruce and twenty Sepoys.

† Mahdaji Sindia, a younger son of Ranoji Sindia, had escaped, with a wound which lamed him for life, from the rout of Pánipat, to become the head of the house of Sindia.

him more than once to renew his overtures to the English at Madras. But the latter, taken up with their own schemes, quarrels, and perplexities, paid little heed to the advances of a neighbour whose power for mischief they underrated, or whose friendliness they would not trust. Balked by the home government in their unjust designs on Tanjor, overruled continually by orders from Calcutta, hampered by their relations with the Nawab of the Carnatic, and pressed by a chronic want of funds, the Madras Council filled up the measure of their weakness by reckless quarrelling among themselves. One governor was sent home in disgrace; another, Lord Pigot, was held prisoner by his colleagues for several months; and his successor, Sir Thomas Rumbold, became from the first a mark for the many slanders which were destined long to survive him.

Hardly had Rumbold taken up his office, when he learned that war had already broken out between France and England. This became the signal for a prompt attack on the few places still held by the French in Southern India. With the fall of Pondicherry in October, 1778, Mahé alone, a town on the western coast, remained in French hands. In the following March, Mahe also fell to our arms, and very wroth thereat was Haidar Ali, some of whose troops had aided in the defence. His anger at the blow thus dealt to his secret friends was increased by the march of English troops through his newly conquered province of Karpa into the Gantur district, which Nizam Ali's brother Basalat Jang had lately rented to the government of Madras.* Now, if ever, had come the time to drive his old enemies into the sea. His own army, 90,000 strong, well-equipped, and trained by French officers, might alone suffice for that purpose. Backed by the hosts of Nizam Ali and Nawa Farnawis, its shock would be irresistible.

* Haidar had long marked out Gantur for himself.

A willing listener to a tempting offer did the envoy from Púna find in the fierce old sovereign of Maisór. If Haidar loved the Maráthas little more than the English, he had no objection to make use of either for his own ends. Turning a deaf ear to the counter offers now made by Sir Thomas Rumbold, he prepared, in his seventy-eighth year, for a campaign which might end in leaving him master of all Southern India. Happily for us at this critical moment, Nizám Ali's quarrel with his English neighbours, regarding the tribute claimed from them for the Northern Sarkárs, was allayed by the timely interference of the Governor-General, enforced perhaps by his own fears of the danger involved in furthering the secret schemes of so ambitious a plotter as the Sultan of Maisór.*

If Rumbold was dimly aware of coming danger, neither his own councillors nor Hastings himself, at the beginning of 1780, seems to have guessed how near and terrible that danger was.† Sir Hector Munro himself, as head of the Madras army, made no effort to meet the storm whose warning murmurs already filled the air. In every mosque and pagoda of Maisór Haidar's agents were busy preaching a *Jihád* or holy war against the infidels from the West. At length, in July 1780, the hosts of Maisór poured like a lava-flood through their mountain-passes over the Carnatic: their progress marked by burning villages, whose smoke ere long became clearly visible to scared spectators from the heights near Madras.

To meet this formidable inroad, Sir Hector Munro, with about five thousand men, set out from Conjevcram, while Colonel Baillie had to lead about half that number round

* It was given out that Haidar had obtained from the puppet Emperor of Dehli a formal grant of sovereignty over all the Nizám's dominions.

† In reply to Rumbold's warnings, Hastings declared himself "convinced, from Hyder's conduct and disposition, that he will never molest us while we preserve a good understanding with him." See Marshman's "India," vol. i., Appendix.

from Gantúr. Precious days were lost to the latter by a sudden flood; and on the 6th September, when he was only a long day's march from Conjeveram, his little force was fiercely attacked by Tippu, the brave son of Haidar. A timely reinforcement, under Colonel Fletcher, enabled Baillie to press onwards until the 9th, when only two or three miles divided him from Munro. But between them lay the bulk of Haidar's army, and next morning Baillie saw himself beset on all sides by overwhelming odds. All that day his men fought on under every disadvantage, vainly hoping for the help that never came. The victor of Baxár proved utterly false to his old renown. Unmoved by the sounds of the heavy firing which was dealing havoc in his subaltern's ranks, Munro never budged an inch to rescue him. At last, in despair of maintaining a hopeless struggle, Baillie surrendered, and three hundred English soldiers, the feeble remnant of his shattered force, laid down their arms. But for the timely interference of Haidar's French officers, even these, in spite of their surrender, would have all been butchered where they stood. As it turned out, few of them were destined to survive the wasting effects of wounds, sickness, and prolonged ill-treatment in the noisome prisons of Maisór.*

Munro himself, who seems to have been paralysed by the impending failure of supplies for his own army, fell back at once to Conjeveram. Thence, after throwing his heavy guns into a tank, and sacrificing much baggage, he hurried off in quest of supplies to Chinglipat. Disappointed there also, he retreated on the 14th September to St. Thomas's Mount, near Madras, leaving Haidar to waste the Carnatic at his leisure, and to bring the siege of Arkot to a successful close.

When tidings of these disasters reached Calcutta,

* Out of Baillie's eighty-six officers, thirty-six were slain or mortally wounded, and only sixteen surrendered without a wound.

Hastings met the occasion with his wonted fearlessness. A fresh quarrel with his old enemy Francis, who had broken his pledge to oppose none of Hastings' larger measures after the return home of Mr. Barwell, had just issued in a duel, from which Francis bore off a wound that did not tend to improve his temper. Backed, however, by Sir Eyre Coote, Hastings kept the upper hand in his Council. Not a moment did he now lose in developing his own plans for the salvation of Madras at any cost. Sir Eyre Coote, with a choice array of Bengal troops, was at once despatched to the scene of danger in supersession of Munro. The acting Governor of Madras was removed from his post. Even the Company's remittances to England were held back for the better carrying on of war against Haidar Ali.

Arrived at Madras, Clive's old comrade hurried off to the relief of Wandiwash, the scene of his former victory over Lally. The news of his approach frightened the enemy away from a place which Lieutenant Flint, with the aid of a hundred men, had been defending with the courage of a second Clive. The relief of Chinglipat and the capture of Karangali had marked the first stages of Coote's advance. Coote's repulse in June before Chillambram encouraged Haidar to make a dash on Kadalor, while Coote was resting his troops at Porto Novo. But the fiery veteran made haste to grapple with his powerful opponent, and on the 1st July his eight thousand men hurled themselves against ten times their number with a force that nothing could long withstand. After six hours' fighting the enemy fled, leaving ten thousand on the field, while Coote's loss amounted only to three hundred, so well had his guns been served.

Again the two armies came together in August near the scene of Baillie's great disaster; but this time the victory was less complete. On the 27th September, however, Haidar was utterly defeated at Sholingarh, with the loss

of five thousand men. By this time Lord Macartney, the new Governor of Madras, was preparing another force for the capture of the Dutch possessions in Southern India; Holland also having been added to the number of our foes. The fall of Negapatam in November was followed in January of the next year by the capture of Trincomalee, in the neighbouring island of Ceylon.

Before Coote took the field again, Mohammad Ali, the worthless ruler of the Carnatic, had been forced to make over to the Company for five years the revenues he had hitherto squandered on himself, while the men who fought for him were in perpetual risk of starving. Thenceforth the movements of our troops would not be hampered by the want of those supplies which the Nawab had so often failed to furnish at the right moment.

In the beginning of 1782 Coote hastened to the relief of Vellor, which, but for his timely movement, must soon have fallen into Haidar's clutches. A few days later the arrival of succours from Bombay enabled Major Abingdon, the bold defender of Talicharri, in Malabar, to rout the army which had vainly besieged him for eighteen months. Calicut, on the same coast, next fell to the English arms. But these successes were soon to be balanced by failures and mishaps elsewhere. Forty thousand of Tippu's soldiers fell upon Colonel Braithwaite's little force of two thousand men—nearly all Sepoys—in Tanjör; and after a fight, prolonged with matchless heroism, for twenty-six hours, the wasted remnants of Braithwaite's band were saved from utter extinction only by the generous efforts of Tippu's French allies. French fleets appeared from time to time on the Madras coast, to be encountered with small result by English admirals. Kadalör was taken at last with the help of Suffrein's sailors, and Admiral Hughes was too late to save Trincomalee. If Coote's dashing energy once more rescued Wandiwash, and dealt Tippu another defeat at Arni, his movement against Kadalör failed for

want of timely succour from the fleet ; and the close of that year saw him trying to recruit his shattered health in Bengal. What with the desolation of the Carnatic, the famine raging around Madras, the daily expected landing of French troops led by the renowned Bussy himself, the losses caused to English shipping by gales on the eastern coast, and Humberstone's retreat before Haidar on the Bombay side, the outlook for our countrymen in Southern India at the end of 1782 was almost as dark as ever.

One gleam, however, brightened it even then. On the 7th December Haidar Ali died at the great age of eighty, worn out by an illness which had never kept him from sharing like a common trooper in the toils of the past campaign. Earlier in the same year Hastings had succeeded in detaching the last of the Marátha leaders from their alliance with the Sultan of Maisór. The first to make peace with him was the Rajah of Berár, who, early in 1781, had sanctioned the march of a Bengal brigade through Orissa towards Madras.* His example was followed by Sindia, after his defeat by Colonel Carnac ; and at length, in May, 1782, was concluded the Treaty of Sálbai, which left Maisór to fight on single-handed against the English power. By this treaty Sindia regained his lost possessions, all but Gwalior, besides new territory about Baroch ; the Gaikwar of Gujarát became an independent prince ; Ragoba was to retire into private life on a handsome pension ; and Bassein, with some other districts, was surrendered to Nána Farnawis as regent for the young Peshwa. It was not, however, till after Haidar's death that the Nána set his seal to a compact which further bound him to aid in rescuing the Carnatic from the yoke of Maisór.

The news of his father's death brought Tippu back for a time from the western coast to his own capital, to

* This brigade suffered heavily on its march from cholera, the disease which has since become endemic in many parts of India.

make sure of his succession to the vacant throne. Ero long death relieved him of his stoutest foe, the war-worn Coote, who barely lived to reach Madras once more. In April, 1783, Bussy himself landed on the eastern coast and led his Frenchmen to the defence of Kadalór. By that time, however, Tippu was far away to the westward, opening his batteries on the hill-fort of Bednór, held by some of the troops whose valour had hewn a way for General Matthews into the highlands of Maisór. After a brave defence, Bednór was surrendered a heap of ruins, and its luckless garrison, in breach of Tippu's pledged word, marched off in irons to the neighbouring fortresses. Yet more protracted was the defence of Mangalór by Colonel Campbell. At last, however, the wasted garrison, cheated of the supplies assured to them under an armistice, were fortunate in being allowed to march out with all the honours of war at the end of January, 1784.

Meanwhile neither Bussy nor General Stuart had made much progress in the Carnatic. Two sallies ordered by Bussy from Kadalór were repulsed with heavy loss.* The fleets of Hughes and Suffrein fought and parted without result. At length came tidings of peace between France and England, when all hostile movements on either side were staid by mutual agreement, and the French officers in Tippu's army left him to carry on the war alone.

By this time another British force under Colonel Fullarton was steadily advancing into the highlands of Maisór. Before him lay the road to Seringapatam, and a fair chance of finishing the war by a few bold strokes. But the Governor of Madras, unheeding the counsel and the commands of Hastings, stooped to sue for the peace which Fullarton was eager to dictate under the walls of Tippu's capital. That brave officer was ordered to fall back, in compliance with a

* In one of these actions Sergeant Bernadotte, the future King of Sweden, was taken prisoner by the English.

truce which Tippu was openly breaking. Lord Macartney's messengers were received with studied insolence by a monarch bent on turning their master's folly to his own profit. Not till Mangulór had fallen into his hands did the wily Sultan deign to consider the object of their errand, or even to let them enter his camp. At last, on the 11th March, 1784, the long series of scornful insults was crowned by the sight of two English envoys standing for two hours before Tippu, with heads bare, beseeching him to sign the treaty they held in their hands. Their prayers were finally granted at the intercession of envoys from Puna and Haidarabád. By this act of needless self-abasement the Madras Government purchased a peace which restored to each party their former possessions, and rescued more than a thousand Englishmen from the slow torture of prison life in Maisor. At the best, however, it was only a hollow truce, which Tippu, at once a fanatic, a restless schemer, and a born foe to the English, was pretty sure to break at the first opportunity.

CHAPTER IV.

WARREN HASTINGS—(*continued*).

IN the midst of his anxieties concerning the war in Southern India, Hastings found himself involved in fresh troubles nearer home. The conflicting claims of the Company's civil servants and the crown judges in Bengal to jurisdiction over the natives beyond Calcutta, had brought him for a time into direct collision with the Supreme Court, headed by his best friend, Sir Elijah Impey. A war of writs on the one hand, of proclamations on the other, raged between the two parties. Arrests, resisted by the Company's soldiers acting under Hastings' orders, were enforced by the Calcutta judges with the help of sailors and policemen hired for the purpose. Hastings forbade the Bengal Zamindars from obeying the decrees of a court whose claims appeared to clash with the higher interests of the State. The Chief Justice in his turn issued summonses against the Governor-General and his Council, a proceeding which the latter laughed to scorn. Stories of outrages committed on either side were rife throughout the country, and the whole machinery of government was fast approaching a dead lock.

Happily, just before the departure of Francis, the quarrel was appeased by a timely movement on Hastings' part. The Sadr Dewāni Adālat, or chief civil court of Bengal, as reformed by Hastings a few months earlier, was placed before the end of 1780 under the charge of Impey himself. The wisdom of this step soon became clear. An able lawyer and an upright judge, Impey

at once drew up a simple and serviceable code of rules for the better administration of civil justice throughout Bengal. The young English judges in the lower courts soon learned to mend their ways and shape their judgments in careful accordance with the principles laid down by their new chief. The old broils between rival authorities came to an end; law and order reigned once more throughout the province; waste lands were brought again under the plough; and revenue began to flow with its former freedom into the Company's treasury.

This stroke of policy on the part of Hastings was hailed at the time by the Court of Directors with their hearty approval. But ere long their ears were poisoned by slanders emanating from the spiteful Francis, who, leaving India at the end of 1780, had carried his rancour and a goodly fortune home. In the course of 1782 they decreed the removal of Impey from a post whose burdens he had meanwhile borne with signal credit, at his own unaided cost.* A few months afterwards, his enemies at home had succeeded in carrying through the House of Commons a vote for the absolute recall of a Chief Justice who had ventured to take office under the Company while yet a servant of the Crown.

Meanwhile Hastings, pressed for money to carry on the war with Haidar, had demanded from his feudatory, the Rajah of Banâras, a special aid of £50,000 and 2,000 horse. Chait Singh's evasive answers failed to soften the heart of a governor who had good reason to believe in the Rajah's power to meet so moderate a demand. Not till Hastings approached Banâras in August, 1781, did Chait Singh strive to avert his anger by begging him to take twenty lakhs of rupees—£200,000—in payment of all

* Through his acceptance of this further office, "the Chief Justice," says Macaulay, "was rich, quiet, and infamous." Unluckily for the brilliant essayist, the fact is that Impey refused the additional £5,000 a-year which the Calcutta Council would gladly have paid him for the additional work.

claims. Hastings sternly insisted on fifty lakhs. A few days afterwards, on reaching Banaras with an escort of native troops, he placed the Rajah under arrest. The people of the city rose upon the Sepoy guard, and slew them almost to a man. Chait Singh, escaping across the river, called his followers to arms. In that hour of supreme peril, with only half a hundred Sepoys between him and the insurgent rabble of a great city, Hastings quietly gave the last touches to his treaty with Sindia. Faithful messengers, stealing out of Banáras, carried his orders to the nearest military posts in Bengal. At the first opportune moment, he himself withdrew to the fortress of Chunár, to await the issue of his plans for suppressing the revolt.

Defeated in the field, Chait Singh fled at last into Bundalkhand. His stronghold of Bijigarh fell into the hands of Major Popham, the conqueror of Gwalior, and the booty found there was divided among our troops. The bulk of Chait Singh's wealth, however, had followed him into his place of exile; and the Governor-General, balked of his prey, consoled himself by exacting a larger tribute from the prince whom he set up in his uncle's room.

Hastings was yet at Chunár, when a new way of replenishing his drained exchequer was opened to him by the treaty which he concluded with Asaf-ud-daula, the Nawáb of Audh. By this arrangement, the one dark spot, perhaps, in a bright career, the property which the Audh Bégams, the widow and mother of the late Nawáb, had unjustly retained for their own use six years before, was now escheated to its rightful owner, the Nawáb himself. Of this sum at least half a million was paid into the Bengal treasury in acquittal of the Nawáb's debts to the Bengal Government. It was believed, indeed, by Hastings himself that the despoiled princesses had conspired against him with Chait Singh; but the grounds for such an in-



BANCHARA

dictment have never been fully ascertained, and the harsh measures taken by the Nawáb to enforce his claims have ever since redounded, however unfairly, to the discredit of Hastings himself.* The money thus obtained, on whatever pretexts, enabled Hastings to carry on the war with Maisór, and to complete his successful dealings with the Maráthas.

By this time the reign of the great Governor-General was drawing to its close. Censured by the Court of Directors for his share in the dethronement of Chait Singh and the plundering of the Audh Bégams, opposed once more by the members of his own council, Hastings at length prepared to throw up his thankless post. Before carrying out his purpose, he visited Lucknow in 1784, and, in compliance with orders received from England, compelled the Nawáb-Vizier to reinstate the Bégams in their forfeited jágírs. When all the more pressing affairs of his government had been duly settled, he issued farewell letters to all the native princes, handed over the keys of Fort William to his successor, Mr. Macpherson, and on the 8th February, 1785, sped by the good wishes of admiring thousands, he sailed away from the country which he had ruled for thirteen years, amidst every kind of danger, vexation, and discouragement, with a vigour, wisdom, self-reliance, and general mastery of his means, unsurpassed, if it has ever since been equalled, in the annals of British India.†

The welcome which Hastings at first received in England was not unworthy of his high deserts. At Court he

* One of the Bégams was alive, hearty, and "very rich" in 1803, when Lord Valentia visited Lucknow. ("Memoirs of Sir E. Incey," p. 236.)

† In Hastings the scholar was largely blended with the statesman. A steady patron of Eastern learning, he spoke the languages of India with ease, and was deeply versed in Arabic and Persian literature. Ignorant himself of Sanskrit, he encouraged the study of it among his countrymen, and his influence led the Pandits of Bengal to teach English scholars the classical lore of ancient India.

was treated with every mark of respect. Of His Majesty's ministers, Pitt alone viewed the great Viceroy with unfriendly eyes, and declined to recommend him for the peerage he had so fairly earned. His services were acknowledged by the Court of Directors in a formal sitting, at which no voice was raised against him. He soon found a seat in the House of Commons. But rest from further trouble was not yet to be his lot. Pitt's ministry had just succeeded in carrying the famous India Bill of 1784, which placed the Court of Directors under the general control of a board composed of privy councillors, headed by a minister of the Crown. If any traces of political power still remained in the hands of the Directors, the Court of Proprietors ceased to have any direct voice in the government of India. Under this arrangement Hastings lost the help of his most serviceable friends; and in Parliament his enemies were neither few nor powerless. At their head was the eloquent and high-souled Burke himself, supported by Fox, Sheridan, and all the strength of the Whigs. In the background stood his inveterate foe, Sir Philip Francis, who furnished the Whig leaders with an ample store of arguments, fair or foul, for the coming attack. What friends Hastings might still number on the Tory side of the House were all too weak to make head against the hostile influences wielded by their great leader, Pitt.

Early in June, 1785, Burke opened his campaign against the late Governor-General, who had landed in England but a few days before. In April of the following year his list of charges was laid before the Commons' House. In the matter of the Rohilla war, Pitt sided with the friends of Hastings; but when the treatment of Chait Singh came up for discussion, he was found voting with the majority in favour of the motion brought up by Fox. On the charge concerning the Audh Begams, memorable for Sheridan's masterpiece of fiery rhetoric, Pitt once

more threw his vote and influence into the scale against Hastings.

At last, in February, 1788, the final impeachment of the great English proconsul was begun before the assembled peers of England by Burke himself. For seven years the trial dragged on, until in April, 1795, Hastings found himself acquitted on every charge by a majority always large, sometimes overwhelming, of the twenty-nine peers who came to record their votes. He left their presence with a clear character, but an almost empty purse, the great bulk of his moderate savings having gone to meet the expenses of his long trial. But the timely grant of a liberal pension by the Court of Directors enabled him to spend his declining years in comfort and scholarly ease on the ancestral estate of Daylesford, which had been lost to his family for more than seventy years. Long afterwards, in 1813, when the charter of the East India Company was to be renewed, Hastings, now in his eighty-second year, once more presented himself at the bar of the House of Commons. This time, however, he came, not as an arraigned criminal, but as a witness who had weighty things to say on many questions of Indian government. The Commons, who had greeted his entrance with admiring cheers, rose and uncovered when he withdrew. Other tokens of respect and honour awaited him elsewhere, in London, Oxford, and at Court. He was made a member of the Privy Council, a doctor of laws; the Prince Regent presented him to his royal guests, the Emperor of Russia and the King of Prussia, in whose train he went to Oxford; and the hope of yet higher honours once more dawned upon him. But the half-promised peerage was still deferred; and in 1818 the white-haired statesman quietly breathed his last at Daylesford, in the eighty-sixth year of a life whose peaceful ending could hardly have been foregathered from its stormy noon.

Before his departure from India, Hastings had ordered

the Government of Madras to annul the agreement which placed the revenues of the Carnatic at their entire disposal. Against this act of well-meant but doubtful policy, Lord Macartney fought for a time with much success. But a fresh order from Dundas, the first President of the new Board of Control, overrode the policy upheld by Lord Macartney and sanctioned by the India House. Sir John Macpherson, who was acting in the room of Hastings, shrank from disobeying the commands of Dundas; and the revenues, which in English hands would have been turned to good account, were at length surrendered into those of a spendthrift prince who owed everything he had to English support and forbearance. The result of this step was to enrich a number of greedy adventurers, native and European, who had lent money to the Nawab at enormous interest, and screwed untold profits out of the large estates assigned them in partial payment of their claims.

Sir John Macpherson continued to hold office until the autumn of 1786, when Lord Cornwallis, a statesman and soldier of some merit during the war with our American colonies, took up the reins of power at Calcutta. Sir John's government, if not otherwise eventful, had been marked by his stern refusal to pay chauth to the Maráthas for Bengal, and by his undoubted success in reducing the public outlay. In Southern India a brief war between Tippu and the Maráthas ruffled for a time the general peace; and Sindia in the north was already scheming to overthrow the last relics of Moghal rule around Delhi. But not till after the landing of Sir John's successor did the old storm of war and general tumult burst forth again with a fury which English guns and bayonets alone could check.

CHAPTER V.

LORD CORNWALLIS—1786-1793.

LIKE many of his successors, Lord Cornwallis landed in India full of wise resolutions against war and conquest, and eager only to ensure peace and good government in the dominions entrusted to his charge. For a time his efforts were rewarded with success. Armed with powers which Hastings would have envied,* he put down abuses with a stern hand, raised the salaries of the civil servants, and set his face like a flint against every kind of jobbery and crooked dealing. The Nawáb-Vizier of Audh was sharply lectured for his shortcomings as a ruler; but his future payments to the Calcutta treasury were curtailed by more than a third, and his general right to mismanage his own affairs, and waste his revenues, if he chose, in riotous living, was carefully respected.

By this time Cornwallis availed himself of the peace lately renewed between Tippu and his neighbours, to enforce his claim to the Gantúr Sarkárs, in pursuance of a treaty made with the Nizám in 1768. For several years after the death of Basalat Jang, his brother, on this or that pretext, had kept the province in his own hands. At length, in 1788, seeing that Cornwallis would brook no further trifling, Nizám Ali yielded up the disputed territory, with a blandly expressed reminder of his own claims under the treaty of 1768. At the same time, the wily son of Chin Kilich sounded the Sultan of Maisór about forming a league against the English. Tippu's ready assent

* Cornwallis was empowered to disregard the votes of his Council.

was burdened by an offer of marriage with the Nizám's daughter. Wrath at the very notion of such an alliance with the son of a low-born adventurer gave the Nizám a timely motive for withdrawing from a perilous path, and making the best terms he could with the English Government. It was idle to hope for immediate possession of a province conquered by Haidar, and firmly held by his son ; but Cornwallis undertook to hand the Balaghát over to the Nizám, whenever it might fall into English keeping, and promised to aid that monarch at need, under the terms of the old treaty, against all common foes.

Tippu's hatred of the English was not lessened by this new proof of their readiness to meet his movements half way. To blame Cornwallis for taking these precautions would be alike unfair to his known character and the circumstances of a critical time. He knew that the fierce bigot who inherited all Haidar's schemes of conquest was only waiting for the right moment to avenge himself on the power which had thus far prevented him from carrying his arms all over Southern India. His attack on Travankór in the last days of 1789, in defiance of the treaty which placed its Rajah under our protection, compelled Cornwallis to take up the challenge thus flung in his very face.

A joint treaty for defence and offence between the English, the Nizám, and the Peshwa, was the answer promptly given to that challenge. Fifteen thousand Englishmen and Sepoys, under General Meadows, opened the campaign on the side of Madras. In spite of hindrances caused by the wretched Madras Government, Meadows worked his way round by Koimbator into the Maisór highlands, and carried in September the strong fort of Palghat. The Maráthas on their part had not been idle, nor the English column despatched from Bombay. Tippu, on the other hand, watched with a tiger's cunning for the moment when he might catch his foe unready or asleep. Such a moment

came when Colonel Floyd's column, too far from its supports, was driven backwards with the loss of several guns. But the wily Sultan was already overmatched in fighting-power. A strong division from Bengal reinforced Medows in November. On the Malabar side, Colonel Hartley added to the laurels he had won ten years before* by routing the Maisór troops, many times his own numbers, under the walls of Calicut. The reduction of Kananór by Abercrombie cut Tippu off from his last stronghold on the western coast.

Next year Cornwallis himself, displacing the worthy but not too brilliant Medows, set out at the head of a powerful army from Madras. Misleading Tippu by a series of feints, he made his way into Maisór without firing a shot. On the 21st March, Bangalor surrendered, in spite of Tippu's efforts to relieve it. The Nizam, who had hitherto done little for the common cause, now joined the English with 10,000 horsemen, gaily apparelled but nearly useless. As for the Maráthas, they never appeared at the right moment. Cornwallis, however, pressed on towards Seringapatam, through a country stripped beforehand of all supplies. On the 13th May he confronted Tippu strongly posted on the ridge of Arikéra, with the Kavari on his right. By a well-planned night-march he turned the enemy's flank, and the battle of the following day resulted in a victory which might have placed the capital of Maisór at the victor's mercy. But the troops were already starving, disease was fast thinning their ranks, and of the Maráthas nothing had been heard. At last, on the 26th, the victorious army began its retreat towards Bangalor. A few hours later our Marátha allies came up with the retiring columns, in good time to assuage their hunger, but too late to check their backward march.

The rest of that year was spent by our troops in conquering the Báramahal on the eastern frontier of Maisór,

* Book iv. chap. 3.

and in the capture of Nandidrúg, Savandrúg, and other hill-forts which native armies had been wont to besiege in vain. Our native allies were also busy worrying Tippu's northern frontiers. Koimbatór, on the other hand, after a long and manful defence under Lieutenant Chalmers, fell at last, a mere heap of ruins, into the hands of the Sultan, who rewarded its brave defenders by carrying them off to prison in wanton breach of his pledged word.

At length, in January 1792, Cornwallis led a fine army of 22,000 men with ninety guns against Seringapatam. Reinforced by contingents from his native allies, he planted himself on the 5th February in front of Tippu's last great stronghold. A night-attack, skilfully planned and brilliantly carried through, left him master of the outworks on the morning of the 7th, and gave his troops a commanding foothold on the island in the Kávári where stood the city itself. On the 16th, Abercrombie's Bombay column came up to complete the circle of attack; and the fierce Sultan, already frightened at the progress made by the English batterics, and disheartened by the panic among his own followers, saw no escape from utter ruin save in accepting such terms as the English General might choose to enforce. On the 22nd February Tippu learned his fate. The price of his submission was to be the forfeiture of half his kingdom, the surrender of two sons as hostages, and the payment of three crores of rupees—about £3,000,000—towards the expenses of the war. His proud spirit fought for a time against his better judgment; but every voice in his council urged submission, and Tippu sullenly gave way. On the 24th he put his seal to the first draft of the treaty which was to cripple his power for ever. Next day his sons were received with all honour in the English camp.

A sudden check to the progress of the treaty was caused by the Governor-General's somewhat tardy effort to rescue the friendly little state of Kúrg from Tippu's

clutches. For some days it seemed as if the wrathful Sultan would stake everything on resistance to this new demand. But the counter-movements of the English army soon brought him into a calmer frame of mind ; and on the 19th March his sons presented to Lord Cornwallis the ratified treaty which placed Kúrg, Dindigal, Malabar, and the Báramahal thenceforth in English hands. A large slice of Tippu's northern frontier along the Tumbadra was shared between our native allies, who also received each a million of the money fine exacted from Maisór. Thus hemmed in by strong neighbours on every side, the humbled son of Haidar Ali might chafe at the shattering of all his dearest hopes, and brood over schemes of vengeance on his English conquerors. But turn which way he would, failure and disappointment were still to be his lot ; and the only light which thenceforth shone upon his darkness was the baleful reflection of his own wounded pride, savage bigotry, and undying hate.

The Marátha gains in Southern India were as nothing to the progress meanwhile made by Mahdaji Sindia in the north. By the Treaty of Sálbai that able and ambitious ruler had been raised to the rank of an independent sovereign. Already the foremost native power in Hindústán, he was bent on rising yet higher, on wiping out the last traces of Marátha failure at Pánipat. His opportunity soon came. Dehli was again torn by rival factions, and the leader of one of them implored his help in the name of his helpless sovereign. Sindia gladly accepted the offer, and the death of him who had made it soon left him master of the position. For the Pésbwa of Púna, as head of the Marátha League, he obtained from Shah Alam the title of Regent of the Empire. As deputy for the Pésbwa, he himself took charge of the Imperial government, with the supreme command of the Imperial armies, for whose maintenance the revenues of Agra and Dehli were entrusted to his sole keeping.

For the next few years the bold Marátha was engaged in strengthening the foundations of his new sway. His enemies around Dehli were neither few nor weak. The proud Mohammadan nobles chafed under the ascendancy of an upstart Hindu. The high-born princes of Rájputana begrudged the payment to a Sudra adventurer of the tribute claimed for the Moghal. His rival, Holkar, bore him no good-will, and the Court of Puna dreaded the soaring ambition of their self-appointed deputy. A powerful weapon, however, was already forging for Sindia's benefit. With the help of Count de Boigne, a Savoyard who had lately entered his service,* he got together a disciplined force of 20,000 men, mostly infantry, officered largely by Europeans, and strengthened by a formidable array of guns. To the sturdy courage of these troops and the skill of their leaders he owed his final deliverance from more than one perilous strait. Defeated by the Rájputs and hard pressed by the Mohammadans in 1787, he looked in vain for help towards Púna, and was fain to seek timely shelter with the Jat prince of Bhartpúr. Ere long, the foolish old emperor himself took open part against his defeated minister.

But Sindia's turn for triumph came at last. His defeat of Ismael Beg under the walls of Agra, in June 1788, paved the way for his return to Dehli. He was still loitering on his road thither, when he heard of the horrible outrages inflicted on the emperor and his household by the ruffianly grandson of the able and upright Najib-ud-daula, who had fought so bravely for the Moghal at Panipat. This Rohilla savage, Gholám Kadir by name, had retreated to Dehli in company with Ismael Beg. The frightened emperor closed the gates of the city on his

* This adventurer, after serving in the French and Russian armies, became an ensign in the 6th Sepoy Battalion at Madras. Thence he went round to Calcutta, was employed by Hastings on an embassy to Dehli in 1784, and finally took service under Máhdaji Sindia.

defeated allies ; but Gholām Kādir bribed his way in, and a Mohammadan army was once more loosed for plunder in the Moghal capital. Disappointed, it seems, of the treasures he had hoped to find within the palace, and enraged beyond bearing at his repeated failures to search out an imaginary secret, the pitiless ruffian put the Princes of Dehli to the torture in the presence of the emperor himself.* In the depth of his anguish the old man cried out, "Take my sight rather than force upon it scenes like these !" In a moment, Gholām Kādir sprang upon his victim, pinned him to the floor, and blinded him with his own dagger. But his hour of triumph was soon to be cut short. On the appearance of De Boigne's battalions before Dehli, he fled thence, after a vain attempt to fire the palace. On his subsequent flight from Mirat he fell into the hands of Sindia's horsemen, and his crimes were requited by Sindia's order with the poetic justice of a horrible and lingering death.†

Thenceforth the deputy's greatness knew no check. He replaced the blind old emperor on the throne of Dehli : but the whole powers of government remained in his own hands, and Shah Alam became a mere pensioner on Sindia's bounty. His old opponents, one after another, took arms against him only to ensure their final defeat. Too wise to embroil himself in a second war with the English, he yet steadily set his face against the policy which led his countrymen in Southern India to aid Cornwallis in humbling Tippu. At length, when all was peaceful in Hindūstān, Sindia set out for Pūna in 1792 to invest the young Peshwa, Mādhu Rao, with the dignity thrice conferred on him by the head of the house of Bābar. Such

* One of the tortured princes lived to witness as Emperor the massacre of English women and children at Dehli in 1857.

† Keene's "Moghal Empire," chap. 5. The wretched man was first led through Mattra on an ass, with his face to the tail. His tongue was then torn out, his eyes blinded, his nose, ears, hands, and feet cut off ; after which he was hanged upon a tree.

at least was the outward purpose of his journey ; but in all likelihood his real aim was to counteract the intrigues of Nāna Farnawis, and render his own influence supreme in Southern as well as Northern India.

The Peshwa's investiture was the most splendid ceremony which Pūna had ever seen. Sindia himself rode up on his elephant at the head of a gorgeous retinue ; but with an artful show of humility he took the lowest place among the assembled chiefs. When the Peshwa would have placed him on the seat next his own, he displayed a pair of embroidered slippers, in token of the office he had inherited from his father, and reverently placed them on the Peshwa's feet. With well-feigned reluctance he at length took the seat of honour which none there present had nearly so good a right to fill.

From that time his Brahman rival, Nāna Farnawis, began to lose all hold on the youth in whose name he had hitherto governed without a check. Another heavy defeat inflicted on Holkar by De Boigne left Sindia virtual master of nearly all India, outside the English possessions and the few native states which owed the English for their allies. In despair at his own darkening prospects the Nāna was about to give up the struggle by retiring to Banāras, when Sindia's death from fever in February, 1794, removed out of his path the only danger he had hitherto failed to overcome.

By this time Cornwallis himself had disappeared from the scene of his past labours. But he left behind him a legacy whose value, however highly rated by the statesmen of his own day, has long been regarded by a large class of thinkers with less approving eyes. If the boldness of his foreign policy, in spite of its success, brought him into discredit with a small but noisy class of politicians at home,* his great measure for settling the land revenues of

* Sir Philip Francis, Hastings' old enemy, was at the head of them.

Bengal was hailed by the bulk of his own countrymen with a satisfaction largely owing to his well-earned fame as an



FAMINE-STRICKEN GROUP OF PEASANTS.

upright, clear-headed, successful governor. It is needless here to discuss the question whether private property in land was or was not unknown to Indian usage, and con-

trary to the spirit of Indian laws.* For the present purpose it is enough to say, that the rents from land in India had come to be divided between the village communities, the *Zamindárs* and *Tálukdars*, who farmed the revenues of their several districts, and the State itself, which claimed from one-half to three-fifths of the yearly produce from the soil. In Bengal the rights of the old village communities had been swallowed up in the growing power of the *Zamindárs* or middlemen, whom Hastings everywhere found claiming entire ownership of the land their fathers had mostly held on lease. The ousted *Ráyats* or husbandmen had become mere tenants at will of the usurping *Zamindárs*. These latter Lord Cornwallis had from the first been enjoined to treat, for fiscal purposes, as the only rightful lords of the soil.

Accordingly in 1789 a new assessment of the land-revenue was carried out for ten years on the terms prescribed by the Court of Directors. In 1793 this settlement was declared perpetual. In spite of the reasons urged against such a measure by Mr. Shore, and other men of long Indian experience, it was decreed that thenceforth the *Zamindárs* of Bengal were to hold their lands for ever at the rent-rates charged upon them in 1789. Three things were involved in this momentous enactment. The *Zamindars* were formally acknowledged as lords of the soil. The rent-charge on their estates was fixed for ever at a certain rate. And lastly the rate itself was taken at a fixed sum of money, without reference to future changes in the selling value of land and its yearly harvests.

It will thus be seen that the weak points of this permanent settlement lay chiefly under the first and third heads. To turn a body of revenue-farmers into actual landowners

* The true theory seems to be that private property in land had always been the rule in India, limited only by the sovereign's immemorial right to a certain share in the produce of the soil. The whole question is fairly and clearly handled in "Notes on the North-Western Provinces of India," by a "District Officer" (Allen & Co.)

was a measure which, however excusable and even expedient, was sure to entail some hardship on the old peasantry whose right to hold their ancestral acres was now swept away at one blow. It is true that some attempt was made to secure to the Ráyats their ancient holdings by means of leases, which the Zamindárs were bound as a rule to grant them at the former rents. Other steps were also taken to guard their interests from unfair encroachments on the part of their new landlords. But here, as in so many other cases, the weakest went to the wall. The new landowners abused their powers at every turn. Their luckless tenants found their leases withheld, their rents raised under any pretext, their goods liable to distraint without any notice, and themselves ground down by ever new and illegal demands.* To the courts of justice they were free to appeal; but what justice could they hope to win, even if they had the means of seeking it, against oppressors powerful from their rank, wealth, and readiness to gain their own ends by any means, however crooked? Every avenue to legal redress was blocked up by pilfering policemen and venal underlings of the law, by whose influence the eyes of well-meaning English magistrates were too often blinded to the truth.

The Zamindárs, on the other hand, might plead some excuse for wrong-doing in the high rates at which they were assessed by the government, and the summary powers of sale under which the government demands were enforced. It is certain that under the new system many of their estates were brought to the hammer, and that in 1799 some attempt was made to abate the evil effects of summary sales, by a rule which decreed that sales of land for arrears of revenue should be deferred to the end of each

* It was not till some years afterwards that the Zamindár was compelled to give due notice of his intention to distraint, and was forbidden to seize the Ráyat's cattle and farming tools. Kave's "East India Company," part ii. chap. 2.

year. It was also alleged that a defaulting Ráyat could sometimes evade the demands of a needy or grasping landlord more easily than the latter could put off his payments to the State. On the whole, however, it is pretty clear that the balance of wrong-doing, as Sir John Kaye puts it, "must have been greatly on the side of the Zamindar." He and his agents were far more likely to plunder and oppress the Rayat, than the Rayat, for all his cunning, was likely to outwit them.

If undue haste was shown in fixing the new settlement for ever, before the question of land-tenures in Bengal had been thoroughly sifted and the value of the land assessed had been clearly ascertained, it was still more unfortunate that the boon of a fixed assessment should have been clogged by the State's surrender of its prescriptive right to re-adjust the land-tax to its own fiscal needs in the future. The main source of revenue in India had always been the land. A certain share of the landholder's yearly profits, whether payable in kind or coin, had been taken by successive governments, Hindu or Mohammadan, for the public use. According as the land rose in value, or the purchasing power of money declined, the State charge on the land was also raised. Under English rule payment in kind had gradually been replaced by payment in money; but it was left for Lord Cornwallis to fix the money payment at a rate which could never more be raised or altered. His successors were thus for ever debarred from replenishing the public purse by adjusting the land-tax to the increasing profits of those who paid it. Had the money payments been fixed at a given proportion to the average rental of the land from time to time, the land revenue of Bengal would now have been double what it is, and the government would not be driven to devise new and often questionable means of taxation in order to arrest the gradual decline of its old fiscal resources.

In some respects, however, the new settlement worked

well. After a season of dire confusion and distress, during which many old families passed away from their ancient holdings, or tilled as mere serfs the fields which had once been theirs, while many even of the Zamindárs were sold out of the estates conferred on them by English rulers, a new class of landed gentry, enriched by trade and money-lending, rose upon the wrecks of their neighbours' fortunes into a position of assured importance, if not of much political power. Waste lands were gradually brought under the plough; the growing wealth of the province encouraged the growth of its population, and opened out new channels of trade and industry, as well as new sources of public income. If the land-revenue showed no sensible increase, its collection at any rate became easier and the amount less fluctuating. All this, however, might have happened under a system of periodical settlements. Meanwhile, whoever else profited, the Ráyats were mostly on the losing side. Their rents were raised without mercy by their new masters, their old rights overridden without scruple, and new exactions levied on them at every turn.*

Another important measure carried out by Lord Cornwallis was the reform of the civil and criminal courts. The duties of revenue-collector were for the first time separated from those of the civil judge. Civil courts for the trial of native suits were established in every district. In the criminal courts of each district the higher civil judges held their sessions at different places in turn.†

* "Not a child can be born," wrote the Joint Magistrate of Rangpúr in 1815, "not a head religiously shaved, not a son married, not a daughter given in marriage, not even one of the tyrannical fraternity dies, without an immediate visitation of calamity upon the Ráyat." On every such occasion the Zamindár or his agent levied a fresh tax on the Ráyat's goods. (Raikes's "Notes on the North-Western Provinces of India.")

† Mohammadan law, tempered by English punishments, was still to be administered in Bengal.

Sir Elijah Impey's Code of Regulations was re-modelled, but hardly improved by the addition of intricate rules and idle formalities. Yet more unfortunate was the ordinance which shut out the natives of India from all but the lowest ranks in the public service. The highest office to which a native could thenceforth aspire was that of a police Darogah on twenty-five rupees a month, or that of a Munsif or petty judge, who obtained only a small percentage on the cost of civil suits. The good thus wrought in one direction was counterbalanced by evil in another. If a higher moral tone began thenceforth to prevail among the English servants of the Company, their native underlings were driven to eke out their scanty wages by every form of jobbing and extortion. Let the English magistrate be never so upright, he had no means of checking the corrupt tendencies of ill-paid subordinates, who abused to their own profit the power which many circumstances combined to place in their hands. Whatever good might come of English example in high places, it was clearly unwise to block up all those avenues to preferment by which the ambition of the higher classes in the country had been wont to seek its natural food.

Before leaving India Lord Cornwallis sailed for Madras in order to command the force he had got together for the siege of Pondicherry, a task imposed upon him by the outbreaking of another war with France. But the timely surrender of that place to Colonel Braithwaite left him free to pursue his voyage homewards, in October, 1793, after a useful, firm, and prosperous reign of seven years. He was succeeded by Sir John Shore, a Bengal civilian of long-standing, high character, and approved conversance with revenue affairs.

CHAPTER VI.

SIR JOHN SHORE AND MARQUIS WELLESLEY—1793–1800.

THE new Governor-General had not long taken up the reins of empire, when a storm of war once more burst upon Southern India. At the death of Māhdajī Sindia the Maratha power may be said to have reached its zenith. His nephew and successor, Daulat Rao Sindia, was still a boy; but Nāna Farnawis once more reigned at Puna without a rival, and his influence made itself felt from the foot of the Himmālayas to the southernmost bounds of Māhārashtra. Quick to avail himself of Sir John Shore's inaction in the field of foreign politics, he began to make threatening demands upon the Nizām, who turned for help to the English Government under the treaty of 1790. But Shore could see no reason for helping one old ally against another, and the Marāthas took their own way unchecked.

Early in 1795 the hostile armies took the field. A hundred and thirty thousand Marāthas, gathered from all parts of India, followed the standard of the young Pēshwa, himself under the actual leadership of Pareshrām Bhao, while the Nizām's forces, 110,000 strong, included a contingent disciplined by French officers under M. Raymond, who had served with Lally many years before. Sindia's contingent on the Marātha side was also commanded by a Frenchman, M. Perron. The battle which ensued on the 11th March at Kurdla, on the Nizām's western frontier, was lost to the Mohammadans mainly by the cowardice of Nizām Ali himself. Two days afterwards the defeated

monarch put his seal to a treaty which condemned him to pay the victors three millions sterling and yield up territory worth £350,000 a-year.

The wily minister, Nāna Farnawis, had now reached the height of his power. Supreme at the court of his nominal master, he was held in awe at every capital where ruled a prince of the great Marātha League. Even the young Sindia paid him the deference due from youth to a successful veteran in the field of statescraft. But the fate which had frowned so darkly on him a year before the victory of Kurdla was ere long to hold him fast in its toils. In October, 1795, the young Peshwa, Mādhu Rao, slew himself in a fit of despair at the utter thralldom in which his all-powerful minister was bent on keeping him, at an age when other princes were deemed fit to govern for themselves. The rightful heir to his throne was Bāji Rao, son of that Ragoba whose chequered fortunes had closed in peace and privacy after the Treaty of Sālbai. Distrustful of the Nāna's real purpose, Bāji Rao secretly applied for help to Daulat Rao Sindia. When this became known at Pūna, the Nāna, who had just been plotting on behalf of Bāji's younger brother, Chinnaji, suddenly resolved to forestal Sindia by espousing the cause of Bāji himself. The game of intrigue which followed has no parallel even in the history of Marātha politics. As a thing of course Sindia and the Nāna take opposite sides, and change them whenever it suits their purpose. At one moment the Nāna is an exile and Bāji a prisoner. Ere long the former gains the upper hand, and Bāji Rao is seated on the throne, which his brother had meanwhile occupied against his own will. Sindia turns against his own nominee, and casts his own minister, Balloba Tantia, into prison. Bāji Rao then plots the ruin both of Sindia and Nāna Farnawis. The former escapes death through Bāji's timely indecision, but the latter is treacherously seized with Sindia's connivance, and hurried off a close prisoner

to Ahmadnagar, whence he is afterwards set free by Sindia on payment of a heavy bribe.

Meanwhile Sir John Shore had been engaged in dealing with a serious mutiny among the officers of the Company's Indian army. The soreness caused by the late improvements in the pay of the Civil Service, and by the threatened amalgamation of the king's and Company's troops, spoke out at last in a combined movement of the aggrieved officers for their own protection from alleged encroachments on their just rights. Daunted by the growing danger, or loath to use force against men whose claims he could not deem unjust, the Governor-General gave way. The double batta, which had lately been withheld from the Company's troops, was restored in full; brevet rank was largely granted; and an improved scale of pay for officers of every rank was drawn up. Shore's concessions so displeased Dundas, that he besought Lord Cornwallis to return at once to his former post; but the "milk-and-water" policy of the Court of Directors towards their mutinous servants speedily decided him to refuse the offer, and Sir John Shore's concessions were finally confirmed.

If Sir John laid himself open to the charge of acting weakly on this occasion, a later conjuncture showed him to be far from wanting in quiet courage. On the death of Asaf-ud-daula, the Nawáb-Vizier of Audh, in 1797, he was led by faulty information to acknowledge Wazir Ali, the Nawáb's reputed son, as his successor. But further inquiry taught him to uphold the stronger claims of Asaf's brother, Sádát Ali. That prince was therefore raised to the throne on condition of surrendering Allahábád to the English, and maintaining ten thousand of the Company's troops in Audh. The treaty was concluded while Sir John was yet encamped at Lucknow, in imminent danger of an attack at any moment from the numerous and reckless followers of the prince he was about to depose. But

he held his ground with quiet firmness until the troops who were charged to escort the new Nawáb arrived at Lucknow. At their appearance the followers of Wazir Ali dispersed without firing a shot, and in January, 1798, Sâdat Ali was proclaimed Nawáb amidst the general rejoicing of his new subjects. Wazir Ali was pensioned off at Banâras, and Shore, who had just been made Lord Teignmouth, set sail for England in March of the same year.

His successor was the Earl of Mornington, elder brother of the great Duke of Wellington, a friend and follower of Pitt, a trained statesman from his youth up, a ripe scholar, and for four years a leading member of the Board of Control. In the middle of May, 1798, Lord Mornington landed at Calcutta, charged from home with strict injunctions to keep the peace, to abstain from meddling in the affairs of native states, and to use all lawful means of replenishing the Company's exchequer. On his way out, however, he had touched at the Cape; and there by a happy chance he had learned, through various channels, enough to convince him that a policy of peace and retrenchment was far less feasible than it seemed at home. He had not been three weeks in India when the hour for action proved to be already ripe. In a proclamation which had found its way to Calcutta, General Malartic, Governor of the Mauritius, announced that Tippu had proposed a close alliance with the new French Republic against the English in India. Other tidings from trustworthy sources strengthened Lord Mornington's newly-formed design to forestal the plotting ruler of Maisôr. The Madras Government, unready as ever, was for temporising with its former foe; but Lord Mornington would take no excuses for unwise delay, and General Harris was ordered to get the Coast Army, as that of Madras was called, ready for the coming march on Seringapatam.

Meanwhile the new Governor-General set himself to

win the alliance or secure the neutrality of the Maráthas and the Nizám. From the Peshwa, whose counsels were once more guided by Nana Farnawis, he got little but fair words and vague assurances; nor would Sindia pledge himself to aid the English against the threatened advance from Kábul of Ahmad Shah's successor, Zamán Shah. With the Nizam, on the other hand, Lord Mornington was more successful. By the 10th October a strong brigade from Madras was encamped at Haidarábád, and a few days later the whole of the French officers in the Nizam's service had gotten their dismissal from the Nizám himself. The twelve thousand Sepoys, whom M. Raymond had trained on the French system, laid down their arms, and the Nizám concluded a treaty which placed six thousand English Sepoys at his disposal, and made English influence for ever dominant at Haidarábád.

Tippu, on the other hand, was steadily rushing upon his doom. To all Lord Mornington's warnings, remonstrances, demands, proposals, he sent nothing but evasive or misleading answers, while he was engaged in sending messages for help to Zamán Shah, to the French Government, and to General Buonaparté, who had already landed in Egypt. Neither Nelson's great victory at Aboukir, nor the alliance of Turkey with England against the French, opened his eyes to the rock on which his consuming hatred of the English was about to hurl him. At last, by the beginning of February, 1799, the Governor-General's forbearance could hold out no longer. The English army was ordered to advance. If Tippu were yet willing to treat for peace, he might send an embassy to General Harris, who was now on the road to Seringapatam, at the head of six thousand white troops, about fifteen thousand Sepoys, and a hundred guns, to say nothing of the twenty thousand horse and foot furnished by the Nizám, and commanded in part by English officers.

"Citizen Tippu," however, as his French friends from

the Mauritius called him, would not be warned in time. With the courage of his race and the craft of an old soldier, he left part of his army to watch the English advance, while he hurried westward with the flower of his troops to overwhelm Stuart and Hartley on their advance with the Bombay column from Kananór. In spite of the timely warning received from the Rajah of Kúrg, it was all that Hartley's brigade could do to hold the hill of Sidasir on the 6th March against Tippu's repeated onsets, until General Stuart could hasten up to the rescue. Half-an-hour afterwards the assailants fell back with the loss of two thousand men. A few days later the baffled Sultan went off to meet General Harris advancing by way of Bangalór.

Again defeated at Malavalli on the 27th, Tippu fell back to a strong position in front of his island capital. But the English general declined to fall into his opponent's trap. Instead of marching straight forward through a country laid waste by Tippu's orders, General Harris led his troops round across the Kávári by a ford lower down the stream. The Bombay column was thus enabled to join him, and the troops obtained supplies from fruitful districts untouched by the ravages of war. Tippu's rage at being thus outwitted passed ere long into sheer despair as the invaders slowly neared Seringapatam.

On the 17th April the siege began. Three days later Tippu asked for terms. Two millions sterling and the cession of half his remaining dominions was the price named. His proud spirit rose in revolt against such an issue to the dreams and efforts of many years. "Better," he exclaimed, "to die fighting than live dependent on the mercy of infidels." On the 3rd May 4,400 English troops advanced under General Baird, a former prisoner in Seringapatam, to storm the city through a breach made by the English guns. A short but sharp struggle placed the stormers on the top of the breach. The two

columns then turned off in opposite directions, pushing forward through every obstacle until they met again at the eastern gateway, thinned in numbers, but flushed with entire success. The Sultan's palace was in their hands, and his troops were become a flying mob. But Tippu himself could not be found. At length from amidst a gateway heaped with dead his lifeless body was dragged out under the guidance of a wounded servant, and duly recognised by one of his chief officers. It was buried the next day with all military and religious honours in the tomb which held the remains of Haidar Ali. The guns which boomed their last tribute to the brave but savage bigot who had lost all that his father had won, were strangely echoed by the dreadful thunder which crashed that evening over Seringapatam.

The loss of the English in this memorable siege amounted to 1,164 killed or wounded. A vast store of guns and booty to the value of a million sterling fell into the victors' hands. General Harris was raised to the peerage, and Lord Mornington became Marquis Wellesley, in return for the blow thus stricken at the fiercest enemy our arms had ever encountered in Southern India. Part of Tippu's conquered kingdom was divided between the English and the Nizám, Baji Rao having declined the conditions on which he also would have received his share. The remainder was reserved under English commissioners for the child-heir of the former Rajah, whom Haidar Ali had dispossessed. Tippu's family were removed as state-pensioners to Vellor. Seringapatam itself was placed under the wise control of Colonel Arthur Wellesley, who, as commander of the Nizám's infantry, had borne a prominent part in the siege.

If the timely triumph of our arms in Maisór had crushed one foe, it deferred the day of settlement with another. While General Harris was besieging Seringapatam, Sindia and the Peshwa were plotting to aid Tippu and hamper

the English by an inroad into the dominions of Nizám Ali. But the happy issue of Lord Wellesley's vigour and his General's soldiership struck them with alarm, and they hastened to congratulate the Governor-General on successes which not only deprived them of a useful ally, but established a closer union between the Nizám, their intended victim, and the English, their most dreaded rivals. A year after the conquest of Maisór, the Nizám's immunity from Marátha aggression was finally assured by a treaty which placed at his disposal a strong Sepoy contingent, commanded by English officers, in exchange for his share of the country won from Tippu in the last nine years.

Another blow to Marátha influence had meanwhile been dealt by Lord Wellesley. In 1799 the little State of Tanjor, founded by Shahjí, father of the great Sívají, in the middle of the previous century, passed under English rule with the consent of its rightful Rajah, who retained the outward show of a sovereignty whose burdens were transferred to his English friends. A like course was taken with the little Mohammadan State of Surat. This was presently followed by the absorption of the Carnatic, whose late Nawáb, the son of our old nominee Mohammad Ali, had been caught secretly plotting with our deadliest enemy, the late Sultan of Maisór. His successor refusing the terms offered by Lord Wellesley, a titular Nawab was set up in his cousin's place on a handsome pension, but without a shadow of his grandfather's power. Strong-handed measures these may be called ; but no one who has carefully read the foregoing narrative need shrink from allowing to Lord Wellesley and his masters at home the full benefit of the pleas on which those measures were carried out. Had English statesmen been less scrupulous the Carnatic might fairly have been absorbed many years earlier, whether as a stroke of policy or an act of justice. Our countrymen in India had long been drifting into a position from which they could never with any safety re-

cede. Each step forward in self-defence brought them nearer some new danger, with which common prudence forbade them to palter on pain of losing the ground already won. It was Lord Wellesley's great merit, that, foreseeing the danger, he at once proceeded to pluck from that nettle the flower safety. Knowing that the last great struggle with the Maráthas must soon come, he took care that the rulers of British India should not be drawn into it unprepared or half-hearted. With him at any rate forewarned was to be forearmed.

BOOK V.

THE ENGLISH PARAMOUNT.

CHAPTER I.

MARQUIS WELLESLEY—TO 1805.

Not long after the conquest of Malsor the peace of the kingdom was for a while disturbed by the movements of Dhúndia Wagh, a Marátha freebooter, who, with the help of a few thousand horsemen recruited from Tippu's army, defied or baffled his pursuers, until Colonel Wellesley, in September, 1800, brought him to bay. With the utter rout of Dhúndia's force and the death of its leader ended a rising which, but for Wellesley's unflagging pursuit, might have involved the Dakhan in grave disorders at a very critical time. Lord Wellesley's hands indeed were just then full of work. A strong force of Europeans and Sepoys under General Baird was shipped off to aid the Turks in driving the French out of Egypt. Baird's march through the Desert of Suez was a feat of which any army might have been proud; and the mere announcement of his approach decided the French commander to sue for peace. But for the disloyal conduct of the English Admiral commanding in Eastern waters, Wellesley would have forestalled the conquest of the Mauritius by nine years, and most of the losses inflicted on our shipping by French privateers would thus have been prevented.

To counteract French intrigues in Persia, and to keep Zamán Shah from troubling India, was another scheme on which Wellesley had set his heart. A native Indian Wakíl, or envoy, had already sounded the Shah of Persia, and sown dissensions between the Afghan monarch and his brother, which compelled the former to retire across the Indus, leaving Lahór and the surrounding country under the rule of his chosen lieutenant, the great Sikh warrior Ranjit Singh. In 1800 a splendid embassy, laden with choice gifts and friendly overtures, was led to Teherán by Captain John Malcolm, the young Sepoy officer who had disarmed the French contingent at Haidarábád and shared in Colonel Wellesley's advance to Seringapatam. The descendant of Nádir Shah readily agreed to befriend the English, commercially and politically, to the best of his power, to expel every Frenchman from Persia, and to aid his new friends in keeping all invaders from the north-west out of Hindústán.

Lord Wellesley's forecasting statesmanship had also employed itself in the direction of Audh. After half a century of varying fortunes, the Sikh followers of Gúru Govind had come to sway a wide tract of country from the Indus eastward to the Sewalik Hills.* A Sikh alliance with Sindia against the English or the Mohammadans was once more upon the cards, and the Governor-General was resolved to make Audh contribute its due share to the maintenance of English rule against all assailants. The murder of his agent, Mr. Cherry, at Banáras by the followers of the pensioned rebel Wazír Ali, revealed at once the political weakness of the reigning Nawáb of Audh, and the readiness of his subjects to invite help from Kabul. Wazír Ali was soon hunted down, but thenceforth Wellesley made up his mind to place the military defence of Audh on a much firmer footing than heretofore.

His demands to this end—demands fully justified by the

* Cunningham's "History of the Sikhs," chap. 5.

terms on which alone the Nawáb held his kingdom as an English fief—were parried for a time by evasive offers and sounding remonstrances. These in their turn were answered by a judicious mixture of threats and warnings, until, in November, 1801, Sâdat Ali signed the treaty which placed under our absolute sway the districts of Korah, Allahabâd, Rohilkhand, Gorakhpur, and Azimgarh, in return for the guaranteed defence of his dominions from foreign attack.*

Amidst the cares and entanglements of foreign politics, Wellesley found time for matters nearer home. His own energy braced up all around him for the work entrusted to their hands. His reforms in the Company's chief civil and criminal courts followed the lines first traced by Warren Hastings, and freed those courts from their old connection with the Calcutta Council. His encouragement of private trade between England and India in India-built ships, however gratifying to the English Ministry and advantageous to the English nation, gave sore offence to the Court of Directors, whose old dislike to "interlopers" no arguments could overcome. His noble scheme for the founding of a great college in Calcutta, at which the young "writers" destined for the Indian Civil Service might complete the training best suited alike to English gentlemen and to the future rulers of a great English dependency, was marred in its working by the same authorities, who restricted the new college to the teaching of the native languages, and founded at Haileybury a separate college for the instruction of young men going out as writers to the East. In his choice of public servants for high or difficult posts Lord Wellesley found his own efforts for the public good continually thwarted by the jobbery or the prejudices of East India Directors at home. Annoyed at all these tokens of ill-will or blindness on the part of his

* The Hon. Henry Wellesley, afterwards Lord Cowley, was employed by his brother to conclude the treaty.

official employers, he wrote home to resign his office in 1802. But the Court of Directors were loath at the last moment to lose the services of a great and successful ruler, and Wellesley was entreated to stay out in India another year.

The answer reached him early in 1803, on the eve of a decisive fight for empire between the English and the Maráthas. After the death of Nána Farnawís in 1800, the great Marátha power, which for so many years he had striven to weld together in the Peshwa's name, began at once to break up under influences always active in Indian history. As with the Greeks of old and the Italians of the Middle Ages, so it happened now with the princes of Máharashtra. The Sindia and the Holkar of that day—the latter, Jeswant Rao, was a bastard son of the upright and able Túkaji—brought great armies against each other, which were defeated each in its turn. Ere long the Peshwa, Báji Rao, paid with defeat and temporary exile the penalty of espousing the cause of Sindia. A rival Peshwa was set up in his stead. In this strait Báji Rao no longer rejected the English alliance on the terms already offered by Colonel Close. By the treaty of Bassein, concluded in December, 1802, he agreed to maintain an English contingent, to assign for their support the revenues of certain districts, and to wage no war nor advance any claims on other powers without leave from the Governor-General.

In May of the following year Báji Rao returned to Puna under the escort of his new allies. By this well-timed stroke of policy, which made the English paramount in Southern India, Lord Wellesley strengthened his own hands for the coming struggle with his Marátha neighbours. It was not long before the collision came. Sindia had already formed a league with the Bhósla Rajah of Berár against the Peshwa. Holkar still held aloof from either side, waiting to see how matters would turn out.

But Sindia's threatening movements and his insolent answer to Colonel Collins, the English Resident at his court, convinced Wellesley that no more time should be lost in idle negotiations. The Peshwa himself, with his usual treachery, was urging Sindia to move at once upon his capital. General Wellesley, as great in politics as in war, made one last appeal to the confederate chiefs, but in vain. At length, on the 3rd August, 1803, Collins turned his face from Sindia's camp, and war was formally declared.

The first blow was struck by General Wellesley against Ahmadnagar, which surrendered on the 12th August, the same day on which General Lake laid siege to the fortress of Aligarh, on the road from Agra to Dehli. On the 23rd September General Wellesley, on his march from Aurangabad, found 50,000 of the enemy strongly posted around the village of Assai. His own troops were only about 4,500 in all, but their leader knew his men, and would lose no time in waiting for the rest of his army. His trained soldiers marched steadily forward across the Kaitna under a heavy fire from Sindia's guns, overbore the sturdy resistance of Sindia's best infantry, and carried all before them by dint of hard fighting and cool pluck. The Marátha hosts broke and fled in all directions, leaving thousands dead or wounded on the field, and ninety-eight guns with much booty in the victors' hands. This splendid victory, if bought at a heavy price in killed and wounded, gave the death-blow to Sindia's hopes in Southern India.

Meanwhile in Gujarat one strong place after another had fallen to our arms. In the following month the province of Kattak on the borders of Orissa was conquered from the Rajah of Berár. At the same time the conqueror of Assai was pressing forward without a check into the heart of the Rajah's kingdom. The capture of Asirgarh by Colonel Stevenson had already deprived Sindia of his last stronghold in Khandesh. By the victory of Argaum on the

28th November, and the subsequent capture of Gawilgarh, General Wellesley drove Ragují Bhósla to sue for peace, which he was fain to purchase with the cession of Katták, and all Berar to the west of the Wardah river.

Lake's campaign in Upper India had been equally successful. The fall of Aligarh on the 29th August, one of the most brilliant feats in the annals of war, was followed up by Lake's victorious advance on Dehli. Crushing the resistance of a Maratha force outside the capital, he entered it on the 11th, took the blind old emperor out of his prison, and once more placed him on his nominal throne. On the 10th October the Marathas were heavily beaten near Agra, and the glorious city of Akbar and Shah Jahan surrendered a few days after to its bold assailant. On the 1st November at the village of Lásuari occurred the hardest fight of the war. Lake's cavalry were hurled in vain against entrenchments bristling thick with guns, and defended by the flower of Sindia's army, the trained battalions of De Boigne. At length his infantry, who had been marching ever since midnight, came upon the field, and after a brief rest swept forward on their fateful errand. Sindia's soldiers fought like heroes, and fell in heaps around their guns. But the shattered ranks of Englishmen and Sepoys still held their way under the leader whom they loved, until the crowning victory of the war was theirs, and seventy-one guns had been counted among its fruits. Their own loss was great ; but the strength of Sindia was broken, and before the year's end he had concluded a treaty which stripped him of all his possessions between the Jamna and the Ganges, of nearly all his conquests in Rájputana, of the districts around Baroch and Ahmadnagar, and wiped out all his claims on the Peshwa, the Gaikwar of Gujarát, and the Nizam.

Of the provinces thus wrested from Sindia and the Bhósla, Kattak was incorporated with Bengal ; the Doab

between the Jamna and the Ganges became the North-Western Provinces; and the Baróch district was annexed to Bombay. The fortress and district of Ahmadnagar were handed over to the double-dealing Peshwa; and the new Nizam, who had just mounted the throne of his father Nizam Ali, was placed in possession of western Berár. Thus, in less than five months, Wellesley had overthrown the fabric of Maratha power, and placed all India from the Satlaj to Cape Comorin at the feet of an English company which less than fifty years earlier had been chased with ignominy out of Bengal. Relieved by the fruits of English valour from their forced allegiance to Marátha lords, the Jat and Rájput princes of Rájputána were glad to accept the milder guardianship of their English neighbours. The Sikh chiefs of Sirhind likewise transferred their allegiance from the Maráthas to Lord Wellesley; and the Maratha Gaikwar of Gujarat readily placed his own dominions under the partial control of that power which alone could shield him from foreign attacks.

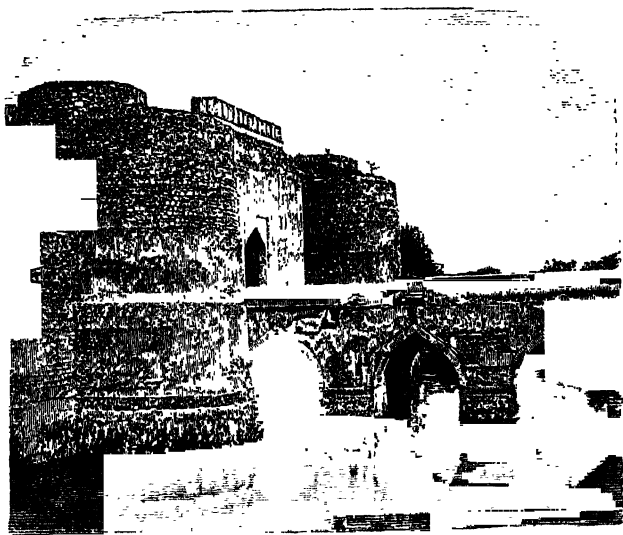
It only remained to deal with Holkar, whose ambition had been fed by the plunder of Sindia's territory during the late campaign, and by the possession of an army largely recruited from the troops of his defeated rival, until he began to talk of fighting Lake for the lordship of Hindústán. At length his insolence reached so lofty a pitch, that Lord Wellesley was driven to fight him in self-defence. By the middle of April, 1804, the armies of Lake and Wellesley began moving from opposite quarters against their new foe. Holkar at once fell back from Jaipúr across the Chambal, but the approach of the rainy season ere long sent Lake into cantonments; and Colonel Murray, who commanded the southern or Gujarát column in the absence of General Wellesley, soon followed his example. A few thousand of Lake's Sepoys under Colonel Monson still kept the field. At length that officer's rash advance into the heart of Holkar's country became seriously

hindered by want of supplies and the harassing attacks of Holkar's numerous horse. An ill-judged retreat, continued for nearly two months through a flooded country, from an enemy less to be dreaded for courage and soldier-ship than mere numbers, brought him back to Agra by the end of August with a scanty remnant of his brave Sepoys ; their guns, baggage, and supplies all captured or left behind them on the road.

Emboldened by this disaster, Holkar sent his horsemen swarming across the Chambal up to Mattra and even to Dehli. On the 7th October 20,000 of his best troops with 100 guns suddenly appeared before that city, into which nothing barred their way but a Sepoy garrison far too small for the works they would have to defend. But for ten days the brave Colonel Ochterlony held his perilous post, until Lake himself came up from Agra to his relief. Balked of his prey, Holkar turned off to plunder the Doab and lay waste its fruitful fields. The English, however, kept him moving at his best pace. While Lake with his " gal-loper " guns and light horse was in full chase of Holkar's cavalry, General Fraser on the 13th November came up with the enemy's main body drawn out under the guns of Dhig, a fortress belonging to the revolted Rajah of Bhartpūr. The rout of the Marāthas and the capture of half their guns once more attested the prowess of English troops against formidable odds, the Sepoys vying with the famous 76th Highlanders in deeds of daring.

Four days later the dashing Lake burst upon Holkar's camp at Farokābād on the Ganges. The surprised Marātha had barely time to escape with a few followers, while the rest of his troops were ridden down and scattered with heavy loss. The fall of Dhig on the 23rd December tempted Lake to enter on the siege of Bhartpūr itself, where Holkar's infantry and his Jāt allies had resolved to make their last stand. But even Lake's heroes failed to atone for the want of heavy guns and skilled

engineers. Four desperate assaults, resulting in the fruitless massacre of his best troops, at length convinced him that one of the strongest fortresses in all India was not to be taken by heroism alone. By this time, however, the Rajah of Bhartpūr had grown weary of fighting for his new friends. His prayer for peace was granted on payment of a moderate fine, and Lord Lake—for such he had



GATE OF FORT BHARTPUR

now become—returned to his former business, the pursuit of Holkar.

For a time it seemed as if Sindia also, in revenge for the transfer of his late capital, Gwalior, to another chief, was again to be reckoned among our foes. The march, however, of an English force into Bundalkhand made him pause on the road to ruin; and Lord Wellesley was about

to strengthen his wiser leanings by the timely cession of Gwalior, when a new Governor-General landed at Fort William on the 30th July, 1805 ; and “ the glorious little man,” who in seven years had by force of arms or treaties placed all India within the Satlaj at his feet, went home to give account of his stewardship to those who had sent him out. A series of attacks in Parliament and a vote of censure from the Company whose possessions he had doubled, whose power he had raised to the highest pitch, were the immediate rewards of a career as statesmanlike as that of Hastings, as all-subduing as that of Lord Dalhousie. The attacks in Parliament were merited and signal failures, but it took the Company thirty years to discover their mistake, and to cancel the outrageous verdict of 1807 by voting a statue and a grant of £20,000 to the great man, whose “ ardent zeal to promote the well-being of India, and to uphold the interest and honour of the British empire,” ought to have been acknowledged many years before.

CHAPTER II.

LORD CORNWALLIS AND LORD MINTO--1805-1813.

At the urgent prayer of the India House, Lord Cornwallis resumed his former post with the avowed intention of turning back upon the footsteps of his bolder predecessor. The prevailing "frenzy of conquest" had to be subdued, the Company's treasury to be saved from utter exhaustion. But the climate of Bengal played havoc with the old man's weakened frame; and he died in October, leaving Sir George Barlow, the senior member of his council, to carry on the mistimed and unseemly task of unpicking the web so carefully woven by Lord Wellesley. A policy of wanton self-repression, of cowardly retreat from fancied dangers and real responsibilities, took the place of that bolder, wiser, more merciful system, by which Wellesley had striven to raise up in India a power strong enough to keep the peace among its turbulent neighbours, and to rescue vast tracts of country from the miseries of chronic strife.

A fresh treaty concluded with Sindia in November not only yielded everything he had asked for, but released him in part from the restraints imposed by that of Arjungaum. Jeswant Rao Holkar, whom the unflagging Lake had chased across the Satlaj, was glad to make peace on any terms with his pursuers; but even the mild conditions granted by Lord Lake were yet further tempered by Sir George Barlow, who gave Rampur back to Holkar and left the hapless Rajah of Bhundi to his fate. In the same spirit our good friend the Rajah of Jaipur, in spite of

pledges received from Lake and Cornwallis, was abandoned to the ruthless inroads of the Marátha chief whose final overthrow he had helped to hasten. It was a sore trial for the conqueror of Jeswant Rao to bear the upbraidings and disregard the prayers of the Rajah's envoy ; but his orders were too clear, and all that he could do to show his indignation he did, by resigning his civil powers into the hands of the Governor-General.

The fruits of this retrograde policy were not long in showing themselves. No sooner had Lord Lake turned his back on the Panjáb than Holkar resumed his plundering habits at the expense alike of friend and foe. His bands of freebooters swept the country clean from the Beyas to the Jamna. Hariána was laid waste. From the helpless Rajah of Jaipúr he extorted large sums of money ; and the Rajah of Bhúndi had cause to rue the day when he held out to Monson's soldiers a helping hand against their ravenous pursuers. Rájputána itself was ere long torn to pieces by intestine strife, and the ruin caused by the quarrels of Rajput princes was completed by the ruthless raids of Sindia's Maráthas and Amir Khan's Pathans, whose progress was everywhere marked by blazing villages and wasted fields. In the midst of a career of boundless rapine and wanton bloodshed Holkar fortunately went raving mad from drink, and his death in 1811 relieved Central India of one of the worst scourges which his country had ever produced.

Even the Peshwa began to kick against the barriers set to his ambition by the treaty of Bassein. The demand for chaauth was heard again from Púna, and Bájí Rao claimed his share of the spoils which Sindia and Holkar were carrying off from the plundered princes and peoples of Rájputána. The Nizám also, who had succeeded his father, Nizám Ali, in 1803, was already intriguing with the Marátha princes against the power to which he owed his throne. But there was a point in his policy of for-

bearance beyond which even Sir G. Barlow would not go. Both the Nizám and the Peshwa were compelled to retrace their steps, and to learn that the bolder spirit of Lord Wellesley had not quite departed from the counsels of his successor.

Meanwhile a new and unforeseen danger threatened the government of Madras. With more than the usual folly of military martinets, Sir John Cradock issued a set of orders regarding uniform,* which the Sepoys of Madras read as a wilful attempt to tamper with the creed and customs of their race. It was about the time when the first English missionaries had entered in Bengal on the work which St. Francis Xavier had begun, and the Protestant Swartz, after a long interval, had continued in Southern India. The Company's servants looked on the new movement with natural dread, as a likely danger to the public peace; and the labours of Carey, Ward, and Marshman had to be carried on from the Danish settlement of Serampúr on the Húghli. Idle or evil tongues thereupon spread through Southern India the report of a set design on the part of the English against the creeds and customs of their native subjects. The spirit of distrust and disaffection thus engendered among the Sepoys was carefully fomented by the Mohammadans in Vellor, where Tippu's family were allowed to dwell at no great distance from the Maisór frontier. One of the Sepoy regiments in that fortress had been largely recruited from the ranks of Tippu's own army.

In the early morning of the 10th July, 1806, the two native regiments at Vellór rose in sudden mutiny, attacked the European barracks, where some 370 men of the 69th Foot were yet sleeping, poured volley after volley into their helpless victims, and shot down thirteen officers coming

* The Sepoys were forbidden to wear earrings on parade, and were ordered to shave their chins, and exchange their turbans for a kind of shako.

out of their rooms. Happily for the survivors, help was soon to reach them in their desperate need from the garrison of Arkot, eight miles off. At the head of a squadron of his 19th Dragoons and a few galloper guns, Colonel Gillespie rode at his best pace to the scene of massacre, blew open the gate of the fortress, and with the help of those inside dealt heavy destruction on the mutineers, hundreds of whom were shot, sabred, or taken prisoners. Of the 69th, however, ninety-five men and officers lay dead, and ninety-one wounded. Lord William Bentinck, Governor of Madras, was summarily ordered home without a hearing, as an abettor of Sir J. Cradock in the measures which directly provoked so dire a disaster; and the Maisór princes incurred no other penalty for their mischievous intrigues than a compulsory change of abode to Calcutta.

In the following July Lord Minto, a statesman of some promise and of twelve months' special experience at the Board of Control, took his seat as Governor-General in the room of Barlow, transferred to Madras. Enjoined to uphold the policy of peaceful isolation, he soon found cause to unlearn the lessons dimmed into his ears at home. The great Sikh leader, Ranjit Singh, was already seeking to extend his strong sway over the independent Sikh and Mussulman princes of Sirhind. Twice within as many years he had crossed the Satlaj in furtherance of his ambitious schemes. But at length the boldness of his movements and the prayers of his intended victims for English aid decided Lord Minto to enforce the powers ascribed to him by the suppliant chiefs themselves. To this course he was all the more strongly impelled by Buonaparte's brilliant successes in Europe, and the peace he had just concluded with the Russian Emperor. Mr. Charles Metcalfe, one of Lord Wellesley's ablest pupils, was sent to talk over matters with the bold but clear-headed ruler of the Panjáb; and when Ranjit Singh would have shaken himself free

from English dictation by another raid across the Satlaj, Colonel Ochterlony marched to the protection of the Sirhind chiefs. Thanks to this movement and Metcalfe's patient firmness, a treaty was concluded in April, 1809, by which Ranjit Singh withdrew all claims to sovereignty over the Sikhs on the south bank of the Satlaj. At the same time the outposts of his new allies were advanced from the Jamna to the borders of the Panjáb.

Other missions were despatched about this time to the Shah of Persia and to Shah Shujá, brother and successor to Zamán Shah of Kabul. The latter came to nothing by reason of the Afghan monarch's flight from before the arms of his victorious brother.* Colonel Malcolm's second mission to Teherán for the purpose of thwarting French intrigues was forestalled by that of Sir Harford Jones, sent out direct from England. The Shah, however, greeted Malcolm as an old friend, and the rival envoys had become rivals only for the common good, when a new ambassador was sent out from England to supersede them both.

Meanwhile Lord Minto had put forth a hand of power to save the Rajah of Berár from the attacks of the turbulent Rohilla chieftain Amir Khan, who, in Holkar's name, had led out a host of armed freebooters to spread havoc through the fairest provinces of Central India. The invader was driven back to Indór, and his own capital occupied by Colonel Close. But either from misplaced lenity or undue deference to the supposed desires of the India House, Lord Minto withdrew his troops from the conquered country, and the work which he had well-nigh completed had to be taken up afresh on a larger scale by his successor.

In the same year, 1809, a vigorous onslaught was made on the plague of piracy in Eastern waters. The chiefs of Kolápúr and Sáwantwári were forced to surrender their

* The Hon. Mountstuart Elphinstone, afterwards Governor of Bombay, was at the head of this mission.

ports on the Malabar coast, whence pirate vessels had long been wont to prey upon the smaller trading craft that passed within their reach. In the Persian Gulf, where swarmed the Arab pirates who had lately murdered the crew of an English merchant ship, a British force from Bombay beat up their chief haunts, burnt their vessels, and stormed the great pirate stronghold of Ras-al-khaima.

A like success rewarded Lord Minto's efforts to protect English trade from the French privateers in Eastern waters. The island of Bourbon was captured with little loss in 1810, and before the year's end the Mauritius also, after a brief struggle, submitted to our arms. The turn of Java came next. Its Dutch possessors, aided by their French allies, made a gallant defence; but Gillespie's timely daring and the strength of the army led by Sir Samuel Achmuty soon overcame their resistance, and Java for a few years passed under the Company's rule.*

Meanwhile Sir George Barlow's government had been harassed by an outbreak in Travankór and a serious mutiny among its own officers. The former was suppressed in the beginning of 1809, and the country placed under English management. The mutiny, which had been provoked by the Madras governor's headlong zeal in a good cause, and fanned by his ill-timed severity, blazed up to such a height that the officers at Seringapatam turned their guns on the troops sent against them. At last, however, the mutineers returned to their senses. A few of the ring-leaders were cashiered or dismissed, and the remainder were glad to sign a pledge binding them to obey and support the government of Madras. Sir George Barlow was recalled.

Not long after the conquest of Java, Lord Minto found himself confronted by a new foe. For some time past the Pindáris, a vast brotherhood of mounted freebooters, who were ready to fight under any standard for the chance

* Sir Stamford Raffles was appointed Governor.

of unbounded plunder, had been playing a more and more prominent part in the wars of native princes. As Free Lances, they had fought for the Peshwa at Pánipat, had shared in the frequent struggles of the Sindias and Holkars in Hindústán and Southern India, and made war on their own account with every native prince whose weakness at any moment seemed to invite attack. Daulat Rao Sindia himself was fain to purchase immunity from their plundering raids by the cession of several districts to one of their most daring leaders, Chitu, a Ját by birth, and a robber from his earliest childhood. Another chief, the Rohilla Kharim Khan, had become a terrible thorn in Sindia's side before that potentate could succeed in crippling him. Amír Khan himself was in league with the Pindáris, by whose help he had risen to power. From the hills and glens of Central India thousands of armed ruffians sallied forth year after year in quest of plunder, sparing no cruelty to gain their ends, and widening the circle of their ravages with each new raid, until in 1811 the smoke of their camp-fires could be seen from Gaya and Mirzápúr.

Had Lord Minto deemed himself free to act as he chose, this last outrage would have been speedily avenged. But his hands were tied by the Court of Directors, and while he was waiting for leave to punish the Pindaris according to their deserts, the order for his recall—a measure forced upon the India House by the Prince Regent—was already on its way to Calcutta. In October, 1813, he set sail for England, to enjoy the earldom which he had fairly earned ; and the Earl of Moira went out as Governor-General in his stead.

In the course of the same year the question of renewing the Company's charter, under fresh conditions, for another twenty years provoked some warm debates in Parliament. In vain did the Company and their friends plead for the maintenance of all the privileges secured to the former in

1793. Against them were arrayed the whole strength of Lord Castlereagh's ministry and the growing influence of the trading classes throughout the country. The trade with India was thrown open to all Englishmen alike ; but the Company were allowed for twenty years longer to keep in their own hands the sole right of trade with China. An English Bishop was appointed to the new-made see of Calcutta. In respect, however, of their political power, the Company escaped the doom which some of the leading statesmen in England would have enforced against them even then.

CHAPTER III.

MARQUIS OF HASTINGS—1813–1823.

THE peace which Lord Minto had left behind him was not to remain long unbroken. Among the legacies bequeathed to his successor was a deepening quarrel with the Gurkha rulers of Nipál, a long tract of Himalayan upland overlooking the fertile plains and forests of Audh. In the course of four centuries the Rájput settlers in Nipál had brought under their sway the old Mongol dwellers in the hills, and out of their several conquests arose one Gurkha kingdom, whose power in the nineteenth century was felt from the highlands of Bhotán to the banks of the Upper Satlaj. For some years past the Gurkhas had carried their inroads across the Audh frontier, even at last into the districts which the Nawáb had ceded to Lord Wellesley. Lord Minto's demands for restitution of the conquered villages had been treated with contempt, and when Lord Moira reached Calcutta, the quarrel was already swollen to a dangerous head.

He renewed the former demand in terms whose meaning could not be mistaken. A murderous attack on the police at Botwal, in Ghorakpúr, was the only yet decisive answer from Khatmandú. In the autumn of 1814 a strong British force, in four columns, marched on as many points of the Nipálese frontier. The campaign, which had been skilfully planned, was to be cruelly blundered in the prosecution. Gillespie's headlong valour before the hill-fort of Kalanga cost him his life, and involved his troops in heavy losses. Not till after a second assault, attended

with issues yet more fatal, did the remnant of the Gurkha garrison make their escape from a post no longer tenable. Gillespie's successor wasted months in blockading another fort, which a little more energy would have placed much earlier in his hands. General Wood and General Marley vied with each other in losing great opportunities and throwing discredit upon the British name. But for Ochterlony's successful advance from Ambála into the troubled sea of green hills about Simla, and his brilliant capture of Malaun, on the Upper Satlaj, from the ablest of the Gurkha leaders, Amar Singh, this first campaign against a foe weak in numbers, but strong in native courage and natural resources, would have ended in utter failure, if not in something worse.

The capture of Malaun, however, following on Colonel Gardiner's successes in Almóra, changed the face of affairs, not only in Nipál, but all over India. The native princes, who were all but ready for one more struggle against the English power, drew back at the last moment from a course so dangerous to themselves; and the Gurkha Rajah of Nipál was about to make peace with Lord Moira, when the fiery Amar Singh persuaded him to renew the war. It was not long, however, before he had reason to repent his rashness. Early in 1816, Sir David Ochterlony, who had just gained his knighthood, marched at the head of a powerful army on Khatmandú. After a brief but vain resistance, the Gurkha Government saved their capital by signing a treaty which stripped them of nearly all their lowland possessions, turned Kamaun into an English province, and placed an English Resident, for the first time, at the Nipálese court. For his successful conduct of the war Lord Moira was created Marquis of Hastings.

To thwart Maráthha intrigues and punish Pindári aggressions was the Governor-General's next aim. In spite of hindrances offered by his own council and the Court of

Directors, he set himself to revive and extend Lord Wellesley's policy of securing peace and order throughout India by means of treaties, which placed one native prince after another in a kind of vassalage to the paramount power that ruled from Fort William. The Pathan ruler of Bhopál, in Málwa, claimed and received the formal protection of a power to which his successors have proved their loyalty under every trial. In 1816, Appa Sahib, the Regent of Berár, agreed to maintain a British contingent at his own cost. By means of a little timely compulsion, the able and accomplished Elphinstone baffled for a while the plots which the Peshwa, Báji Rao, and his villainous accomplice, Trimbakji Dangha, had woven against their English allies. The treaty of June, 1817, left Lord Hastings master of Sagar and Bundalkhand, while it bound the Peshwa to renounce his friend Trimbakji, his own claims to the headship of the Marátha League, to make no treaties with any other native prince, and to accept in all things the counsel and control of the Company's Government. Hard as these terms may seem, there was no choice, averred Lord Hastings, between thus crippling a secret foe and depriving him of the crown he had fairly forfeited.

Meanwhile Lord Hastings' fearless energy had already saved the Rájputs of Jaipúr from further suffering at the hands of their Pathan oppressor, Amír Khan, and forced from Sindia himself a reluctant promise to aid in suppressing the Pindári hordes, whose fearful ravages had at length been felt by the peaceful villagers in the Northern Sarkárs. In the autumn of 1817 Hastings took the field at the head of an army which, counting native contingents, mustered nearly 120,000 strong, with some 300 guns. From east, west, north, and south, a dozen columns set forth to hunt down the merciless ruffians who had so long been allowed to harry the fairest provinces of India. In spite of the havoc wrought among our troops

by the great cholera outbreak of that year, and of a sudden rising among the Marátha princes for one last struggle with their former conquerors, our arms were everywhere successful against Maráthas and Pindáris alike. The latter, hunted into the hills and jungles of central India, found no safety anywhere except in small bodies and constant flight. Chítu, one of their boldest leaders, was chased from Rájputána into Gujarát, from Gujarát into Málwa, where for several months he roamed through the dense jungles with hardly a companion, until one day his body was found half-eaten by tigers in the heart of the Sátpúra Hills. The other leaders were all slain or captured, their followers dispersed, and the famous robber-league passed into a tale of yore.

Not less swift and sure was the punishment dealt upon the Marátha leaders who joined the Peshwa in his sudden uprising against the British power. His late submission had been nothing but a mask for renewed plottings. Elphinstone, however, saw through the mask which had taken in the confiding Malcolm. Before the end of October an English regiment, summoned in hot haste from Bombay, pitched its camp at Kirki, about two miles from Púna, beside the small Sepoy brigade already quartered there. In the first days of November Báji Rao began to assume a bolder tone as his plans grew ripe for instant execution. On the 5th, a body of Maráthas attacked and destroyed the Residency, which Elphinstone had quitted in the nick of time. A great Marátha army then marched forth to overwhelm the little garrison at Kirki, before fresh troops could come up to its aid from Sirúr. Elphinstone, however, who knew his foe, had no idea of awaiting the attack. Colonel Burr at once led out his men, not 3,000 all told. A brilliant charge of Marátha horse was heavily repulsed by a Sepoy regiment, and the English steadily advancing drove the enemy from the field.

A few days later General Smith, at the head of a larger

force, advanced on Puna, occupied the city, and pursued the frightened Peshwa from place to place. The heroic defence of Karigaum, a small village on the Bhima, by Captain Staunton and 800 Sepoys, with only two light guns, against 25,000 Maráthas during a whole day, proved once more how nobly native troops could fight under English leading.*

Happily for Staunton's weary and diminished band, Smith came up the next morning, and the desponding Peshwa continued his retreat. Turn where he would, there was no rest for his jaded soldiers. Munro with a weak force, partly of his own raising, headed him on his way to the Carnatic, took several of his strong places, and drove him northwards within reach of General Smith.

On the 19th February, 1818, that officer overtook and routed the flying foe at the village of Ashti. Bapu Gokla, the Peshwa's staunchest and ablest follower, perished in the field, while covering the retreat of his cowardly master. For some weeks longer Bají Rao fled hither and thither before his resolute pursuers. But at length all hope forsook him as the circle of escape grew daily narrower; and in the middle of May the great-grandson of Bálaji Vishwanáth yielded himself to Sir John Malcolm at Indór, on terms far more liberal than he had any reason to expect. Even for the faithful few who still shared his fortunes due provision was made at his request. He himself spent the rest of his days a princely pensioner at Bithúr, near Cawnpore; but the sceptre which he and his sires had wielded for a hundred years passed into English hands, while the Rajah of Satára, the long-neglected heir of the house of Sivaji, was restored to the nominal headship of the Marátha power.

Meanwhile Appa Sahib, the usurping Rajah of Berár, had no sooner heard of the outbreak at Púna, than he,

* Only three English officers remained unhurt out of eleven. Of the men 175 were killed and wounded.

too, like the Peshwa, threw off his mask. On the evening of the 24th November, 1817, his troops, to the number of 18,000, suddenly attacked the weak English and Sepoy force of 1,400 men with four guns, posted on the Sitabaldi Hills, outside Nagpúr. A terrible fight for eighteen hours ended in the repulse of the assailants, with a loss to the victors of more than 300 men and twelve officers. A few weeks later Nagpúr itself was occupied after another fight. Even then the Rajah might have kept his throne, for his conquerors were merciful and hoped the best. But they hoped in vain. It was not long before Appa Sahib, caught out in fresh intrigues, was sent off a prisoner towards Allahábád. Escaping from his captors, he wandered about the country for several years, and died at Lahór a pensioner on the bounty of Ranjít Singh.

The house of Holkar had also paid the penalty of its rash resistance to our arms. After the murder of Tulsi Bhai, Regent of Indór, by the chiefs of her own army, in 1817, they spurned all Malcolm's offers of peace, and from a strong position at Mahidpúr, on the banks of the Sipri, awaited the attack of a Madras column led by Sir Thomas Hislop. Under a withering fire from the Marátha guns Hislop's Sepoys crossed the river in the face of 20,000 foes, and carried all before them with the bayonet, after a hard struggle which cost the victors 778 men. Sixty-three guns with all the camp stores fell into their hands. On the 6th January, 1818, the young Holkar was glad to sign a treaty which placed him and his heirs under English protection at the cost of his independence and of some part of his realm. Luckily for himself, Sindia had remained quiet, if not quite loyal, throughout this last struggle between the English and his Marátha kinsfolk.

Thus in one short and decisive campaign, the great Maratha power, which had survived the slaughter of Panipat, fell shattered to pieces by the same blow which

crushed to the Pindáris, and raised an English merchant-company to the paramount lordship of all India. The last of the Peshwas had ceased to reign, the Rajah of Berár was a discrowned fugitive, the Rajah of Satára a king only in name, while Sindia, Holkar, and the Nizám were dependent princes who reigned only by sufferance of an English Governor-General at Calcutta. The Moghal Empire lingered only in the palace of Delhi; its former viceroy, the Nawáb of Audh, was our obedient vassal; the haughty princes of Rájputána bowed their necks, more or less cheerfully, to the yoke of masters merciful as Akbar and mightier than Aurangzib. Ranjít Singh himself cultivated the goodwill of those powerful neighbours who had sheltered the Sikhs of Sirhind from his ambitious inroads. With the final overthrow of the Maráthas a new reign of peace, order, and general progress began for peoples who, during a hundred and fifty years, had lived in a ceaseless whirl of anarchy and armed strife.

With the capture of Asirgarh in April 1819, the fighting in Southern India came to an end. The country conquered from the Peshwa was placed under the fostering care of Mountstuart Elphinstone, who afterwards, as Governor of Bombay, completed the healing work which he and his able subalterns had begun from Púna. Sir Thomas Munro, one of the ablest soldier-statesmen of his time in India, became ere long Governor of Madras, and reformed the land-revenue system of that Presidency in accordance with the lessons he had learned in the Ceded Districts.* About the same time Mr. Holt Mackenzie entered on the task of reassessing the land in the North-Western Provinces, on the basis of a settlement neither with the Rayat as in Madras, nor with the Zamindár as in Bengal, but with the head-man of every village community.

* The Rayatwári system, of which Munro was the chief advocate, was, broadly speaking, a yearly settlement of the land-revenue with each *rayat* or cultivator.

In Orissa, on the other hand, a popular outbreak, caused by excessive demands for land-revenue, had to be put down by force, and the assessments to be curtailed by nearly one-half.

Free at length from warlike cares, Lord Hastings threw himself with unflagging zeal into the task of governing his broad dominions. His great capacity for hard work was enhanced by a thorough mastery of details and the liberal spirit of his measures for the good of his native subjects. He helped to found schools for the teaching of native children and youths. A native newspaper—the first of its kind—started by the Serampúr Mission, received his steady support. The English press in India became for a time practically free. He restored the canal which had once supplied Delhi with water from the Upper Jamna. Calcutta itself was sweetened with broad streets and shady squares, and adorned with a noble strand. In 1819, with the help of Sir Stamford Raffles, he made up for the loss of Java, given back to the Dutch, by purchasing from its native ruler the neighbouring island of Singapore. His own example did much to raise the tone of the Indian services, and to strengthen their hold on the goodwill of the people at large.

The only cloud upon these later years was caused by the embarrassed state of the Nizám's affairs. The great banking firm of Palmer & Co. had become a power at Haidarábád—a power which Sir Charles Metcalfe at length pronounced so dangerous, that Lord Hastings was compelled to step in between the impoverished Nizám and his more and more grasping creditors. The claims of the former to a yearly tribute for the Northern Sarkárs were wiped out for ever by the payment of a large sum down, most of which went to extinguish the loans due to the English bankers. A year afterwards the house of Palmer & Co. stopped payment, while the Nizám appears to have reaped no lasting good from a compromise which placed

him more than ever at the mercy of his turbulent barons, and of native usurers far less scrupulous than those from whom he had been rescued.

Lord Hastings' services to the Company were crowned by his marked success in matters of finance. In spite of costly wars and other sources of increased outlay, the Indian revenues before his retirement were yielding a yearly surplus of two millions, and the Company's credit stood at a premium of fourteen per cent. All this, however, added to his former deserts, failed to avert from Lord Hastings the attacks which awaited him on his return to England in 1823. The coolness of the India Board became open hostility in the Court of Proprietors, whose vote of virtual censure for his conduct in the affairs of Palmer & Co. was only softened by his acquittal of any corrupt intent. It was not till after his death in 1827 that the India House made some amends for its past unfairness by voting the payment of £20,000 to his son.

CHAPTER IV.

LORD AMHERST AND LORD WILLIAM BENTINCK—1823-1835.

For the next few months after the departure of Lord Hastings, the government of British India rested in the hands of Mr. Adam, senior member of the Calcutta Council. His rule was chiefly memorable for the harsh treatment of Mr. Silk Buckingham, the able and independent founder of the *Calcutta Journal*, whose comments on official acts and persons provoked Lord Hastings' narrow-minded successor to decree his banishment and virtual ruin. The press of India, as if unfit to exercise its newborn freedom, was once more placed under close supervision by a ruler bred in the despotic traditions of other days. Meanwhile the sudden death of Lord Londonderry -- the Lord Castlereagh of earlier times--had determined Canning, the Governor-General elect, to resume his place in the English Ministry, instead of giving India the benefit of his commanding talents. At length Lord Amherst, the late ambassador to China, was appointed to the vacant post, and reached Calcutta on the 1st August, 1823.

His arrival proved to be the forerunner of a new war. The conquest of Assam by the Burmese in 1822 had inflamed the ambition of a power which, from small beginnings, had in the last seventy years established its sway over the neighbouring provinces of Arakan, Pegu, and Tenasserim. The successors of Alompra had even begun to dispute our right to various provinces of Bengal; and an insolent letter to Lord Hastings in 1818--so insolent that he treated it as a mere forgery--was ere long fol-

lowed by an inroad into Kachár. At length, in 1823, English forbearance gave way before a Burman attack upon Shápúri, a British island off the Arakan coast. It was soon recovered by a British force; but the warnings addressed to the Court of Ava were answered only by the despatch of Máha Bandúla, the great Burman general, with an army intended for the conquest of Bengal and the capture of the Governor-General himself.

In February, 1824, Lord Amherst declared war in his turn against the insolent barbarians who had mistaken forbearance for fear. Bandúla's progress in Bengal was soon checked. Before the middle of May a strong force from Madras, under Sir Archibald Campbell, captured with unexpected ease the important town of Rangoon, near the mouth of the Irawádi. After the long inaction caused by the heavy rains of a tropical summer—inaction relieved only by the capture of several places on the Tenasserim coast, and of a few stockades near Rangoon—Campbell's army marched out to attack Bandúla, who barred the way inland with 60,000 of his rabble warriors, mostly entrenched behind strong stockades. By the middle of December the last of these had been carried, and the boastful Burman retired with all haste to his stockaded fortress of Donabyú, forty miles up the Irawádi. The repulse of a weak brigade from this place in March of the following year was retrieved by its capture in April, under the eyes of Campbell himself, who brought back his troops and heavy guns betimes to Cotton's aid.* Before the end of April, Prome itself, the capital of Lower Burmah, was occupied by an English garrison, and the Burmese began to treat for peace.

By this time Colonel Richards had driven the Burmese out of Assam, and gained firm possession of its capital, Itangpúr. On the other hand an attempt to reach Mani-

* The death of Bandúla during the attack contributed greatly to Campbell's success.

pur from Kachár had been utterly baffled by the hardships of a march in the rainy season through an unbroken succession of steep hills and hollows, covered with pathless forests and beset with deep quagmires. Yet more disastrous was General Morrison's march from Chittagong into Arakán in 1825. Precious time was lost upon the road ; the May rains involved a halt at the town of Arakán ; and the subsequent sickness among our troops slew one-fourth of the whole number, and disabled nearly all the rest. The country was conquered, but of the 10,000 men who invaded it, very few were fit for duty when the order came for their return home.

Once more, towards the end of 1825, Sir A. Campbell moved out against the Burmese, for their haughty monarch would not yet stoop to make peace on the only terms which Campbell was empowered to offer. After carrying a few more stockades and routing a fresh Burman army near Prome, the English general marched on to Yandabú, within sixty miles of Ava itself. At length the king, fairly frightened, agreed to purchase peace by the cession of Assam, Arakán, and Tenasserim, and the payment of a million sterling towards the expenses of a war which had cost the victors nearly thirteen millions. Even at that price, however, the conquered provinces have proved well worth the conquering. The rice of Arakán and the tea of Assam are important staples of Indian commerce ; and the goods that pass through Maulmain, the chief port of Tenasserim, already amount in value to nearly a million a-year.

One sad incident sprang out of this prolonged and mismanaged war. The Madras Sepoys went cheerfully across the sea to fight the new enemy, but their high-caste brethren of Bengal, with their religious dread of the "black water," could only be forwarded to the field by land. Several regiments had already started in 1824, and others were awaiting the order to start. But the arrangements for

their march involved them in expenses to which they had never been accustomed. The news from the eastern frontier of Bengal, magnified by distance and transmission from mouth to mouth, struck terror into the hearts of the Sepoys waiting for their turn at Barrackpore. Their reasonable complaints unheeded by the Government, they began to nurse all kinds of unreasonable fancies. They believed that Government, in default of baggage-cattle, was about to carry them to Rangoon by sea. Discontent soon ripened into open mutiny, in which the 47th Regiment took the lead. Its officers, new to their men, for the whole native army had just been remodelled, failed to check the mutinous spirit which now found vent in open refusals to attend parade. On the morning of the 2nd November, the 47th Regiment were confronted by the troops which Sir Edward Paget, the Commander-in-Chief, had brought up overnight to Barrackpore. The Sepoys, like passionate children, refused either to march or to ground their arms. The two English regiments wheeled aside to let the guns come forward, ready loaded with grape. At the first discharge, the frightened Sepoys cast away their unloaded muskets, and fled like scared sheep, followed by the troopers of the body-guard. A good many were shot down, sabred, or drowned in the Húghli; the ringleaders were afterwards sentenced to death or hard labour; and the regiment itself was struck off the list of the Bengal army. There was no more mutiny for many years to come; but the verdict of a court of inquiry betokened the general sympathy with men whose unsoldierly outbreak had been largely owing to their masters' own fault.*

While the Burmese war was yet on foot, the growing insolence of the new Rajah of Bhartpúr had led to a second siege of that renowned fortress, with happier issues

* "The mutiny," said the Court, "was an ebullition of despair at being compelled to march without the means of doing so."

than those of 1805. In December, 1825, 20,000 men, with a hundred guns, marched out under Lord Combermere—the Sir Stapylton Cotton of the Peninsular war—and the fortress which Durjan Sal had deemed impregnable, and in which our heaviest guns could make no impression, was carried by storm after a wide gap in its defences had been opened by the bursting of a great mine, on the 18th January. Durjan Sal atoned for his rashness with the forfeiture of his realm, which was handed over to the nephew he had supplanted; and the dismantling of Bhartpūr itself once more proclaimed to the native princes the irresistible, if sometimes dormant, strength of their new masters.

In 1827 the East India Company lost one of their ablest servants, and Madras her most popular governor, by the death of Sir Thomas Munro. In the same year Elphinstone was succeeded in Bombay by the soldier-statesman, Sir John Malcolm. It was in 1826 that Reginald Heber, the scholarly, pious, gentle, and justly-beloved Bishop of Calcutta, passed away to his rest, after three years of unwearied labour throughout a diocese then comprising the whole of British India. In this year also died Daulat Rao Sindia, leaving his dominions to be ruled by his widow, in the name of her adopted son, Jankaji Sindia. About the same time the government of Nagpur was handed over to its young Rajah, whose subjects soon found cause to regret the change of rulers. The death of the gallant Ochterlony in 1826 had led to the removal of Sir Charles Metcalfe from Haidarabad to Delhi, and the good effect of his wise counsels soon passed away from the feeble government of the Nizam. After a farewell progress through the upper provinces, Lord Amherst himself retired from office and from India in February, 1828.

Lord Amherst was succeeded by that Lord William Bentinck whose career as Governor of Madras had closed so abruptly after the mutiny of Vellór. Coming out again

to India full of humane intentions, and charged with strict orders to keep down the public expenses, he had the good fortune to achieve his twofold mission during a period of general peace. Before the end of 1829 he had issued the decree which made *Satti*, or widow-burning, thenceforth punishable as murder throughout British India. In the following year he began a merciless war against the Thugs, a brotherhood of secret murderers who, in the name of their goddess Kali, were wont to strangle in lonely places the unwary travellers whom they had agreed to rob. The task of hunting down these ruffians was entrusted to the active Major Sleeman, who, aided by a staff of picked subordinates, and the clues supplied by one of their own number, tracked them into their secret haunts, caught several thousands of them in a few years, and succeeded in utterly suppressing their dreadful trade.

In unwilling obedience to orders from England, Lord William Bentinck carried out the ungracious task of cutting down the pay of his native troops in Bengal. Officers and men were alike indignant at a measure which seemed to them a wanton breach of faith, a measure which applied only to the stations nearest Calcutta. But the Court of Directors paid no heed to their just complaints, and Lord William Bentinck saw no way of shirking the enforcement of a cheese-paring thrift which saved his masters about twenty thousand a-year, and rendered himself for a time the worst abused Englishman in all India. In curtailing the allowances of civil servants, his lordship acted with much less reluctance, and his masters with better excuse. Another of his reforms laid him open to just censure: the abolition of flogging in the native army, while the punishment was still retained for our white troops, did honour to his humanity at the expense of his political foresight.

His humanity was employed to better purpose in opening to the natives those higher ranks of the civil service from which Lord Cornwallis had shut them out. Native

judges sat once more in civil courts ; native Christians were encouraged to take office ; and the old Hindu laws of inheritance were shorn of the provisions which virtually forbade the descent of Hindu property to heirs of another creed. Some useful reforms were made in the administration of justice, and the native languages of India supplanted Persian in the courts of law. A medical college for the natives was founded in Calcutta, and the study of Western lore and science was encouraged by the introduction of English teaching into the State-aided schools—a measure largely due to the zeal of such men as Mr. Macaulay and Sir Charles Trevelyan.

In 1833 Lord Bentinck gave the word for a revised settlement of the North-Western Provinces on the lines laid out in 1822. Under the able lead of Mr. Robert Mertins Bird, the work of surveying and reassessing the land of a province larger than England and Wales, and more populous than Great Britain, was carried through in eight years, with all the care and thoroughness demanded for the survey of a private estate. The trade of the country received a new impulse from Lord Bentinck's efforts in its behalf. In 1830, English steamers, built at Calcutta, made their way for the first time up the Ganges to Banáras and Allahábad. The same year also witnessed the successful voyage of a Government steamer, the "Hugh Lindsay," from Bombay to Suez, at the top of the Red Sea. Had Lord Bentinck's efforts to shorten the journey from England to India been promptly seconded by the Court of Directors, twelve years would not have been lost in following up the issues of an experiment which marked out the Isthmus of Suez as the best available road for the Indian mails.

In his dealings with native princes, Lord William Bentinck combined the utmost forbearance with a certain share of firmness on fit occasions. The Rajah of Jodpur was replaced on the throne from which his rebellious

barons had ousted him. The mother of the young Sindia was bidden to hand over the reins of government to her son. In the affairs of Jaipur and Bhopál, the Governor-General declined to interfere for the maintenance of order and the protection of their rightful lords. But the reckless and incapable Nawáb of Audh was sharply rebuked for his shortcomings, and plainly warned against persistence in misrule. An armed force under General Fraser was sent to punish the refractory Rajah of Kúrg, and his little state was brought under English rule. Kachár was annexed on the death of its childish ruler. A serious outbreak in Maisór, provoked by the misrule of its incapable Rajah, had to be put down by a strong force from Madras; and the power which he had abused, in spite of repeated warnings, passed into English hands, in accordance with the terms laid down by Lord Wellesley.

A rising of Mohammadan fanatics at Baraset, not far from Calcutta, disturbed the peace of the empire in 1831. Inflamed by the preaching of one Titu Mir, a disciple of Saiyid Ahmad, founder of the new Wahábi sect in the Panjab,* they proclaimed a holy war against the infidels in Bengal, and launched into all manner of outrages on their Hindu neighbours. Their suppression was followed in the next year by a rising among the Kóls, an aboriginal race in the hills of Western Bengal. These rude foresters fell upon the Hindu settlers and underlings whose encroachments and hard dealings had aroused their wrath; and many fields were wasted, villages burnt, and people slain, before the revolt was put down, and their country placed under a special commissioner. A few years earlier, the brave young soldier, Outram, had reclaimed the Bhíl tribes in the forests of Khandesh from a state of lawless

* In 1827 Saiyid Ahmad attacked Pesháwar, which Ranjit Singh had lately won from the Afghans. The attack was renewed in 1830 with more success, but he was soon driven out again, and was slain in Kashmír in 1831 by the Sikh troops.

savagery into one of peaceful industry and loyal submission to our rule.

About the same time Captain Hall was engaged in taming the Mairs who inhabited the hills of Mairwāra, on the borders of Ajmīr. Another wild race, the Khānds of Gūmsar in the Northern Sarkārs, was being gradually weaned by the labours of Captains Campbell and Macpherson from the time-honoured practice of manuring their fields with the flesh of human beings offered up as a sacrifice to the Earth-goddess. Noble efforts were also made by several of our countrymen, with the warm encouragement of Lord William Bentinck, to check the prevalence of female infanticide among the Rājput tribes in various parts of India. But a practice born of caste-pride, and of hard social customs which forbade the marriage of a Rājput girl with one of lower rank, which made her marriage with an equal ruinously expensive, and which exposed her to the deep disgrace of remaining unmarried, was not to be uprooted all at once; and the good work begun by Mr. Duncan in the first years of this century was very far from completion when Lord Bentinck left India.

Meanwhile, however, the results of two wars between Russia and Persia had made Russian influence supreme at Teherān,* and reawakened among English statesmen those fears of coming danger to India which Lord Wellesley's and Lord Minto's efforts had lulled to sleep. It was resolved to send a mission to Ranjit Singh by way of the Indus, with the twofold object of strengthening our relations with an old and useful ally, and of bringing the Amirs of Sindh within the pale of Anglo-Indian diplomacy. The Talpūr chiefs from Balūchistān, who had wrested Sindh from the Afghans in 1786, did all they dared to thwart the policy of their English neighbours; but Lieu-

* The treaty of Turkomanchai in 1828 had given Russia a large slice of Persian territory in addition to the conquests of 1812.

tenant Burnes succeeded in passing up the Indus and delivering his presents to the ruler of the Panjab.* Ranjit Singh received him with open arms, and the good results of their friendly intercourse were followed up by a formal interview between the ambitious Sikh and the Governor-General at Rúpar, on the Upper Satlaj, in the same year. Sixteen thousand of his best soldiers, drilled by French and Italian officers, attended the former to the place of meeting, while a choice brigade of English troops discharged the like duty for Lord William Bentinck.

With his usual good sense, the great Sikh ruler fell in with the views of his English ally, and Shaikárpúr, for which he had been hankering, was saved to the Amírs of Sindh. The treaties concluded with him and the Amírs opened up the Indus and the Satlaj for the first time to English trade, and the Maharajah of Lahór found fresh employment for his restless soldiery in resisting the attempts of the Afghan, Dost Mohammad, to regain possession of Pesháwar.

At length in March, 1835, Lord William Bentinck sailed for England, leaving behind him the memory of a wise, humane, and successful governor, who had made the welfare of his subjects his foremost aim, struck heavy blows at barbarous usages, reformed the civil service, encouraged modern enterprise, and restored the Indian revenues to a state of health. The last years of his rule were memorable for the debates in the English Parliament which issued in the extinction of the Company's last remaining privileges in respect of trade. With the renewal of their charter in 1833 for another twenty years, the China monopoly ceased to exist, and the trade with Chinese ports was thrown open to Englishmen of every class. From that time also our countrymen became free to settle and buy lands in any part of India, while no

* He was accompanied by Captain Wood of the Indian navy, who afterwards explored the sources of the Oxus.

native could any longer be debarred from public office by reason of his religion, birthplace, colour, or descent. The legislative control of the Governor-General in Council over the minor governments was for the first time secured by the same act, and an English lawyer of acknowledged repute was added as a fourth member to the Calcutta Council. The first holder of this new office was Mr. Macaulay, the brilliant essayist and historian of a later day, whose Indian labours were long afterwards to bear rich fruit in the penal code first drafted by his own hands.

CHAPTER V.

LORD AUCKLAND—1836-1842.

MR. MOUNTSTUART ELPHINSTONE having declined on the plea of ill-health to take Lord William Bentinck's place, the Government of India was for a time entrusted to the able hands of Sir Charles Metcalfe. But his very first measure, the passing of an Act which made the press of India as free as it is in England, gave such deep offence to the Court of Directors, that all his past services were forgotten ; and the Government of Madras, which had just fallen vacant when Lord Auckland went out to India, was refused to one whom the directors a few months before would have confirmed in his acting appointment, if they could. In March, 1836, Lord Auckland reached Calcutta, and soon afterwards Sir Charles exchanged the service of the Company for a useful and distinguished career under the Crown.

The first two years of Lord Auckland's rule were marked by nothing more important than his interference at Lucknow on behalf of the rightful heir to the throne of Audh, against a rival set up by the widow of the late Nawáb. In 1839 the intrigues of the Rajah of Satára, whom Lord Hastings had restored to freedom and kingly honours, were brought to a final stop by his dethronement and removal to Banáras.

By this time, however, Lord Auckland's policy had committed India to a war, whose ultimate fruits were to be gathered amidst vain regrets for the loss of many lives, millions of money, and much of our national honour. In

1837 Captain Burnes, Lord Auckland's envoy, was kindly received at Kabul by Dost Mohammad, the Barakzai chief, who had avenged his brother's cruel death by overturning the dynasty of Zamán Shah. Not content with governing the unruly Afghans, Dost Mohammad was eager to enlist our aid in his efforts to recover the rich Pesháwar valley from the Sikhs. A Russian emissary was then at Kabul. The English envoy's mind was sedulously filled with warnings of the danger which threatened India from Russia's progress in the East. But Burnes's errand was purely commercial: and Lord Auckland answered the Amír's overtures by a plain demand for the dismissal of his Russian visitor, and a flat refusal to aid him in any way against our Sikh ally.

Meanwhile the Shah of Persia, with the help of Russian money and Russian officers, was laying siege to Herat, the Gate of Afghánistán. Dost Mohammad's brothers, the princes of Kandahár, were treating for a Persian alliance; and the Amír of Kábul himself was ere long turning to the same quarter for the help denied him from Simla. In this state of affairs Lord Auckland chose the very worst of the courses which lay open to him. He resolved to aid Shah Shujá in recovering the kingdom from which he had been more than once expelled by Dost Mohammad. By a treaty concluded with the royal exile and Ranjít Singh he bound himself to support the latter in his efforts to replace the imbecile Shah Shujá on the throne of his father, Ahmad Shah. In the teeth of every argument, of warnings from every quarter against the folly of waging an unprovoked war at such a distance from his own frontier, in a barren and difficult country peopled with hardy, warlike mountaineers, Lord Auckland prepared to assemble an army for the invasion of Afghánistán. The Calcutta Council, the Court of Directors, nearly all the foremost statesmen in both countries, every one, in short, except Lord Auckland, his secretaries, a number of young Indian

officers eager for distinction or adventure, and Sir John Hobhouse, President of the Board of Control, was against a move not more impolitic than unjust. But the Governor-General had taken it into his head that Russian intrigues could be thwarted only by the dethronement of Dost Mohammad; nor could even the successful defence of Herát by the daring Lieutenant Pottinger avail to turn him from his purpose. The treaty with Ranjit Singh had pledged the English to help Shah Shujá with nothing more than money and English officers, and all danger on the side of Persia had been removed by the retreat of the Persian army from Herát. Shah Shujá himself had no wish to reappear among his former subjects as a king who owed his crown to British bayonets. But Lord Auckland had made up his mind to act with vigour, and before the end of November, 1838, the "Army of the Indus" lay encamped on the sandy plain of Firózpúr.

For some time all went swimmingly enough. The Amirs of Sindh were coerced into forwarding the designs of the Governor-General. From Karáchi and Firózpúr the two divisions of the invading army held their way towards the passes in the Sulaiman Hills, which lead from the Sindh frontier into Afghánistán. The long march through dreary deserts and dangerous defiles was accomplished painfully but successfully under the supreme command of Sir John Keane. Before the end of April, 1839, Shah Shujá at the head of his own troops had entered Kandahár, where early in the following month he was joined by both divisions of Keane's army.

After a rest of some weeks the army resumed its march. On the 22nd July the gates of the strong fortress of Ghazní were blown in by our engineers, and the place itself stormed by a bold rush with little loss to the victors. Dost Mohammad sued for peace, but the offer of a dignified retreat on Indian ground was spurned by a king who had ruled his subjects with marked ability for more than

ten years; and he fled, hotly pursued by Outram, to the wilds of Bamian. On the 7th August his victorious rival rode through the streets of Kabul, escorted by British troops, amidst the silence or the muttered curses of the people he had not seen for thirty years, to his palace-citadel the Bala Hissár.

Meanwhile the Sikh and Afghan force under Colonel Wade had won its way from Peshawar through the Khaibar Pass to Jalálabad, reaching Kabul on the 3rd September. Ranjít Singh himself, the old one-eyed "Lion of the Pan-jáb," had died in June at Lahór, after a masterful reign of about forty years, leaving his sceptre in the nerveless hands of his son Karak Singh. Thus far the army of the Indus had done its work; and the honours showered on Lord Auckland, Sir John Keane, Colonel Wade, Mr. Macnaghten, and other chief actors in the late events, marked the high if not excessive value placed on their deserts. In September the Bombay troops began their homeward march, capturing on their way the town of Khelát, whose Baluchi master had been caught intriguing against Shah Shujá's allies. Some ten thousand Bengal troops remained behind to garrison the chief places in Afghánistan, while the care of our political interests was made over to Lord Auckland's Chief Secretary, Sir William Macnaghten.

For some time longer matters in the conquered country went on as smoothly as could be desired. Dost Mohammad, hunted from place to place, yielded himself a prisoner to Sir William Macnaghten in November, 1840, and withdrew to India on a handsome pension. A few disturbances about Kandahár, Khelát, and elsewhere, were easily suppressed. In 1841, however, the storm of popular discontent began to blow more meaningly. A great rising among the Khilji tribes near Kandahár was quelled only after two battles and much loss of life. Later in the year they rose again, attacked our convoys, and spread the

flame of revolt from the Khaibar to Kabul. Sale's brigade on its way to India fell back to Jalálábád. The Afghan hatred of the infidel, fed by the loose behaviour of English officers towards Afghan women, could no longer contain itself. At length, in the beginning of November, Macnaghten and Sir Alexander Burnes, who had been knighted for his many services, were roughly awakened from their dreams of a security in which clearer-sighted officers had long ceased to believe.

On the morning of the 2nd, Burnes was attacked and murdered in his own house by a mob of furious Afghans. in revenge for the offence he had given an Afghan noble. No effort, worth the naming, was made either by Macnaghten or the English officers who commanded in the cantonments to save their helpless countryman, or to avenge his death. The insurrection, which might easily have been quelled at once, spread fast and far. In the teeth of every military dictate the Bala Hissar was left to the sole charge of Shah Shujá, and five thousand English soldiers and Sepoys were shut up in a weak cantonment, while swarms of well-armed Afghans cut off their chief supplies, and beat back the troops sent out to dislodge them. The blundering of the leaders cowed their men, the supplies ran short, the sharp Afghan winter was setting in, and the enemy grew bolder day by day. Macnaghten did his best to avert by diplomacy the disastrous issues of his own blindness and of General Elphinstone's unfitness for such a need. But English honesty was no match for Afghan cunning. On the 11th December it was agreed that all our troops should be allowed to quit the country, the Afghans finding supplies and carriage for that purpose; that Dost Mohammad should be set free; and that the Kabul garrison should march out in three days, leaving four officers as hostages in the hands of Akbar Khan, the son of Dost Mohammad, and the acknowledged leader of his revolted countrymen. A more disgraceful

treaty had never perhaps been signed by Englishmen ; but Macnaghten, a brave man of soldierly instincts—he had once been a soldier himself—saw no other means of escape from utter ruin, and the word went forth for the evacuation of all our strong places in Afghánistán.

Days passed however, and still the promised supplies were not forthcoming. In despair Macnaghten strove by secret negotiations to sow discord among the Afghan leaders. Akbar Khan got scent of what was passing, and laid a trap into which the ill-fated envoy fell but too readily. At the interview to which he had been invited on the 23rd December, the officers who went with him were suddenly seized by some of Akbar's men, and Macnaghten himself, after a short struggle with the angry chief, was shot dead by Akbar's own hand. The deed appears to have been done upon the spur of the moment, and it is only fair to suppose that the seizure rather than the death of so important a leader was the real object of his murderer's attack.

Not an effort was made to avenge Macnaghten's death. Matters only grew from bad to worse. There was no lack of brave hearts and cool heads in the luckless garrison, but the folly or the helplessness of their leaders would have paralysed the bravest troops. In vain did Pottinger urge a stand for life or death in the Bala Hissár. The negotiations were resumed, and Afghan insolence rose with each fresh default of English honour. At last, on the 6th January, 1842, General Elphinstone marched out of his cantonments, leaving behind him all his treasure, stores, and ordnance, except six guns, while four officers remained as hostages in Akbar's hands. The snow lay thick on the ground, and the neighbouring hills swarmed with Afghan marksmen thirsting for English blood.

On the 13th January one Englishman, Dr. Brydon, half dead from wounds and exhaustion, was seen guiding his jaded pony towards the gates of Jalálabád. Of all the

five thousand soldiers, with twice as many camp-followers, who had set out a week before, he alone succeeded in reaching an English garrison, to tell the dismal tale of his companions' fate. With the exception of a hundred and twenty men, women, and children, whom Akbar Khan had taken prisoners on the way, and a few score Sepoys who afterwards straggled into Pesháwar, none else had survived the horrors of a retreat in mid-winter, without due supplies of any sort, through mountain-passes crowned with hostile Afghans, and blocked with a mob of helpless fugitives, who fell at every step under the falling snow from cold, hunger, or the deadly rain of Afghan bullets. Thousands perished in the Khurd Kabul Pass alone. In the Jagdalak Pass the slaughter was renewed, until every trace of a disciplined army had disappeared. Some sixty officers and men reached Gandamak; but these too, with the one exception of Dr. Brydon, perished on the road thence to Jalalabad.

The tidings of this great disaster, the heaviest which had yet befallen our arms in Asia, struck dismay for the moment into every English heart in India itself. They became the talk of every Indian bazaar, and inspired our ill-wishers throughout the country with vague hopes of yet worse things to come. No outward stir, however, gave form to the feeling of the hour, nor do any of the native princes seem to have renewed their old intrigues against our rule. Happily for England, her honour was still upheld by such men as Nott and Rawlinson at Kandahar, Sale and Broadfoot at Jalalabad, Clerk, Mackeson, and Henry Lawrence in the Panjab. While Lord Auckland and his Commander-in-Chief, Sir Jasper Nicholls, were feebly paltering with the new danger, Nott and Sale bravely held their ground, deaf to the orders they had received from Kabul and undismayed by the annihilation of Elphinstone's force. Instead of waiting behind his defences, Nott marched out and beat the enemy whenever

he got a chance, and even sent out one of his two Sepoy brigades under Colonel Wymer to show the backward General England the way into Kandahár.

Meanwhile Mr. George Clerk, as Governor-General's agent, was straining every nerve for the succour of General Sale. But the failure of Colonel Wild's attempts to carry his Sepoys through the Khaibar threw Sale back upon his own resources for some months longer; while the misconduct of our Sikh allies, the apathy of Sir Jasper Nicholls, and the mutinous spirit which had spread from the Sikhs to our own Sepoys at Pesháwar, reduced Clerk and his able helpmates to the verge of despair. A fresh brigade, however, was already on its way to Pesháwar under Colonel George Pollock, a Company's officer of acknowledged worth; and other troops were getting ready for the same service at Firózpúr.

By this time Lord Auckland had resigned his post into the hands of Lord Ellenborough, who reached Calcutta in February, 1842. One of his last acts had been to sever the old connection between the Government and the national faiths. The revenues derived from Hindu temples and religious rites were made over to the care of Hindu priests; the tax on pilgrims was abolished on grounds still open to question; and the Company's troops were forbidden thenceforth to parade in honour of native festivals. It is however by his Afghan policy that Lord Auckland is best remembered, and the results of that policy were equally hurtful to his own fame, to his country's honour, and to the finances of our Indian empire. The sad catastrophe in the Afghan snows could never have occurred but for the ill-judged invasion of Afghánistán; and more than twenty millions were added to the debt of India, before the disgrace of Elphinstone's retreat from Kabul had been wiped out by the victories of Nott and Pollock.

CHAPTER VI.

LORD ELLENBOROUGH AND LORD HARDINGE—1842-1848.

A FEW weeks before Lord Ellenborough's landing General Pollock had reached Pesháwar. The outlook at that moment was dark enough. Half his Sepoys were in hospital, and the rest were deeply tainted with the mutinous spirit of Avitabile's Sikhs. They had no mind to face the dreadful Khaibar, and some of their English officers shared the feeling. The Sikhs were insolent and unmanageable by their own commanders. Sher Singh, the successor of Karak at Lahór, had little power to enforce compliance with Clerk's demands for the promised succours and supplies. The Khaibaris, deaf to all Mackeson's offers, prepared to defend the pass with all their might. But Pollock's patience, well seconded by the energy of Clerk and Lawrence, overcame all hindrances. In two months the quiet, cool-headed artillery-officer, who had served in two sieges and three great wars, had so far recruited the health and discipline of his troops, that the timely arrival of English gunners and dragoons enabled him on the 5th April to attempt the passage of the far-famed Khaibar.

The attempt was brilliantly successful. The tremendous cliffs on either side of the pass were soon swept clear of the astonished foe, while Pollock with the centre column held his way unchecked through the long gloomy gorges between. By the 15th April the relieving army had exchanged greetings with the brave defenders of Jalálabád, fresh from their last victorious sally against the troops of

Akbar Khan, who had been closely besieging them for more than a month past. With the utter rout of the Afghans on the 7th April Sale's heroic garrison found rest from their prolonged toils, and perfect freedom from any immediate danger. Not till three months after their rescue did Pollock's pleadings for an advance on Kabul, in behalf of English honour and English captives, wring



FORT JAMRUD, PESHAWAR.

from Lord Ellenborough a half-hearted consent to the only course which policy and patriotism alike dictated. Pollock and Nott were at last permitted to withdraw at their own risk from Afghánistán "by way of Kabul and Ghazní."

Those brave men, however, were quite prepared to take all the risk on their own shoulders. On the 7th August Nott led out his Sepoys from Kandahár. On the 30th he took Ghazní, which had been tamely surrendered to the

Afghans some months before. The fortifications were blown up, and the famous sandal-wood gates of Sonmáth carried off from the spot where they had rested for eight centuries. One last victory on the 14th September cleared the road to Kabul, where three days afterwards Nott found Pollock already encamped.

The latter general had set out from Jalalabád on the 20th August, driving the Afghans before him at Jagdalak on the 23rd, and routing Akbar Khan's best troops on the 13th September at Tazin. Two days' marching brought him to Kabul, and on the morning of the 16th the British ensign once more floated proudly from the top of the Bala Hissár. One thing only was wanting to crown the triumph of our arms—the recovery of the captives whom Akbar had sent off towards Bamian. The honour of rescuing them fell to Sir Richmond Shakespear, and by the 22nd September they were all safely lodged in Pollock's camp.*

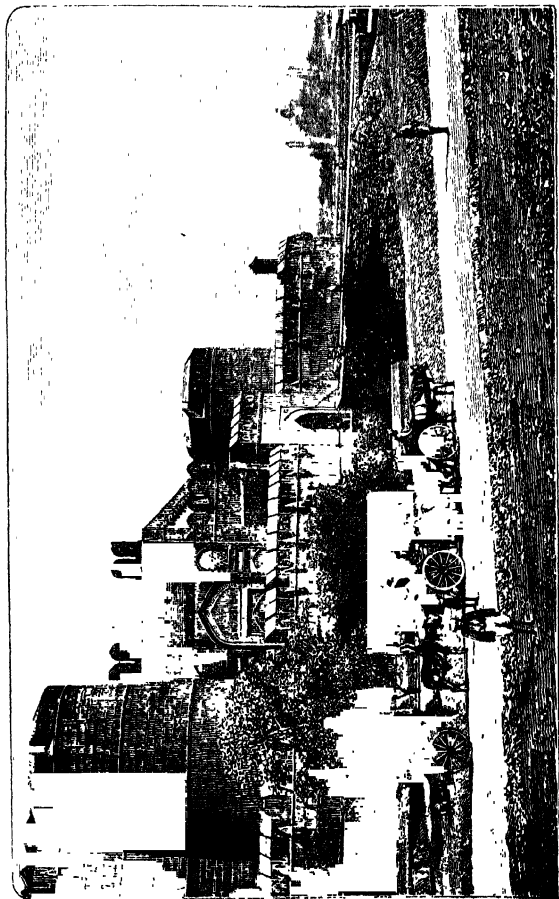
After the capture and destruction of Istalif and Charikar by General McCaskill, one last deed of vengeance for past humiliations remained to do. The great Bazaar of Kabul, where Macnaghten's mangled body had been exposed to every insult, was blown up and utterly destroyed, while a maddened soldiery, bursting through all control, revelled for three days in the plunder of the city itself. At last, on the 12th October, the whole army set out from Kabul on their march homeward through the Khaibar, carrying with them the family of Shah Shujá, who had been slain by his own subjects some months before. His eldest brother, the blind old Zamán Shah, who had dreamed of conquering India in the days of Lord Wellesley, and been driven from his throne in 1801 by a brother of Dost Mohammad, was now glad to close his days on English ground, a pensioner on the bounty of his ancient foes.

* General Elphinstone had died in captivity. Among the released prisoners were nine ladies and several children.

A splendid gathering of troops at Firózpúr, in honour of Pollock's safe return, gratified Lord Ellenborough's taste for pageantry, and proclaimed to all India the complete success which had rewarded the efforts of his commanders to wipe out the stain of Elphinstone's miscarriage. After a narrow escape from adorning Lord Ellenborough's triumph, Dost Mohammad was set free to govern the people who had once more flung aside the dynasty of Shah Shujá. A bombastic manifesto from Simla announced the removal of the Somnāth Gates to India, and "the insult of eight hundred years" was "avenged" by the possession of a trophy about which nobody seemed to care, and of whose genuineness there are serious doubts.* For their splendid services in the late campaign—services performed in spite of Lord Ellenborough's virtual opposition—Pollock and Nott received each a knighthood, with a handsome pension from the Court of Directors. It was not till nearly thirty years later that Sir George Pollock was made a baronet, in reward for achievements which not only stamped him as the greatest soldier of his day, but had probably saved our Indian empire from perils of the gravest kind.

Pax Asia restituta—"Peace restored to Asia"—was the high-flown legend of a medal struck by Lord Ellenborough's order in memory of the late events. A few weeks afterwards he had entered on a war with Sindh. The Amirs of that country were rewarded for their co-operation in the late campaigns by a demand for further concessions, which they were loath to yield. The demand was enforced by a movement of British troops under Sir Charles Napier towards Haidarābād on the Indus. On the 12th February, 1843, the treaty was signed; but the Baluchi followers of the Amirs were stirred to uncon-

* The gates which his lordship proposed to hand over to the "princes and chiefs of Sirhind, of Rajwára, of Málwa, and Gujarát," were afterwards stowed away in a lumber-room of the Fort at Agra.



THE FORT AGRA

trollable rage on learning that half the country had been ceded to the English Government. A furious attack on the Residency at Haidarabad ended in the retreat of Major Outram and his weak escort to an armed steamer on the Indus.

On the 17th February Sir Charles Napier won the hard-fought battle of Miani against seven times his own numbers. The capture of Haidarabad was ere long followed by another great victory at Dabha, which placed all Sindh at the conqueror's mercy. The despoiled Amirs were hunted into exile or borne into captivity; their conquered kingdom was annexed to the Bombay Presidency; and Sir C. Napier became the successful governor of a province won by the sword, on grounds which Outram did not stand alone in condemning.

It was not long before the Maratha kingdom of Gwalior was once more to feel the weight of our arms. On the death of Jankaji Sindia in February, his uncle, the Nana Sahib, became regent, with the Governor-General's express sanction. But Jankaji's widow intrigued with the troops against him, and ere long a favoured rival was set up in his place. This defiance of the Paramount Power was made more serious by the growing turbulence of the Gwalior army, and by the danger which seemed to threaten India from the restless ambition of the great military power beyond the Satlaj. Even before the murder of our ally Sher Singh in September, the army of the Khalsa had begun to rule the Sikh state, and the men whom Ranjit Singh had hardly kept in hand might be tempted at any time through fear or wantonness to pick a quarrel with their English neighbours.

An English army, under the veteran Sir Hugh Gough, began its warning march towards the Chambal in December, 1843, accompanied by Lord Ellenborough himself. All chance of a peaceful settlement vanished on the 28th, when the Marathas opened fire on an English outpost near

Māhārājpur. Next morning Sir Hugh Gough carried with the bayonet a strong position, armed with powerful guns and defended with a stubbornness which cost him dear. On the same day General Grey's division fought and routed another large body of Marāthas at Paniār, twelve miles from Gwalior.

These two victories ended the brief campaign. The Queen-mother and her young son the very next day placed themselves at the mercy of Lord Ellenborough, who had shared in the perils of the day before. The former was pensioned off; a council of regency was set up under the virtual control of the Resident, Colonel Sleeman; the Gwalior army was cut down to 9,000 men; and a contingent of 10,000 men, largely recruited from the old Rājput soldiery who had fought so well at Māhārājpur, was placed under the command of picked English officers.

While the Governor-General was thus engaged on the frontier, his deputy at Calcutta, Mr. Wilberforce Bird, carried out Lord Auckland's humane designs by an Act which abolished slavery throughout India. A few months later Lord Ellenborough learned the tidings of his own recall by a vote of the India House, in spite of the resistance offered to such an exercise of the Company's privilege by the Board of Control. In the minds of the Directors the alarm awakened by his warlike tendencies went hand in hand with deep resentment of his insolent behaviour towards themselves and their favourites in the Civil Service of India. In July, 1844, his brother-in-law, Sir Henry Hardinge, landed in Calcutta, and took up the vacant post. The very last months of Lord Ellenborough's brief rule had been clouded by a mutiny among the Bengal Sepoys. Several of the regiments which had been ordered to garrison Sindh stood upon their right to receive extra pay for foreign service, and refused for a time to march on. Their claims were at length conceded; but one

regiment, the 34th, had gone so far towards open mutiny, that nothing short of its disbandment could be allowed to atone for its offence. Even in Madras there were symptoms of a like spirit during the same year.

A rising in the Southern Marátha highlands about Kolápúr broke the lull of Indian politics in October, 1844. The task of suppressing it brought out in a new field the skill and energy of Colonel Outram, worthily seconded by the courage and endurance of his troops. A brilliant campaign against the Baluchi raiders on the Sindh frontier in 1845 bore fresh witness to Napier's soldiership, and secured the peace of his new province. Meanwhile the new Governor-General kept his eye upon the darkening storm-cloud in the Panjáb. With the death of Sher Singh the anarchy beyond the Satlaj grew worse and worse. A powerful army, restless, greedy for more pay or plunder, filled at one moment with wild mistrust of Anglo-Indian statesmanship, at another with ignorant scorn of English forbearance, had to be wooed and humoured by successive leaders, each of whom in his turn paid with a bloody death the price of his own folly or of his soldiers' fickleness. Even the brave, well-meaning Hira Singh, who ruled for a time in the name of the boy-king, Dhulip Singh, failed to escape the common doom. Twice in two years had a large Sikh army set out from Lahór, as if for the invasion of Hindustan. Sir Henry Hardinge quietly massed his troops in Sirhind, ready for the struggle whenever it might come. At last, in December, 1845, a great Sikh army for the third time began its march towards the Satlaj.

That the Sikhs were in earnest on this occasion no one in Hardinge's camp appears to have believed. It is even doubtful whether they themselves had quite made up their minds until the last moment to dare the issue of a struggle which Ranjit Singh would never have provoked.* Bo

* See Sir Henry Lawrence's "Essays, Military and Political."

that as it may, Sir Henry Hardinge, an old soldier who had earned his laurels in Spain under Wellington, was not to be caught asleep. Before the enemy had crossed the Satlaj our troops were hurrying by double marches towards the frontier,* commanded by the war-loving Sir Hugh Gough himself. On the 12th December the Sikh army, about 60,000 strong in regular troops alone, with 150 guns, began to cross the river, and by the 16th were encamped in threatening neighbourhood to Firozpur. Sir John Littler, with half of his 10,000 men, marched out to meet them; but the Sikhs, declining the challenge, turned aside to entrench themselves at Firozshahr, while 20,000 of them pushed on towards Múdkí in hopes of taking Gough's troops by surprise.

On the 18th Gough's wearied soldiers were resting near that place, when the gallant Broadfoot gave timely warning of the Sikh advance. The battle of that afternoon was waged on both sides with equal courage, but nothing could withstand the repeated onsets of the English horse, followed up by the steady advance in line of our brave infantry. By nightfall the Sikhs had fled, leaving seventeen guns in the hands of the victors, whose own loss had not been slight.

Reinforced by half of Littler's men and some fresh troops from Ambála, Gough on the 21st led his army, now 17,000 strong, against the Sikh array of more than 40,000 good troops entrenched at Firozshahr, behind breastworks guarded by a hundred guns. Sir Henry Hardinge, who had placed himself under Gough as second in command, led the centre of the English line. Late in the afternoon the battle began. On the English right and centre all went fairly well in spite of the havoc wrought by the steady fire from guns far heavier than our own. But on the left, where Littler commanded, his

* They marched 150 miles in six days.

infantry, after a bold dash forward, fell back in utter disorder. When night fell upon the scene of carnage, a few thousand English soldiers and Sepoys lay on the ground they had already won within the entrenchment, worn out, hungry, thirsty, pinched with cold, and harassed by the frequent fire from still uncaptured guns. One of these tormentors had to be silenced by a charge of infantry under Hardinge himself. There was even talk of a retreat on Firózpúr, but neither Gough nor Hardinge would hear of a move so fatal to English honour.

Once more with returning daylight our rallied regiments advanced to complete their work. Lal Singh's battalions wavered, broke, and fled; battery after battery fell into our hands; and the foe were already out of sight, when Tej Singh, coming up with a fresh army of 20,000 men and 60 guns, spread new anxiety in our shattered ranks. But the Sikh leader had no mind to dispute the issue of those two days' fighting; and he too withdrew from the field, after firing a few shots, which the English guns for want of ammunition could not return.

The victory thus hardly earned had been dearly bought. Out of 17,000 brought into the field, 2,415 had been killed or wounded, including ten of Sir Henry's aides-de-camp. For the next few weeks, while the English were awaiting fresh succours and the heavy guns from Dehli, the Sikhs lay idle on their own side of the Satlaj. At length, towards the end of January, 1846, Ranjór Singh recrossed the river and threatened Ludiana. On his march thither with a few thousand troops, Sir Harry Smith lost his baggage near the fort of Baduwal. But a few days later, the brilliant victory of Aliwal, in which the Sikhs lost 67 guns, more than atoned for the previous mishap; and the Sikhs, from behind their strong entrenchments at Sobraon on the Satlaj, awaited the next move in the English game. At last, on the 10th February, Gough's warriors, 15,000 strong, dashed forward, after a fierce but fruitless can-

nonade, to storm a position held by 35,000 of the best Sikh troops, and armed with 67 heavy guns. Under a withering fire they struggled onwards, recoiling only to renew the attack, until the entrenchments were fairly entered, and the Sikhs, still fighting manfully, were driven back before the British bayonet.

Ere long the retreat became an utter rout. The English guns played havoc among the masses of flying Sikhs, who crowded towards the bridge of boats, or threw themselves into the swollen Satlaj. A river red with blood and choked with corpses seemed more than a figure of speech on that day of slaughter, when some 10,000 followers of Govind perished in the field or in their flight. The loss of the victors in killed and wounded amounted to 2,383; but the whole of the enemy's guns and stores on the left bank of the river had fallen into their hands, and no army now stood between them and Lahór.

Ten days afterwards the victorious English were encamped in view of the Sikh capital. On the 23rd February, the ministers of Dhulip Singh signed the treaty which transferred Jalandhar and the Sikh states on the left bank of the Satlaj to English rule, and bound the Sikh government to pay a heavy fine for the costs of the war. It was afterwards agreed that the bulk of the fine should be paid off by the sale of Kashmir to Guláb Singh, the Rájput lord of Jammú, who had borne no part against us in the late struggle. The remnants of the old Khálsa army were disbanded, and Lahór was held for a time by English troops. Colonel Henry Lawrence, who had been summoned from Nipál on the death of the gallant Major Broadfoot, was appointed to act for the Viceroy at the Lahór court.

For these great successes, achieved in two months, the Governor-General and Sir Hugh Gough were raised to the peerage. It was not long before Lawrence had to place a curb on the intrigues of the Lahór government. At the

head of 10,000 of our late foes, he forced the unruly Shaikh Imám-ud-din to surrender Kashmír to its new master. Lál Singh, the Queen-mother's favourite, was removed from his office of vizier and banished to Banáras. Before the year's end the treaty of Bhairowál made Lawrence virtual master of the Panjáb, aided by a council of Sikh Sardárs or chiefs, and a picked staff of English officers, who looked for guidance to the Resident alone.

Successful in war, Lord Hardinge turned his attention to works of peace. The crusade against Satti, infanticide, and slavery, was carried with good results into the dominions of native princes. The great Ganges canal, ordained by Lord Auckland after the dreadful famine of 1837, and suspended by Lord Ellenborough, was pushed forward in the spring of 1846 with renewed vigour, under the able management of Major Cautley, seconded by the zeal of Mr. Thomason, Lieutenant-Governor of the North-Western Provinces. The question of railways in India found in Lord Hardinge an eager advocate, and the surveys for two great lines went steadily forward. Private enterprise opened out new fields of trade in the factories of Western India and the tea-gardens of Assam. To the cause of native education Lord Hardinge proved from the first an enlightened friend. New schools of various kinds were opened in many places; and the new-born native impulse towards wider fields of learning and mental growth was encouraged by the preference given in the public service to those natives who had passed through a government school or college.

A few local disorders, such as the Mohammadan plot at Patna, an anti-Christian riot at Tinivalli, a civil war in Bhopál, armed strife in Audh and the Dakhan, and a rising among the Khánds of Gumsar, marked the closing years of Lord Hardinge's government. The worst of these, however, happened in native states, where disorder was still the rule; and the Khánd rising was put down

with little bloodshed, if not without some trouble to the troops employed. At length, in March, 1848, Lord Hardinge turned his face homewards amid the general regret of all classes, after making over the seals of office to his great successor, James Ramsay, Earl of Dalhousie.

BOOK VI.

CONSOLIDATION OF ENGLISH RULE.

CHAPTER I.

LORD DALHOUSIE—1848-1856.

WHEN Peel's able President of the Board of Trade arrived in India at the beginning of 1848, the country was in almost perfect peace. But for a commercial crisis in Calcutta and a flickering little war in the Khand jungles, not a cloud appeared on the political horizon. In a few months, however, all was changed. While Colonel Lawrence was seeking health and rest in England, a new storm of war was gathering in the Panjáb. Mulráj, the Governor of Múltán, had agreed to resign his post; and Mr. Vans Agnew, with Lieutenant Anderson and a small body of Sikh troops, was directed by the Lahór Government to instal Khán Singh in his place. But the two Englishmen were treacherously attacked in Mulráj's presence, and afterwards foully murdered by his men.

Sir Frederick Currie, who was then acting for Lawrence at Lahór, instead of moving troops with all speed to the scene of outrage, as Lawrence would have done, awaited the issue of an appeal for help to the Commander-in-Chief. But Lord Gough was against moving a large force at the hottest season of the year; and Lord Dalhousie,

being new to office, concurred in his reasons for an ill-timed delay. It remained for one of Lawrence's best subalterns, the young Lieutenant Edwardes, who was engaged in settling the province of Bannú beyond the Indus, to set his countrymen an example of prompt action. With the help of his own levies, of some troops under Colonel Cortlandt, and of others presently furnished by the loyal Nawab of Bháwalpúr, Edwardes thrice defeated the rebel Mulráj, and finally shut him up in Múltán.

By this time matters in the Panjáb looked so serious, that General Whish was ordered to undertake the siege of Múltán with a regular force of eight thousand English and Sepoys. On the 4th September he pitched his camp before that city. Edwardes's little army had already been reinforced by a few thousand Sikhs under the Rajah Sher Singh. Hardly had the siege begun, when the latter made common cause with the rebels and marched away to kindle fresh revolts elsewhere. His desertion caused the suspension of the siege, pending the arrival of fresh succours from Bombay and Firózpur.

It was soon evident that a new fight for empire was on our hands. The Sikh leaders everywhere joined the revolt, and a holy war was proclaimed against the infidel "Faringi." Nothing remained but to take up the challenge. "The Sikh nation," said Lord Dalhousie at the farewell banquet given him at Barrackpore, "has called for war, and on my word, sirs, they shall have it with a vengeance." While he hastened up the country, a powerful army was mustering on the Satlaj under Lord Gough. Its march did not begin too soon. Sher Singh was already menacing Lahór with a large army of the veterans who had rallied to the Khálsa war-cry; and Dost Mohammad was bargaining for Pesháwar as the price of his co-operation with our Sikh foes.

On the 27th December, Whish was enabled to renew the siege of Múltán. On the 22nd January, 1849, his

troops stormed the city, but Mulraj still held the citadel with the obstinacy of despair. At last, on the 22nd January, when the fortress inside had become a mere wreck, and two great breaches invited an easy entrance to our troops, he and the remnant of his brave garrison surrendered at discretion.

His followers were allowed to go their own way, while Mulraj himself was carried off a close prisoner, to await the trial which ended in dooming him to a felon's death. His life, however, was ultimately spared, but death alone cut short his term of lifelong imprisonment.

Meanwhile Lord Gough had encountered Sher Singh at Rāmnagar on the Chenāb, and again in the jungles of Chilianwāla on the Jhīlam. The repulse of the Sikhs at the former place was marred by the headlong valour of Havelock's dragoons, many of whom, with their brave leader and General Cureton, perished in vain efforts to retrieve their blunder. On the 2nd December a part of Lord Gough's army under Sir Joseph Thackwell crossed the Chenāb higher up the stream, and engaged the Sikhs at Sadūlapūr, forcing them to retreat towards the Jhīlam. Thither Lord Gough slowly followed them, until, on the afternoon of the 13th January, he suddenly felt the fire of their outposts from amidst the jungle around Chilianwāla. It was late in the day, but the fiery old soldier would not wait for the morrow. His troops, about 11,000 strong, advanced to attack some 30,000 Sikh veterans with sixty guns strongly posted on the plain behind a thick belt of intervening jungle.

Before night-fall the Sikhs had been driven back to the Jhīlam with a heavy loss in men and guns. But the victors also had suffered heavily. One brigade of Campbell's division had been hurled back in utter disorder,*

* It is a well-attested fact that General Campbell made his division advance through the jungle with unloaded muskets. One brigade under Colonel Hoggan, however, advanced firing, and swept the enemy before them. The other obeyed the order, and suffered accordingly.

and the cavalry on the right wing had fled in sudden and mysterious panic before a small body of Sikh horse. The rest of the troops, however, fought with their wonted daring, and another hour of daylight would probably have renewed the slaughter of Sobraon. But night came on; our troops fell back a little for want of water; and the Sikhs, returning later to the field, cut up many of the wounded and carried off most of the captured guns. Twelve only were secured by the victors, whose own loss in killed and wounded amounted to 89 officers and 2,357 men, besides four guns and three sets of colours.

For several weeks the two armies lay almost within sight of each other, while Lord Gough waited for reinforcements from the camp of General Whish. While these were yet on their way, the Sikh army under Sher Singh and his father Chattar Singh marched round the English General's right flank towards Lahór. But the blow thus aimed fell short of its mark. British troops held the fords of the Chenáb, and the Sikhs turned off to take up a strong position on the plain in front of Gujarát. There, with 50,000 men and sixty guns, the Sikh leaders awaited the final onset of Gough's army, now swollen to 20,000 men and a hundred guns.

On the 21st February the fight began with such a fire from the English heavy guns as had never before been witnessed on an Indian battle-field. For more than two hours the English batteries, light and heavy, played upon the foe with ever-increasing havoc. At last the Sikh gunners, who had manfully returned shot for shot, slackened their fire and began to fall back. The British infantry were then let loose upon the wavering Sikhs. One of Gilbert's brigades under Penny swept forward against the strong village of Kálra, still held by the pick of the Sikh infantry. Under a scathing fire the 2nd Europeans stormed the place, while a smaller village was attacked and carried by the 10th foot. A spirited charge of

Malcolm's Sindh horse ere long drove the best of the Sikh cavalry from the field. Sir Joseph Thackwell with the whole of his fine cavalry and light horse guns took up the pursuit of the beaten foe, driving them before him with heavy slaughter, until night found him fifteen miles from the field, which our troops had won with a loss of less than 800 men. Fifty-three guns, many standards, and the whole of the enemy's camp betokened the completeness of a victory which laid the Sikh power for the last time in the dust.

It only remained to gather up the after-fruits of that day's work. Early next morning Sir Walter Gilbert, with 12,000 men and forty guns, set off in pursuit of Sher Singh's broken army. The chase was kept up with so much vigour, that by the middle of March the last of the Sikh leaders had surrendered, and the last of their wearied soldiers had laid down their arms to the pursuing column at Rāwal Pindi. Forty-one more guns were added to the spoils of Mūltān and Gujarāt, and Sher Singh was carried off a prisoner to Lahōr. His Afghan allies, who had shared the disasters of Gujarāt, still kept ahead of their unwearied pursuers; but only a few hours before Gilbert reached Peshāwar, they fled back, as it was said, "like dogs" into the mountain passes whence they had ridden out "like lions" a few months before.

On the 29th March the last blow was struck by order of Lord Dalhousie at the independence of the Sikh kingdom. In the presence of the boy-sovereign, Dhulip Singh, was read the proclamation which made him a pensioner of the East India Company, and annexed his country to British India. The conquered province passed under the rule of a Board of Three, at the head of which Sir Henry Lawrence, who had come out again from England with a knighthood, deservedly took his place. Conspicuous among his colleagues was his brother John Lawrence, who, with the aid of a few irregular troops and Sikh levies, had

kept Jalandhar in comparative quiet during the war. For the next few years the two brothers, with the help of Mr. Mansel, and afterwards of Mr. Montgomery, ruled the Panjab with light but firm hands, restoring order, suppressing crime, revising the revenue system, enforcing a simple code of laws, freeing the trade of the country from its former shackles, making roads, canals, and other useful works, and winning alike the respect and the affections of a conquered but brave and high-spirited people. Sir Henry's mild influence fell like balm on the hearts of the humbled Sikh Sardars, and did much to counteract the harsher tendencies of a rule which recognised no distinction between class and class in respect of their common rights, duties, and burdens. To the Marquis of Dalhousie—for such he had now become—belongs much of the credit due to all concerned in the pacification of the Panjab. His eyes were everywhere during his frequent travels through the country: no details of government were too small to escape his notice; and the measures taken for guarding the Panjab frontier were the direct offspring of his own brain.

Meanwhile the new Commander-in-Chief, Sir Charles Napier, was dealing in his own stern fashion with a mutiny among the Bengal regiments told off to garrison the new province. Some of them had refused to take their ordinary pay, and the 66th Sepoys went so far towards open mutiny, that Napier took upon himself to disband the regiment and put a Gurkha battalion in its place. This and other measures, decreed by him on his own authority, brought him into collision with the Governor-General, who had no mind to let another usurp his lawful power. The quarrel ended in Napier's resignation; but the mutinous spirit which had been rife in the Bengal army ever since the Afghan wars kept smouldering beneath the surface, ready to burst forth again on the smallest provocation. The government saw no pressing

danger, and Dehli, the great centre of Mussulman intrigue and the chief arsenal for Upper India, was still left under the sole protection of Sepoy bayonets.

In 1852 another war was forced on Lord Dalhousie's hands by the continued insolence of the Burmese. The rude treatment of English Residents at Ava had been followed by a series of outrages on English merchants and shipping at Rangoon. Dalhousie's demands for redress were made in vain, and those who bore them subjected to open insult. At length Commodore Lambert was driven to blockade Rangoon and silence the batteries which had opened fire on his frigate. Dalhousie at once prepared for war. On the 2nd April, 1852, a powerful British fleet, including many war-steamers, and carrying a strong force under General Godwin, anchored off Rangoon. Martaban, on the Salwin river, had already been attacked and taken by Bengal Sepoys. Before the middle of April the English, in spite of a brave resistance, were masters of Rangoon itself. Bassein was taken in May, and Pegu in June. The road to Ava lay open; but Godwin declined to expose his small force to the risks and discomforts of the rainy season.

His advance to Prome in October, and the relief of Hill's small garrison in Pegu, were followed early in the next year by the capture of Donabyú and the rout of the Burman leader, Miá-Tún, by Sir John Cheape. Thenceforth the war was virtually over. With the whole province of Pegu occupied by our troops, it was deemed needless to push on after an enemy who declined to fight. To negotiate with the King of Burmah proved to be a waste of time and words. The Peguers on their part seemed perfectly willing to exchange the Burman for the British yoke. Dalhousie, therefore, boldly resolved to fill up the British seaboard between Arakan and Tenasserim by the annexation of Pegu, with or without the consent of the Burman sovereign. His intention indeed had already been made

public in December, 1852 ; but it was not until the following June, when the obstinate King of Burmah had virtually yielded to all our demands, that peace was finally proclaimed and Pegu freed from all fear of Burman aggression.

While the conquest of the Panjáb brought all India within the Sulaiman Hills and the Himálayas under our virtual rule, the annexation of Pegu made the Company masters of all the coast country on the eastern side of the Bay of Bengal, from Chittagong to the borders of Siam. Under the wise rule of Colonel Phayre, Pegu itself became a model province, easily held by a few troops, its people steadily advancing in wealth and numbers, and its chief port on the Irawadi becoming ere long the populous seat of a thriving trade.

Meanwhile the work of annexation had been going on within the bounds of our Indian empire. In 1848 the Rajah of Satara died without an heir. Was the boy whom, according to Hindu custom, he had adopted two hours before his own death to be recognised as his successor to kingly title and power, as well as to all his personal estate ? In spite of the arguments of Sir George Clerk, then Governor of Bombay, Lord Dalhousie held that the government was not bound to accept the consequences of an act whose validity it had never acknowledged. The State of Satara, as created by an English viceroy, had lapsed to the Company through default of heirs ; and the government was " bound to take that which was legally and justly its due, and to extend to that territory the benefit of our sovereignty, present and prospective." Armed with the approval of the India House, Dalhousie struck Satara out of the list of native states, bestowing liberal pensions on the Rajah's widows and his adopted son.

Five years later died the Bhosla Rajah of Berár or Nágpur and the Rajah of Jhansi in Bundalkhand. As the former had neither left nor named a successor, and the

people under the fostering care of Mr. Jenkins had learned to value aright the benefits of our rule, Nāgpūr also was speedily annexed. The ruler of Jhānsi, on the other hand, had left an adopted heir, in whose name his widow claimed to govern. But the absorption of Satara furnished the Governor-General with ample grounds for rejecting her claims, and placing Jhānsi also directly under British rule. The Rāni, an ambitious woman, brooded in secret over the imagined wrong, until the moment for taking a terrible revenge seemed to have come.

Karauli, in Rajputana, was another state whose sovereign had left no direct heir. But the question of its disposal was referred to the Court of Directors, who decided in favour of acknowledging the adopted son of a protected ally. Another question which came before Lord Dalhousie concerned the claim of Dhūndu Pant, the infamous Nana Sahib of after years, to the handsome pension which Lord Hastings had bestowed on his adoptive father, the erewhile Peshwa Bāji Rao. It was decreed on just, if not politic grounds, that the ex-Peshwa's princely income had lapsed to the Company on his death in 1853. In vain did the angry Nana plead his cause at the India House. It was decided that he had no claim to a pension granted only to Bāji Rao and his family; but by way of balm for his wounded feelings, he was allowed to hold the lordship of Bithur, on the Ganges, not far from Cawnpore.

About this time also the Nizam's province of Berar was virtually transferred to British rule in payment of the heavy debts he had incurred to the Indian Government. To this concession the Nizam unwillingly agreed as the only means of retaining the services of his useful but ill-paid contingent. The weak-minded successor of Chin Kilich was thus rescued from the worst results of a misrule prolonged for many years past; while the ceded province, over which he still retained a portion of his sove-

reign rights, throve apace under a rule which brooks no internal disorders, and has always laboured for the well-being of the people at large.

Three years later, in 1856, the dethroned Rajah of Misor renewed his prayer for restoration to the government of which he had been justly deprived in 1831. Through all that time his forfeit kingdom had been ably governed by General Mark Cubbon, in spite of some resistance from the Rajah's friends. Lord Dalhousie saw no good reason to grant a prayer which Lord Hardinge had found good reason to reject; and it was not till ten years later that an English minister was rash enough to reverse the wiser policy of successive governors-general, and hand over a flourishing province to the doubtful blessings of native rule.

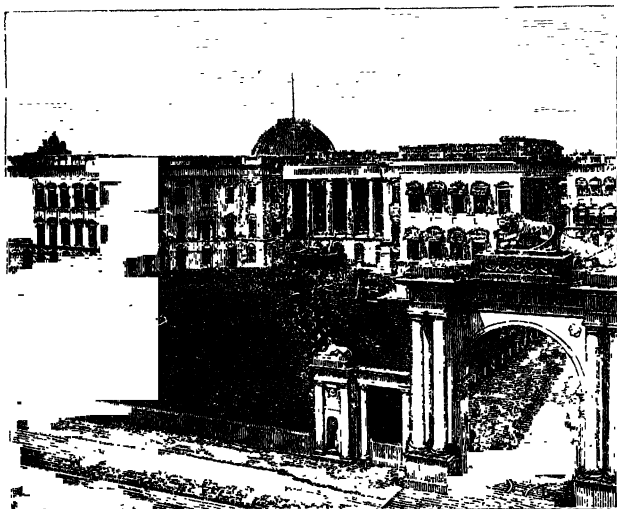
Meantime the misrule in Audh had been growing yearly worse and worse, ever since Lord William Bentinck had solemnly warned the king of the Company's firm resolve to interfere, if he made no effort to mend his ways and govern his people in closer harmony with the counsels of the English Resident. In 1847 the warning was repeated by Lord Hardinge. But the long-suffering of the Indian Government proved of no avail. The king amassed money at the expense of his subjects, only to waste it on women, fiddlers, and buffoons. Justice was openly bought and sold. The great land-holders, like many a baron of the Middle Ages in Europe, openly defied the royal power from their well-armed forts, and throve on the plunder of their weaker countrymen. The king's troops made up for their scanty and irregular pay by living freely on the people they were supposed to protect. The Resident, Colonel Sleeman himself, for all his sympathy with native princes, avowed that the misgovernment had reached an unbearable pitch, and advised his masters to place the country under British rule. His successor, the high-souled General Outram,

pronounced in favour of a like course. All the best-informed statesmen in India argued to the same effect.

It only remained to settle the conditions on which English rule should be established in Audh. On this point Lord Dalhousie was nearly at one with Colonel Sleeman. Both agreed in wishing to leave the king his nominal sovereignty, but the Governor-General was for employing the surplus revenues that might accrue to him under the new form of government, not for the king's benefit, but for that of India at large. Some members of his Council argued strongly for the entire absorption of Audh into British India, and their views found most favour with the Government at home. In compliance with positive orders from the India House, Lord Dalhousie prepared to annex the country, and dethrone the dynasty which Lord Hastings had set up. On the 7th February, 1856, Sir James Outram announced to the king that he had ceased to reign. The tidings were received with a burst of tears, and a flat refusal to sign the treaty which transformed him into a discredited pensioner of the Indian Government. It was useless, however, to struggle against his fate. He withdrew to Calcutta on a handsome pension, and the whole kingdom submitted without a blow to its future masters.

A few months earlier, in July, 1855, the peace of Bengal had been broken by a sudden rising of aboriginal Santals in the hill ranges of Rájmahal. Maddened by the extortions of Bengali money-lenders, who worked the law-courts for their own ends, these simple savages marched forth in a vast body to lay their grievances before the Calcutta Council. Provisions failing them, they began to plunder the villages on their way, to attack police-posts, to murder native officials and stray Englishmen, and even to threaten the safety of important stations. The few troops that first encountered them were driven back or slain by their poisoned arrows. It was not till the cold

season of 1855 that their power for mischief was checked by the advance of fresh troops, who hemmed them in on all sides, and hunted them down with little mercy. By the year's end the rising had been quelled with the death of its ringleaders; and the wrongs for which they had sought so wild a redress were shortly remedied by the appointment of a Commissioner, who ruled the Santál



GOVERNMENT HOUSE, CALCUTTA.

districts on a simpler system than that which had long prevailed throughout Bengal.

We have yet to mention those peaceful services which have shed so bright a lustre on Lord Dalhousie's Indian career. No Governor-General has ever been so fortunate in his opportunities, or so successful in turning them to account. His genius for governing embraced a rare mastery of details, a clear conception of the work that

lay before him, a thorough knowledge of his tools, and a strength of will which triumphed over the drawbacks of a sickly frame yet further enfeebled by prolonged toil in a very trying climate. In every department of the State his strong hand wrought some change for the better. Both in the army and the civil service individual overlooking was substituted for that of Boards; even the Panjáb Board under Sir Henry Lawrence giving place in 1853 to the rule of a Chief Commissioner, Sir Henry's brother John. In 1852 was established a new Department of Public Works, which furnished India with a staff of civil engineers fit to carry on the great projects which a time of peace and a full treasury encouraged Dalhousie to set on foot or bring to an early completion. The greatest of these was the Ganges Canal, perhaps the noblest work of its kind in the world, with its five hundred miles of navigable main stream and many hundreds of irrigating branches. Thanks to Lord Dalhousie's unwearied efforts, the waters of the Upper Ganges were let into this mighty work on the 8th April, 1854, amid crowds of wondering natives; and its chief engineer, Colonel Cautley, received the Riband of the Bath for his success in carrying out the scheme which he himself had planned fifteen years before. Of only less importance was the network of canals which Colonel Napier had meanwhile begun to weave for the parched but not unfruitful plains of the Panjáb.

Dalhousie's name, indeed, is inseparably linked with the whole history of India's progress during the last twenty-five years. To him India owes the removal or the lowering of almost every remaining barrier to trade, industry, social well-being, and mental growth. From the planting of trees in dry places to the building of railways, from reforms in jail discipline to the diffusion of aids to knowledge among the people, nothing seemed too small or too great for his far-reaching powers. He

was the first to endow India with a cheap uniform rate of postage, whereby a letter from Pesháwar to Cape Comorin, or from Arakan to Karachi, could be carried for half an anna, or three farthings. Under his zealous encouragement Dr. O'Shaughnessy was enabled in the course of a few years to cover India with 4,000 miles of telegraph wires. Dalhousie succeeded in cheapening the rates of postage from England to India. Under his orders the first yearly reports were sent in from the heads of every province on all things connected with its administration. To him also India owes the general planning and first instalments of those 4,000 miles of railway which now join Bombay to Madras, Calcutta, Allahábad, and Lahór. To the scheme of cheap popular instruction which Mr. Thomason first set on foot in the North-Western Provinces he lent his eager countenance; and, fortified by Sir Charles Wood's Education Despatch of 1854, he began at once to organise that improved system of State-aided schools and colleges under which more than three million scholars are now taught, at a yearly cost of £1,300,000 to the State.

In 1853 the question of renewing the East India Company's Charter was again the subject of parliamentary debate, which resulted as before in fresh curtailments of the Company's power. The days of its rule were, in fact, already numbered. Of the eighteen members of the Court of Directors, six were henceforth to be chosen by the Crown. India might still be governed in the name of the Company, but all power became practically vested in the Board of Control. A heavy blow was dealt at the Company's patronage by an Act which opened the Civil Service of India to public competition. A heavy burden, on the other hand, was taken off the shoulders of the Governor-General by the arrangement which gave a Lieutenant-Governor to the populous province of Bengal Proper. New members with enlarged powers were also added to the Supreme Council in Calcutta.

With the annexation of Andh Dalhousie's term of office, twice prolonged by the Court of Directors, came to a glorious, but for him much-needed end. Worn out with eight years of hard work, the great marquis gave the last touches to that farewell minute—the master work of a pen as clear, direct, and polished as Cæsar's or Wellington's—which contains at once the history and the best defence of his memorable career. In another set of minutes he enlarged on the policy of reducing the overgrown Sepoy army and strengthening the European force in India. At length, on the 6th March, 1856, he embarked for England, followed by impressive tokens of the esteem and admiration which all classes had learned to feel for the greatest of Indian rulers since Warren Hastings. But his part in life, as he himself declared, was already played out; and the death which awaited him in 1860 was even then written on the face of one who had landed in India at the early age of thirty-six.

CHAPTER II.

LORD CANNING—1856-1862.

LORD CANNING, son of the great English Minister whom Pitt had first brought into notice, found India for the moment in perfect peace. To follow in the footsteps of his great predecessor, and carry forward his unfinished schemes for the good of the people, was all the task which seemed then cut out for the crewhile Postmaster-General of Great Britain. The Penal Code, in which Macaulay had sought to furnish a simple uniform system of law for all creeds and classes in India, was entrusted to the revising hands of another great jurist, Mr. Barnes Peacock. Recruits for the Bengal army were henceforth required to take the same oath of general service as their brethren in Bombay and Madras ; a measure intended, like the introduction of Sikh recruits into Bengal regiments under Lord Dalhousie, to counteract the domineering spirit of the high-caste Sepoys in Bengal. Dalhousie's scheme for removing the Moghal princes from Dehli on the death of the reigning king, Bahádur Shah, was furthered by the recognition of his lawful heir, on terms which expelled the dynasty of 'Timúr from the palace where they had hitherto retained a certain semblance of independent power.

By this time, however, Lord Canning's attention was turned towards Persia, whose sovereign, in breach of former treaties, had sent an army to capture Herát from the Afgháns. In obedience to orders from home, the Governor-General prepared for war. Early in December, 1856, a British force under the brave General Outram, aided by

the fire of Leeke's ships, gained swift possession of Bushir, on the Persian Gulf. Ere long a Persian army began its march towards the conquered place ; but Outram hastened forward to stay its approach, and its retreat from Barisjun on the 5th February was followed by its utter rout on the 8th at Khúshab. The strong fort of Mohamrah, on a branch of the Euphrates, was easily taken on the 26th March ; and the flight of the Persians a few days later from Ahwaz may be said to have finished the campaign. Its close was doubtless hastened by the treaty of alliance which Sir John Lawrence, Sir Henry's fit successor in the government of the Punjab, had formed with our old foe, Dost Mohammad, in January, 1857. By the Treaty of Paris, which had already been signed on the 4th March, the Shah of Persia pledged himself to withdraw his troops from Herat and renounce all claim to sovereignty over any part of Afghanistan.

It was a happy thing for India that the war ended when it did, in good time to enable Lord Canning to meet the heaviest blow which has ever yet been struck at English supremacy in Hindustán. By whom that blow was planned is still matter for conjecture ; but there is ample evidence that a spirit of unrest was abroad throughout the country in the beginning of 1857, that rumours of evil bode to India's rulers were everywhere rife, and that many causes combined to bring about the disaster to which those rumours seemed to point. It is always difficult for foreign rulers to guess at what is passing through the minds of their subjects ; and the gulf which parts our countrymen in India from the millions among whom they come and go is one which few Englishmen can quite bridge over. Some of them, indeed, were warned of mischief brewing, but few even of these paid any heed to the hints or counsels of their native friends, and those who smelt danger beneath the surface found small encouragement to speak out.

In the Imperial Palace at Dehli, in the Nána's castle at Bithúr, in the pleasant quarters occupied near Calcutta by the deposed King of Audh, in every place where people cherished a grudge against their English rulers for some real or fancied wrong, plots were quietly hatching against the Power which, according to native soothsayers, had already entered on the last year of its reign. Emissaries from native courts were roaming the country, inflaming the minds of the discontented, and spreading everywhere dark rumours, none the less potent for their general absurdity, of a great English plot for abolishing caste and converting the whole of India, by fraud or force, to its masters' creed. The air grew thick with falsehoods, none of which was too wild for the popular belief. The fears alike of the Hindu and the Mohammedan were fed with omens and idle tales. An outbreak of cholera, a bad harvest, a jail riot, a heavy flood, anything served as a handle for the most outrageous slanders against a Government guilty only of a well-meant desire to keep the peace, to advance the general welfare, and to imbue its subjects with a taste for Western civilisation.

The time seemed propitious to our foes in India. Our English garrisons had been weakened to furnish troops for the campaign against Russia in the Crimea; nor was their place filled up by other troops from England, in spite of the warnings uttered by Dalhousie before and after the annexation of Audh. Fresh regiments were shipped off from India for the Persian war. It was given out by the Nána's emissaries that our army in the Crimea had perished almost to a man, and that England needed every soldier she could muster for her own defence, to say nothing of fresh embarrassments caused by another Chinese war. It was certain that only one English regiment lay between Calcutta and Agra, and that all India was held at that moment by about thirty

thousand English troops, more than half of whom were quartered in or near the Panjáb.

The Sepoys also in Bengal were growing restless. Their discipline had been weakened by doubtful measures of military reform, by the moral effects of Afghan and Sikh campaigns, by the growth of new social habits among their English officers; their caste pride was sorely hurt by the admission of Sikhs and other low-caste men into their ranks, and their prescriptive rights were scattered to the winds by the new rule which compelled all recruits to enlist for general service, whether by land or sea. While the Nana's agents tampered with the Hindu Sepoys, the minds of the Mussulman soldiery were inflamed against their masters by the preaching of Wahábi fanatics and the intrigues of the Dehli princes, wroth at their coming expulsion from the seat of their forefathers.

About the beginning of 1857 a new cause of alarm began to spread among the Sepoys. A rumour, born of chance gossip in the Dam-dam Bazaar, flew about the country, declaring that the cartridges of the new Enfield rifles had been carefully greased with the fat of pigs and cows, in order to bring about the defilement alike of Mohammadans and Hindus. Before the end of January the Sepoys in Barrackpore were holding nightly meetings on the subject; several bungalows* were set on fire, and a marked change was seen in the men's bearing towards their officers. The same thing occurred at Rániganj, the furthest station on the new railway. On the 26th February, the 19th Sepoys at Barhampúr refused to receive the suspected cartridges, and were hardly restrained from firing on their own officers. The mutiny was quelled, but no mercy was shown to the mutineers, who were marched down to Barrackpore and there disbanded by General Hearsey, in the presence of comrades no less

* One-storied houses with steep roofs of thatch or tiles.

guilty in spirit than themselves. Two days earlier, on the 29th March, a Sepoy of the 34th N.I. at Barrackpore seized his musket and called on some of his comrades to rally round him in defence of their religion. He attacked and wounded two officers before help came, which led him to turn his weapon against himself. The wound, however, was not fatal; he lived to undergo his trial and be hanged a few weeks afterwards.

All through March and April the tokens of disaffection grew more and more rife. Night after night fresh fires, whose origin remained a mystery, broke out in the great northern station of Ambála; and the men who handled the new cartridges were marked out for the jeers and persecutions of their numerous comrades.* In Meerut the Sepoys readily came to believe that the wells had been defiled, that animal fat had been boiled up with the *ghee*, or liquid butter, sold in the bazaars, and that ground bones had been mixed up with the flour they ate. Meanwhile all over India a mysterious signal, in the shape of a *chapáthi*, or flat cake of flour, was passed on from village to village, like the fiery cross in Scotch history, as if to prepare men's minds for some great scheme on foot.

In April the disaffection spread to Audh, where Sir Henry Lawrence had taken up the post of Chief Commissioner in the room of Mr. Coverley Jackson. It was too late even for the successful ruler of the Panjáb to repair the mischief done by his predecessor, or to avert the great storm of mutiny and rebellion whose warning murmurs were already falling on men's ears. On the 2nd May a native regiment quartered near Lucknow broke

* It seems that beef fat had really been used in greasing the cartridges; but the use of these was countermanded by the end of January; the Sepoys were then allowed to grease their own cartridges, and to tear off the ends instead of biting them off with their teeth. See *Incidents of the Sepoy War*, by Sir Hope Grant and Captain Knollys. Blackwood & Sons: 1873.

out into open mutiny. Sir Henry's prompt advance scattered the mutineers, some forty-five of whom were seized, tried, and sentenced to imprisonment for various terms. For some weeks longer all seemed quiet in Lucknow; but the frequent firing of bungalows and Sepoys' huts warned Sir Henry against setting too much faith in passing appearances and the soothing magic even of his own high name.

At last, on the 10th May, the storm burst over Meerut, where 1,800 English soldiers lay in the midst of 2,900 native troops. On the 24th April, 85 troopers of the 3rd Bengal Cavalry had openly rejected the very sort of cartridges which they had been using for some time past. On the 9th of the following month the mutineers were marched off in irons from the parade-ground, to undergo their several sentences of imprisonment with hard labour; a heavy punishment for Mohammadians of good family, for soldiers of any spirit a terrible disgrace. Next evening, while our countrymen were at church, the native regiments rose in arms with one consent, shot down some of their officers, set fire to their lines, emptied the jails, and spread sudden panic throughout the European quarters. General Hewitt and most of those around him were utterly paralysed by an outbreak which prompt action on their part would soon have quelled. The rabble of the bazaars joined with the released convicts in the work of murder, pillage, and general havoc; and the moon rose on blazing bungalows, on men and women dead, dying, or fleeing for their lives from ruffians thirsting for yet more blood. When the European troops were at length brought upon the scene of horror, night was already closing round them, and the mutinous regiments held their way unchecked and unpursued to Delhi.

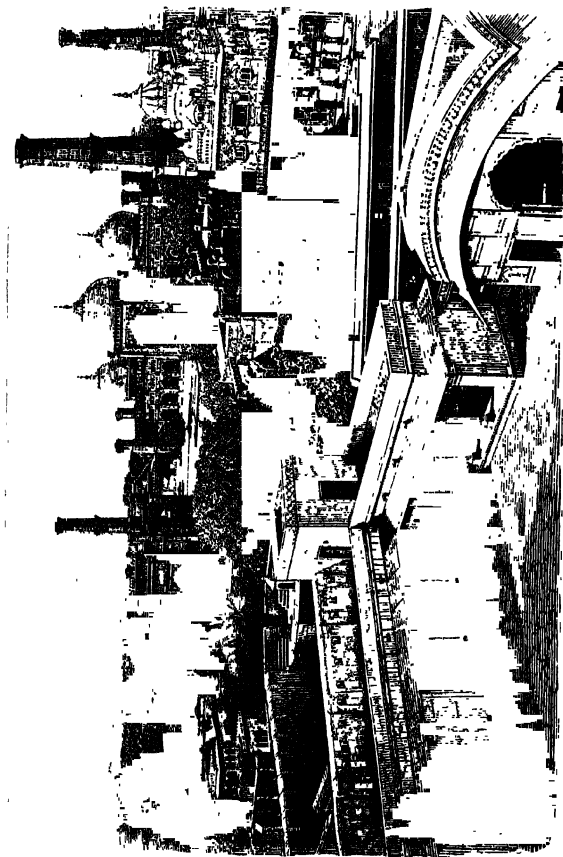
The early morning of the fatal 11th May saw some troopers of the 3rd Cavalry riding into that city, eager to continue the work they had begun at Meerut. In a few

hours all Dehli was up against the bewildered English, who had heard nothing of the mischief wrought the day before, and little dreamed that not a hand from Meerut would now be stretched forth to help them. English men, women, and children were foully butchered within the Palace itself, under the eyes, if not with the express permission, of the old king, who owed to English forbearance all the dignities and comforts he still enjoyed. Many an officer was shot down by his own men. Before sunset all Dehli was in the hands of the mutineers; the gallant Willoughby and his eight heroic followers having blown up the arsenal which they could no longer defend against hopeless odds.* Of those who had escaped death in the city, some were struggling on their perilous way to Karnal, while others had joined the little band of officers who, under Brigadier Graves, still clung to the Flagstaff Tower on the heights overlooking the northern side of Dehli, in vain hope of the help that never came from Hewitt's garrison.

At last, when the ruffians from the city were renewing the work of plunder in the cantonments outside, the English watchers on the Ridge had to seek their only safety in flight. The more fortunate soon made their way to Meerut or Karnal; but some of their number, including women, ran the gauntlet of every possible hardship and danger, in a hostile country under the fierce May sun, before they found rest and shelter among their friends.

Happily for our countrymen elsewhere, the dreadful deeds doing at Meerut and Dehli had been telegraphed to Ambála and Agra before the rebels had time to cut the wires. From thence the tidings were at once flashed on to the Panjáb and down the country to Calcutta. Sir John Lawrence and his trusty subalterns proved equal to every need. Two days after the Dehli massacre Colonel

* Willoughby died soon afterwards of his wounds. Scully, who fired the train, was never seen again.



LAHORE.—VIEW OF FORT FROM PALACE.

Corbett had quietly disarmed the Sepoys at Lahór. Amritsar, the Sikh Banáras, was speedily made safe. Timely succours were thrown into the fort of Philór on the Satlaj. At Pesháwar, Brigadier Cotton and Colonel Edwardes planned and carried out the disarming of four native regiments out of the five there posted. Of the insurgent Sepoys at Mardán very few escaped the doom that dogged them, whether from English or Afghan hands. Betrayed by the hillmen of the border, or hunted down by Edwardes's police, numbers of them were afterwards shot or blown away from guns, while many more paid the forfeit of their treason with life-long labour on the roads.

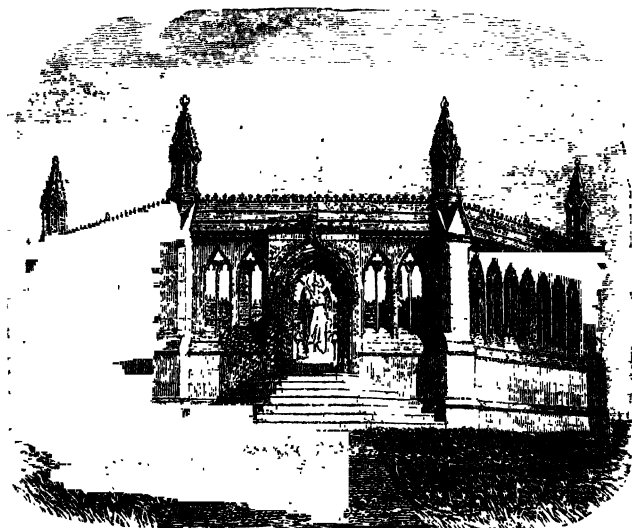
It was fortunate also for our cause that Lawrence and his brave helpmates could reckon upon the loyalty of the Sikhs on either side the Satlaj, in his efforts to meet a danger, at thought of which even the boldest sometimes held their breath. Not only Sikhs but the wild Moham-madans of the border flocked into the new regiments raised by the Lahór Government. The ruler of Kashmir proved himself a friend in need. From the Cis-Satlaj chiefs of Patiala, Jhind, Nabha, and Kapurthalla, came ready promises of aid in men, arms, and money; promises which in every case were loyally fulfilled. Many chiefs and gentlemen of less mark in the Panjab offered their best services to the same effect. Nor was our old foe, Dost Mohammad, backward in assurances of goodwill. His hands thus strengthened, the Chief Commissioner of the Panjab was left free by the spread of revolt below Dehli to employ his best energies in defence of Upper India. While a movable column of picked troops marched out from Jhilmán to keep the peace in his own province, regiment after regiment was sent across the Satlaj to aid in punishing the mutineers, and to strengthen the little force which General Anson had led to the siege of Dehli.

All through May and June the revolt kept spreading, from Firózpur to Allahábád and Banáras, from Ajmír to

Rohilkhand, involving hundreds of Englishmen in the same bloody doom. If some regiments spared their officers, others shot them down or saw them massacred by less scrupulous men. The Ráni of Jhānsi took a bloody revenge for the loss of her late husband's realm, by ordering the massacre of nearly a hundred men, women, and children, whose lives she had just sworn to spare. Before the end of June not a station in Audh, except the capital, was left in English hands ; and the garrison of Lucknow itself was cut off from all communication with the outer world. At Cawnpore Sir Hugh Wheeler and his luckless followers were vainly fighting for their lives within weak intrenchments, under roofless and crumbling walls, against thousands of merciless rebels commanded by the infamous Nana Sāhib. In many districts of the North-Western Provinces the mutiny had widened into a general revolt ; station after station was abandoned by those civil officers who had time to escape ; and the last traces of English law and order were swept away in a flood of rapine, bloodshed, and general lawlessness. Outside the fort of Agra, where English folk of all classes found passing refuge, the power of Mr. Colvin, the Lieutenant-Governor, was openly defied. A reign of terror had begun for all well-wishers to our rule.

Meanwhile the news from Meerut and Dehli had roused Lord Canning into taking measures more or less worthy of so great a need. Messages for aid were sent in all directions, to Bombay, Madras, Rangoon, and Ceylon ; special powers were entrusted to the Lawrence brothers ; and Lord Elgin was entreated to bring on to Calcutta the troops destined for the Chinese war. By degrees the expected succours flowed in ; but much time was lost in forwarding troops by dribblets to Banāras and Cawnpore ; and the delay in disarming the Sepoys at Barrackpore and enrolling volunteers in Calcutta led to a disgraceful panic in the capital of British India. Early in June the brave

Colonel Neill and his Madras fusileers reached Banáras in time to save that city from the worst issues of a Sepoy rising. On the 11th his presence at Allahábád gave fresh heart to his countrymen in the fortress at the meeting of the Jamna with the Ganges, and cleared the way for some dashing onsets against the rebels in that neighbourhood. He had got all ready for a final march on Cawnpore, when



MEMORIAL WELL, CAWNPORE

General Havelock came up to relieve him of the chief command, and to carry on the noble enterprise which he had so well begun.

On the 7th July Havelock's little army set out from Allahábád. At Fathipúr, and again by the Pandú stream, the troops of Nána Sahib strove to arrest his progress, but in vain. On the night of the 16th his weary soldiers slept on the parade-ground of Cawnpore, still unprepared for the

crowning tragedy, whose tokens on the morrow were to meet their eyes. They knew that, after weeks of terrible suffering, Wheeler and his wasted garrison had surrendered to the treacherous Rajah of Bithúr, that volley after volley had been suddenly fired into the boats prepared for their promised voyage down the river, and that nearly all the men who survived this cowardly attack were afterwards taken out of the boats and shot. But not until the morrow did they learn the whole truth; how on the 15th July, the day of his second defeat, the ruthless Náma had caused the remnant of his captives, men, women, and children, to be shot down, hacked, stabbed, or beaten to death, within the bungalow where they had been shut up for a fortnight past, and how next morning their mangled bodies had been stripped and tumbled into the nearest well.* Of all the 900 who had entered the intrenchments of Cawnpore, four only, two officers and two privates, escaped almost by a miracle to tell of the horrors they had seen and suffered.†

* Among the victims of the Náma's butcheries were a number of men, women, and children, who had escaped the slaughter of Fathigarh. Two hundred in all are said to have perished in the bungalow. The well at Cawnpore was afterwards bricked over, and a handsome memorial built upon the site.

† These were Lieutenants Thompson and Delafosse, Privates Murphy and Sullivan, who, after many hairbreadth escapes, found rest and shelter at last with a friendly Audh chief, Rajah Dig Bijai Singh, until they were able to join Havelock's force on the march to Lucknow.

CHAPTER III.

LORD CANNING—(*continued*).

WHILE Havelock was making desperate efforts to relieve Lucknow, and the flames of revolt were spreading into Central India, a few thousand English and native troops were engaged in the momentous work of besieging Delhi, the one great stronghold of the mutineers. After the death of General Anson, his little army, reinforced by a part of the Meerut garrison who had fought two battles on their way to Delhi, drove the rebels before them at Badli Serai on the 8th June, and encamped on the ridge overlooking the tall red towers and long walls of the Moghal capital. There, week after week, they lay like a forlorn hope in front of a city held by 30,000 Sepoys, themselves just able by dint of heroic efforts to hold their ground under every kind of danger and difficulty against repeated onsets from the walls. All through the heats of June and the rains of July the besiegers were in fact themselves besieged. Sally after sally from the city wasted their numbers, still further thinned by disease and overwork. Sir Henry Barnard, their brave commander, died of cholera in the beginning of July, and his successor, General Reed, was soon forced by illness to make over the command to Brigadier Wilson of the Bengal Artillery. But the road from the Satlaj was kept open by the loyal princes of Sirhind, and Sir John Lawrence strained every nerve to reinforce his countrymen from his own province. All through July and August fresh troops came streaming or dribbling into Wilson's camp. At last, by the middle of

August the gallant Nicholson, fresh from the slaughter of armed mutineers on the Ravi, near Gurdáspúr, led into the camp before Dehli the last brigade of troops which Lawrence could well spare from his already scant resources.

Nicholson's rout of the rebels at Najafgarh on the 25th finally cleared the way for the approach of the heavy guns destined to batter down the walls of the rebel stronghold. With their arrival on the 6th September the siege began in earnest. It did not begin a moment too soon. Partial risings had taken place in the Panjáb itself. From Saharanpur to Meerut the country was overrun by bands of lawless villagers, or armed rebels following the standard of some ambitious chief. The hard-pressed defenders of Lucknow were beginning to despair of the help which Havelock had twice failed to bring them. Large bodies of rebels from Indor, Gwalior, and the neighbouring provinces were gathering for a march on Agra, and all Sindia's efforts were growing powerless to keep the Gwalior Contingent from joining in the game of havoc. The most loyal of the native chiefs could hardly count on the faithfulness of his followers to what seemed already a losing cause.

On the other hand, succours from Ceylon, the Cape, and other quarters, were steaming up the Húghli; Peel's naval brigade was hastening up the country; Outram, in himself a host, was preparing for another march from Cawnpore to Lucknow; and the gallant Major Eyre, an old Kabul prisoner, had just been scattering the rebels, who had besieged his countrymen at Arrah, and striven to bar his way among the jungles of Jagdispúr. In Southern and Western India, where the Sepoys with one or two exceptions continued faithful, all was quiet; and the Nizám's able minister, Salar Jang, maintained under very trying circumstances the peace of a province filled with warlike Arabs and fanatic Mohammadans of every class. Lastly, inside Dehli itself the rebels were disheartened by past

defeats ; they had no leader in whom all could trust ; their own countrymen grew weary of a yoke far heavier than that from which they had been rescued ; and the old strifes of race and creed broke out among men who had little in common besides the knowledge of their common guilt.

On the 11th September the new heavy batteries showered forth their iron rain on the walls of Dehli. In vain did the enemy strive their best to cope with the rising danger. In three days the battered walls were a heap of ruins, and Wilson's heroes were only waiting for the word to rush up the breaches made by their guns. On the early morning of the 14th September, the great rebel stronghold was stormed in three places by as many columns, numbering in all not quite three thousand men. The Kashmir Gate was blown in under a deadly fire, while Nicholson's stormers mounted the main breach. Two hours of hard fighting left our soldiers firmly lodged within the walls ; but their success was dearly bought by the fall of the gallant Nicholson, the leader of the storming columns, the hope and pride of all India. He lingered for nine days of a mortal wound ; but his last hours were cheered by the knowledge that he had not died in vain. After six days of hard fighting not one armed mutineer or rebel remained alive within the captured city. On the 21st September the old king himself, in whose name the city had been defended, was brought back a close prisoner to his former home. His intriguing wife, Zinat Mahal, and her son, Jamma Bakht, shared his confinement. Two more of his sons were slain next day by their captor, the daring Captain Hodson, in the sight of a great crowd, who seemed bent on rescuing them from his small escort. Several other of the Dehli princes were afterwards taken, tried, and hanged for the part they had borne in the murder of English women and children on the 11th and 12th May. In March of the next year the wretched old

king was doomed to death by a military court for waging war against the English and ordering the murder of forty-nine Christians within Dehli. But death was exchanged for transportation, and the white-haired felon died a few years afterwards in a remote corner of Pegu. A cry for vengeance went forth against Zinat Mahal and her son; but Lord Canning, as firm as he was merciful, gave no heed to the cry, and both queen and prince were allowed to share the fortunes and cheer the last days of Moham-mad Bahadur Shah.

In all the history of British India, so fruitful in great deeds, no greater achievement was ever recorded than the capture of a strong walled city, seven miles round, by about six thousand Englishmen and Sikhs, arrayed against many times their number of desperate and well-armed foes. After three months of watching and hard fighting for the very ground on which they stood, their numbers steadily thinned by wounds and sickness, Wilson's heroes had planted their batteries within grapeshot of bastions heavily armed and stoutly defended, had scaled in broad daylight walls twenty-four feet high, and cleared out the foe in six days from a town where every large building was itself a stronghold, and every street had to be won by the bayonet or the pickaxe. And all this was done, as Lord Canning proudly declared, "before a single soldier of the many thousands who are hastening from England to uphold the supremacy of the British power, has set foot on these shores," and even before any of the troops shipped off from the nearest colonies had made their way into Wilson's camp. For this memorable feat of arms, which cost the victors a total loss of nearly four thousand from the beginning of the siege, and of 1,674 from the 8th to the 21st September, no small share of England's gratitude was due to Sir John Lawrence, whose bold counsels and up-flagging efforts had enabled the Forlorn Hope before Dehli to hold the Ridge against all comers, until the moment

came for striking a death-blow at the rebel cause. With the fall of the old imperial city the neck of the mutiny was fairly broken, although many months were yet to elapse before the monster breathed his last.

While some of Wilson's victorious troops were engaged in scouring the country between Dehli and Agra, beating up rebels and restoring order as they marched along, the timely presence of Outram and Havelock at Lucknow had rescued its war-worn garrison from imminent destruction, if not yet from absolute danger. Down to the end of June Sir Henry Lawrence had been employed in strengthening the one post which still remained to the English in Audh. But his failure on the 30th to check the advance of a strong rebel army on Lucknow was closely followed by the siege of the English Residency, wherein some fifteen hundred Europeans and faithful Sepoys were hemmed in for months by a well-armed, numerous, and determined foe. His own death, on the 4th July, from a mortal wound deprived the garrison of a leader whose many public services were enhanced by virtues of the highest order, and whose whole life may be summed up in the sentence carved upon his tomb—"Here lies Henry Lawrence, who tried to do his duty."

Happily his spirit still lived in those who carried on the defence for which his foresight had so well prepared. Under every drawback of scanty numbers, sickness, hard fare, incessant work, in spite of a weak position, of hopes continually disappointed, of prolonged resistance to fearful odds, the defenders of the Lucknow Residency upheld for more than three months the honour of their flag and the safety of their countrywomen against the banded forces of a whole province in revolt. Men and women alike toiled, watched, and suffered in their several ways under a ceaseless hail from guns and musketry, varied by the noise of bursting mines and the yells of desperate onsets daringly repelled. At last, in the beginning of September, Outram

led forth his succouring brigade from Allahábád. On the 19th, some three thousand soldiers, chiefly English, marched out from Cawnpore under Outram, Havelock, and Neill, to cut their way at all hazards into Lucknow. On the 23rd, Havelock's army—for, thanks to Outram's generous self-denial, he had retained the chief command—stormed the Alambágh, or summer-palace of the queens of Audh, under a furious fire from the enemy's guns.

Two days later they fought their way through streets of loopholed houses, over barriers bristling with death, into the half-ruined Residency itself. Nearly five hundred slain or wounded was the price which Havelock paid for his success, and the joy of victory was further damped by the death of General Neill within a few yards from the British entrenchments. But the deliverers had not come too soon, for the enemy had carried two mines under the Residency, and a very few days more might have seen the last of its defenders buried beneath its ruins. Even as things were, the relieving force, once more commanded by Sir James Outram, could do little more than carry on with ampler means the defence of the position so hardly won, until a new army could march up to aid them in withdrawing the old garrison to Cawnpore.

In due time a fresh army, under Sir Colin Campbell of Crimean fame, began its march towards Lucknow. By the 12th November it was encamped at the Alambágh. On the 14th Sir Colin resumed his advance, carrying one strong post after another at the point of the bayonet, with due help at need from his heavy guns. On the 16th two thousand rebels were mercilessly slain by the troops who stormed the massive walls of the Sikandar Bagh. The storming of the Shah Najaf Mosque, after Peel's naval guns had vainly battered its strong masonry for three hours, closed that day's work with brilliant promise of triumphs yet to win. A few hours more of steady fighting on the morrow, in which Outram's soldiers played

their part, brought the besieged and their deliverers face to face. A few days later the last of the Lucknow garrison slept once more in peace and safety on the pleasant camping-ground of the Dil-Khushali. There, on the 25th November, Sir Henry Havelock, worn out by toil and sickness, breathed his last.

Leaving Outram strongly posted at the Alambagh, Sir Colin Campbell marched off with the rest of his troops and the rescued women and children for Cawnpore, where his presence was already needed by those he had left behind. The powerful Gwalior Contingent, having at last broken loose from Sindia's control, had crossed the Jamna, and with numbers swollen by the remnants of the Nana's forces, marched on towards Cawnpore. After a vain attempt to bar their progress, Windham's small force fell back in some disorder into an entrenched position near the Ganges. Here for two days the rebels, twenty thousand strong, under their ablest leader, Tantia Topi, pressed him so hard that the bridge of boats was in imminent danger of destruction, when Sir Colin's soldiers on the 28th November reappeared betimes on the opposite bank.

As soon as the sick and wounded, the women and children of the Lucknow garrison had been sent off towards Calcutta, Campbell proceeded to settle accounts with the foe. Their utter rout on the 6th December, with the loss of seventeen guns and all their stores, was crowned on the 9th by their pursuit and final dispersion, with the capture of all their remaining guns. During the same month fresh victories were gained by English columns over the rebels in Rohilkhand and the districts bordering the Ganges. Rewah, in Bundalkhand, was cleared of rebels by the gallant Lieutenant Osborne. The mutineers of Nimach were routed by Brigadier Stuart near Mandisor. Sagar, in Central India, was still held by faithful Sepoys, and order was restored in the dominions of Holkar.

Several of the leading rebels had by this time been caught and hanged, nor was any mercy shown to those who had taken part in the murder or ill-treatment of English people. It must even be confessed that in some places the work of vengeance and repression had been carried by civil and military officers to a length which neither past provocation nor present danger could fairly excuse. The cry for blood went forth from all quarters, and many innocent perished, or were brought to ruin along with the guilty. It is greatly to Lord Canning's honour, that he boldly and firmly set his face against deeds of wanton cruelty wrought in the name of justice by some of those whom he had necessarily entrusted with special powers. From the first he denounced the folly of dealing with the people at large as mere rebels or abettors of rebellion; and all the abuse showered upon him, both in India and England, for his noble interference failed to turn him from his purpose of tempering just retribution with open-handed and politic mercy. Even in the darkest days of 1857, it came out more and more clearly that the Sepoy revolt had widened into a popular uprising, mainly in districts new to our rule, or peopled largely by robbers and Mohammadans, or held by unruly and disaffected chiefs. Many a life was saved by the devotion of native servants, as well as the active loyalty of native gentlemen. In putting a stop betimes to the wholesale burning of suspected villages, and the indiscriminate slaughter of suspected criminals, Lord Canning rendered a signal service not only to his own countrymen, but to the people of India, who learned that their masters, however quick to strike and stern to punish, could yet stay their hands when the worst of the danger had blown over. Englishmen and natives alike may thank him for preventing a formidable outbreak from flaring up into a war of race against race.

While Outram held his post at the Alambagh against

repeated onsets of many thousand rebels, and Hope Grant was gaining fresh victories in Rohilkhand, and Franks, with a force partly composed of Gúrkhas from Nipál, was driving the enemy before him into Lucknow, and other



GURKHA, BRAHMAN, AND SUDRA.

officers were doing good work in Central and Western India, Sir Colin Campbell was making ready, in his own cautious fashion, for one last overwhelming advance on the capital of Audh. At length, on the 2nd March, 1858,

the van of his fine army, 25,000 strong in all, including 16,000 good English troops, with a powerful siege-train, halted after a brief fight on the old camping-ground at the Dil-Khusháh. On the 6th, Outram crossed the Gumti to play a leading part in the capture of Lucknow. By the 16th the two commanders had won their way, not without some hard fighting, into the heart of the rebel city, while the Nipalese Jang Bahádur cleared out the enemy from the southern side, and rescued two English ladies who had survived the murder of their friends and kindred some months before. A few days later not an armed rebel remained in or near Lucknow. The trifling loss sustained by the victors was heightened by the death of the daring Hodson ; and Captain William Peel, whose sailors had been foremost in every fight, died in April of small-pox, which attacked him just as he was recovering from his wounds.

The conquerors of Lucknow had still to deal with the insurgents in Rohilkhand, whose numbers were swollen by fugitives from all parts of Audh. Shahjahánpur was taken on the 25th April, and Baróli on the 6th May. The insurgent forces, beaten and broken up in every fight, still roamed about the country, causing their pursuers much trouble and some little loss from the heat and hardships to which they were exposed. Rohilkhand, indeed, was virtually reconquered before the end of June ; but the rising in Bahár under Koer Singh involved weary marches amid deep jungle, and the reconquest of Audh was only completed on the last day of December, when the high-mettled Begam of Audh, and the outlawed Nána Sahib led the last of their hunted followers across the Rápti into the forests of Nipál. Even of this poor remnant many fell by the swords of their pursuers ; while others, including the Nána himself, are believed to have perished of disease.

One leader, Prince Firóz Shah of Delhi, cut his way

with a few followers through Audh across the Ganges, to share the fortunes of Tantia Topi, who, driven out of Gwalior by Sir Hugh Rose, still held a few troops together in the wilds of Rajputana, doubling on his pursuers like a hunted hare. How he had been brought to this plight, it remains to tell.

In the beginning of 1858 several columns of troops from Bombay and Madras were marching on various points of the country lying to the west and south of the Jamna, from the Aravalli to the Vindhya Hills. A Madras column under General Whitlock, after doing good service about Jabalpur moved on to defeat the rebels in Bundalkhand. Yet harder work awaited the Bombay column which Sir Hugh Rose led first of all to the relief of Sagar. On the 11th February the strong fort of Garakotah fell into Sir Hugh's hands. The rout of the rebels at Madanpur opened the way to fresh successes. On the 17th March Stuart's brigade stormed the fortress of Chanderi. Jhansi itself was invested. Twenty thousand men under Tantia Topi crossed the Betwah in hopes of raising the siege. On the 1st April they were routed with heavy slaughter by 1,200 of Sir Hugh's force, and two days afterwards the fierce Rani's rock-perched stronghold was carried by storm; herself with a few followers escaping into the jungle. Again the Rani and her Brahman ally barred the way against their old assailants at Kunch on the 7th May. Once more driven from the field of their own choosing through Sir Hugh's masterly tactics, they fell back with the loss of several guns on Kalpi, a strong fortress overlooking the Jamna, not far from Cawnpore.

Sir Hugh, however, was not to be thwarted. On the 19th May, with the aid of a column from Cawnpore, he began the attack. Twice the rebels sallied out against his wearied soldiers, but in vain. By the 23rd May they were off to Gwalior, and Sir Hugh became easy master of a fortified arsenal containing fifty guns and large store of arms

and ammunition. By this time, both he himself and his heroic little army were in sore need of rest after so many months of constant marching and hard fighting under an Indian sun,* across many hundred miles of very broken ground. But the state of affairs at Gwalior forbade more than a brief halt at that moment. On the 1st June the brave young Sindia and his able minister Dinkar Rao were flying for their lives to Agra from a capital already filled with victorious rebels. Among these Tántia Topi at once took the lead, in the name of the Nana, whom the Maráthas soldiery were bidden to accept as their future Peshwa. Leaving Whitlock, the captor of Banda, to guard Kalpi, Sir Hugh Rose lost no time in marching upon Gwalior, where some 18,000 rebels, strongly posted around a rock-fortress of vast strength, awaited his attack. Nothing, however, could long withstand the determined efforts of disciplined veterans led by the most brilliant general whom the mutiny had produced. Three days of bold manœuvring and successful fighting, in the course of which the bloodstained Ráni of Jhansi met a soldier's death, placed all Gwalior outside the citadel in Sir Hugh's hands. On the 20th June a handful of Sepoys scaled the far-famed citadel itself, already abandoned by most of its defenders; and the young Māharajah rode back in triumph through the streets of a city which British valour had won back for its rightful lord. Next day Brigadier Robert Napier, with a few hundred horsemen and six light guns, caught up and scattered by a daring charge several thousand of Tántia's beaten troops. Twenty-five guns fell into the victors' hands, and the army of the Peshwa, broken up into small flying bands, no longer existed as an organised force.

Thus ended one of the most brilliant and masterly campaigns of which history has any record. In less than

* Sir Hugh Rose himself had suffered from five sunstrokes in a few days, and many of his soldiers died from the same cause.

six months Sir Hugh Rose had led his few thousand warriors, English and native,* over more than a thousand miles of rugged country, bristling with arms, and dotted with strongholds, each capable of a stout defence. From Indór to Sagar, to Jhánsi, to Kalpi, at length to Gwalior, they had marched without a check in the fierce heats of an Indian summer, from victory to victory, across rivers, over mountain passes, through intricate jungles, into the strongest forts, in the teeth of armies well led, fairly disciplined, not badly equipped, and always far outnumbering their own. Their bravery, devotion, and discipline, under hardships, dangers, and temptations of every kind, had well earned the hearty thanks of the skilful leader, who, with their help, had placed himself by that one campaign on a level with some of the first names in the annals of modern warfare.

* Among these were some of the Haidarábád Contingent, whose loyalty had remained proof to all temptations.

BOOK VII.

INDIA UNDER THE CROWN.

CHAPTER I.

LORD CANNING—(*continued*).

WITH the re-capture of Gwalior ended the last serious struggle against our arms. In the most unquiet districts order was being gradually restored, and the rule of the civil officer was fast replacing that of the military chief. A passing outbreak in the Southern Marátha country had been suppressed betimes, before it came to a serious head. Dehli and the adjacent districts had been added to the Government of the Panjáb. Order reigned in the North-Western Provinces. In Audh the mild influence of Sir James Outram and his successor, Mr. Montgomery, was fast winning over the rebellious Tálukdars or landholders to accept the only terms on which Lord Canning would reinstate them in their forfeit domains. By the end of the year the last of the Audh insurgents were driven, as we have seen, into the jungles at the foot of the Nipálese Hills. Tántia Topi was still at large in Central India, leading his pursuers a weary chase from Rájputána to Berár ; but he, too, on the 7th April, 1859, was caught at last in the jungle near Sípri, betrayed, like another Wallace, by one of his most trusty followers.

His trial and speedy death as a proven accomplice in the Nāna's crimes cut short the career of the one able leader on the rebel side, and marked the close of a mutiny which had drenched all Upper India in blood. His comrade, Firóz Shah, once more escaped ; but the last embers of revolt had been trodden out. The great Sepoy Army of Bengal had been swallowed up in the storm of its own raising. The massacres of Cawnpore, Dehli, and Jhānsi, had been requited a hundred-fold. Of the surviving mutineers thousands were doomed to hard labour in Indian jails, or to lifelong imprisonment in the Andaman Islands. Of the leading rebels who fell into our hands, some were put to death ; others, less criminal, were banished or imprisoned ; while the remainder, with the bulk of their followers, were allowed to go free.

In the last months of this momentous struggle, the great Merchant Company, which had subdued all India in less than a hundred years, underwent the doom which had been hanging over it ever since the days of Pitt. In spite of its long established power, of the glorious memories which surrounded its name, of the eloquence of its friends in Parliament, of the masterly pleadings drawn up in its behalf by its faithful servant and wise counsellor, Mr. John Stuart Mill, it failed to stem the tide of popular feeling which the events of 1857 had set rolling more and more ominously against the magnates of Leadenhall Street. On the 2nd August, 1858, Queen Victoria gave her assent to the Bill which, drawn up by Lord Stanley and carried with few amendments through both Houses, decreed the transfer of all sovereign power in India from the hands of the East India Company to the Crown. Thenceforth the government of India was vested in one of Her Majesty's Ministers, aided by a Council of Fifteen, eight of whom were to be chosen at first from the old Court of Directors. One of the last acts of the discrowned Company was to vote Sir John

Lawrence a handsome pension for services unsurpassed in Indian history.

Thus in the very zenith of its outward greatness passed away from the historic scene a power whose services alike to India and England might have seemed to deserve a better fate. Englishmen might well be proud of a body whose fame had filled the world, whose servants in a hundred years had borne the Company's flag from one end of India to the other, fighting always against heavy odds, overthrowing many great dynasties, and proving in peace as well as in war their right to rule the two hundred and odd millions whom successive conquests, made for the most part in self-defence, often in the teeth of orders from England, had finally placed under their charge. But the tree, in fact, was rotten before it was cut down. The Company's sovereignty had long been undermined by the powers entrusted to the Ministerial Board of Control; and its patronage, the last remaining source of its political life, was fast slipping out of its hands, when the great storm of 1857 revealed the weakness of its friends to withstand the widespread demand, raised both at home and in India, for its entire suppression as a ruling power.

On the 1st November all India was made aware of the change which had befallen her late masters. On that day Lord Canning, as the new-made Viceroy under the new rule, issued from Allahabad the famous proclamation which announced in the Queen's name the final transfer of India's sovereignty from the Company to the Crown. Throughout the chief cities of British India the new era of national progress was solemnly proclaimed to eager and rejoicing crowds, amidst the booming of guns, the clang of martial music, and the cheers of paraded troops. In the words of the royal manifesto there might be nothing absolutely new beyond the fact that another hand would henceforth wield the sceptre hitherto entrusted to

a private Company. No new principles were really involved in the assertion of her Majesty's resolve to govern her new subjects with a tender and scrupulous regard for the rights, dignities, usages, and well-being of each and all. But a certain sense of relief from past troubles and secret fears for the future inclined the people at large to hail the new edict as a timely message of peace, forgiveness, and goodwill, a sure promise of better days to come, a formal charter of rights hitherto begrudged or disregarded in fact, if not in words.

Honours and rewards were freely distributed among all who had done good service during the late revolt. Lord Canning became an earl; Sir John Lawrence, General Wilson, and Sir James Outram baronets; Sir Colin Campbell won his peerage as Lord Clyde; the son of General Havelock succeeded to the baronetcy conferred upon his dying father. Nicholson's widowed mother was not forgotten, nor the family of the daring Neill. A host of deserving officers, civil and military, were endowed with the Order of the Bath. Every soldier who shared in the siege of Dehli or the defence of Lucknow was allowed to reckon another year's service towards his pension. Estates were conferred on unofficial Englishmen who, like Boyle, the defender of Arrah against thousands of armed Sepoys, had done things worthy of remembrance.*

* The defence of Mr. Boyle's bungalow at Arrah by 18 Europeans and 50 Sikh police, for seven days, against 3,000 armed mutineers, aided by two guns, was one of the most brilliant episodes in the war of 1857. It was conducted by Mr. Wake of the Bengal Civil Service, but its success was mainly owing to the foresight of Mr. Boyle, a railway engineer, who had fortified and provisioned his house weeks before the revolt of the Sepoys at Dinapore. One attempt to relieve the defenders from Dinapore was beaten back with heavy slaughter. The supply of drink ran short, but the Sikhs found fresh water by digging through the floor. At length, on the 3rd August, Major Vincent Eyre, with 200 English soldiers and three guns, scattered the besiegers, saved the little garrison from further danger, and cleared the road from Bengal to Cawnpore.

Every native known to have saved English lives or property received a liberal reward. On those native chiefs and princes who had stood loyally by the Government all sorts of honours and gifts were ungrudgingly bestowed. The Nizâm himself got back a part of his former territory, and the balance of his debt to the State was wholly remitted. His able minister, Salar Jang, in addition to a knighthood of the new Star of India, was handsomely rewarded in other ways. New rights, grants of land, and privileges, were secured to Sindia and Holkar, and in yet larger measure to the loyal Sikh princes without whose aid Dehli could not have been retaken, nor the adjacent provinces so speedily subdued. The noble Rajah of Patiala was the first native who took his seat in the Viceroy's Legislative Council, as remodelled in 1861.

One concession by which the native princes set most store was made by Lord Canning, in the Sanads or patents which acknowledged, with due restrictions, the right of every native feudatory to adopt an heir on the failure of male issue in his own line. In some cases a special provision was even made for the appointment of a fit successor to a prince who left neither a natural nor an adopted heir.* The spirit of the Royal Proclamation was also visible in the process of doing away with the old distinctions between Supreme and Sadr Courts. The right of sitting in the new High Court of each province was for the first time thrown open to qualified native judges of a lower grade. About the same time the Penal Code first drafted by Macaulay became the law of the land for all creeds and classes. For the first time also since the days of Cornwallis native gentlemen were empowered to serve as magistrates under the Crown.

The last years of Lord Canning's rule were employed in repairing the mischief caused by the great mutiny. In

* "Rajahs of the Panjab," by Lepel Griffin. 1873.

1859 Mr. James Wilson was sent out from England to devise new ways and means of replenishing an exhausted treasury and reducing the public outlay. On his untimely death in 1860 his place was taken and his task successfully carried on by Mr. Laing. A few small local outbreaks ruffled for a while the general peace, and riots in the indigo districts of Bengal reduced some of the planters for a time to serious straits. But all these were trifles compared to the great famine which wasted Upper India in 1861, causing the death of half a million sufferers, and throwing back for several years the process of recovery from the disasters of 1857. Foremost in the efforts made by his countrymen to allay the consequent misery was Colonel Baird Smith, who had borne no trifling part in the siege and capture of Dehli. He died on his way home, a victim to overwork in a baneful climate.

In 1859 Lord Canning's Government passed a law which aimed at fulfilling the pledges made by Lord Cornwallis in 1793. The Bengal Rent Act secured for one class of rayats almost absolute ownership of their lands, and for another class the right of holding at a rent which no zamindar could enhance at his mere pleasure. A yet wider measure of tenant-right was carried, as we shall see, by a later Viceroy.

On the 1st November, 1861, a splendid gathering of English officers and native chiefs ranged itself round Lord Canning at Allahábad, to take part in the investiture of some among them with the order of the Star of India. Chief among those who received the badges of the new order from the hands of its first Grand Master, the Viceroy himself, were the Rajahs of Gwalior and Patála, the Nawab of Rámpúr, and the stout-hearted Begam of Bhopál. A few months later Lord Canning, worn out with cares and failing health, left Calcutta on his way home. On the 17th June, but a few weeks after his landing in England, the heirless son of George Canning had ceased to breathe.

He had already lived down the unpopularity which his earlier measures during the mutiny had provoked. Whatever may have been his shortcomings at the outbreak of a storm which found him still new to his work, surrounded by advisers no abler nor clearer-sighted than himself, his cool courage and firm adherence to his own views of duty and justice won him the respect even of those who found most fault with his seeming blindness to the true purport of passing events. Undismayed by the panic around him, unswayed by the impulses of popular clamour, he worked away at his post with the calmness of conscious rectitude, and kept his own head clear when all around him were fast losing theirs. The bold stand which he made against the popular cry for indiscriminate revenge forms perhaps his highest claim to historic remembrance; and the name of Clemency Canning, once fastened on him in keen reproach, has already become the fairest tribute to his public worth.

Before Canning left India he could point to the great progress already made in works of national usefulness. By the beginning of 1862 thirteen hundred and sixty miles of railway had been opened, half of that total in the last two years. The great trunk road from Calcutta had been completed to Peshawar, and many hundred miles of new roads had been opened throughout the country. New canals were begun, continued, or completed in several provinces, and other public works were pushed steadily forward. The whole foreign trade of India had increased from 32 millions in 1850 to 80 millions in 1861. In Bengal the customs revenue had nearly trebled itself in ten years. In the last four years the foreign trade of Bombay had been increased by ten millions, to the enrichment of the cotton growers and merchants in Western and Southern India, who had begun to furnish the mills of Lancashire with the cotton no longer obtainable from the war-burdened States of the American Union.

CHAPTER II.

LORD ELGIN AND SIR JOHN LAWRENCE—1862-1869.

LORD CANNING's place in India was worthily filled by Lord Elgin, whose successful diplomacy had just secured the fruits of Sir Hope Grant's victorious march to Pekin. The sometime Governor of Jamaica and Canada had already won for himself a name for statesmanship of a high order ; and the work awaiting him in India was far from light. His first year of office was spent mainly in Calcutta, in the quiet discharge of his new duties. Early in 1863 he set out for the upper provinces, holding State *Darbárs* at Banáras, Agra, and Ambála, on his way up to the hills. Towards the end of September he started again from Simla on an exploring journey through the mountain tracts of the Panjáb. But the keen air of the wild Kúlu passes proved too much for a frame already weakened by the climate of Lower Bengal ; and on the 20th November Lord Elgin died of heart disease at Dharmsála in the Kángra valley, in the midst of plans for a great military and official gathering at Lahór, and for checking the movements of Wáhábí fanatics in the hills westward of the Indus.

Before his death the Sitána campaign had already begun with the advance of a British force under General Neville Chamberlain into the Ambéla Pass. But the fierce mountaineers fought hard in their native hills ; Chamberlain himself was badly wounded in November ; and his troops held only the ground they had won after days of incessant fighting. The Council at Calcutta were on the point of ordering an ill-timed retreat, when Sir William

Denison, Governor of Madras, reached Calcutta as Lord Elgin's acting successor, in time to overrule their feebler counsels, and to support Sir Hugh Rose, the Commander-in-Chief, in his efforts to strengthen the hands of Chamberlain's successor. The needful reinforcements soon reached Garvoek's camp. Ambela was stormed in December, and some of our late foes were glad enough to show their victors the way to Malka, the chief seat of the Sitana fanatics. With the utter destruction of that place the war was over, and a wholesome fear of English prowess kept the rude highlanders of those regions quiet for years to come.

In January of the following year Sir W. Denison made over the seals of government to Sir John Lawrence, the first Bengal civilian who had ever been formally appointed Governor-General of India since the days of Sir John Shore. His return to the country where he had lived and laboured for so many years was hailed by his countrymen as a just reward for his splendid services in 1857. After spending the summer months at Simla, Sir John proceeded to meet his old friends and followers at Lahór. In simple but impressive terms he told the assembled Sikh chiefs and gentlemen of the interest which the Queen of England took in their well-being, and passed in brief review the efforts made by successive English rulers, from Sir Henry Lawrence to Sir Robert Montgomery, to further that well-being in every possible way.

Meanwhile a little war was unwillingly opened with the rulers of Bhotán, a little Himalayan state to the north of Assam. For some years past the Bhotia highlanders had made frequent inroads into British ground lying at the foot of their hills, and claimed by their chiefs as part of Bhotán. In 1863 the Hon. Mr. Ashley Eden had been sent to treat with the Bhotán government on behalf of the British subjects who had been kidnapped in these raids. The utter failure of the mission was crowned by the in-

sults heaped upon the envoy himself. In fear of his life he had to sign a treaty surrendering the very lands in dispute. After some vain attempts to patch up the quarrel and gain redress for the outrage, Sir John Lawrence in November 1864 declared war against Bhotán. A small force entered the hills; but mismanagement and a sickly season delayed its progress; some of our troops on one occasion were disgracefully defeated, and not till some months later was the enemy driven to sue for peace and give sure pledges for its maintenance.

From that time no other warlike movement disturbed the general quiet, until 1868, when a rising of lawless Waghirs in Katiawár had to be quelled by an armed force. Later in the year the Afghán tribes of the Black Mountain, not far from Sitána, egged on by Wáhabí refugees from Patna, provoked speedy punishment for a daring outrage on the Panjab frontier. Determined this time to do nothing by halves, Sir John ordered a strong force under General Wylde to march towards the Black Mountain. In three weeks the invading columns had dealt the hill-tribes such a blow, that chief after chief threw himself and his clansmen on the invader's mercy, and the plotters who had stirred them up to acts of violence were glad to seek safer hiding-places elsewhere.

The history of Sir Robert Napier's well-planned and thoroughly successful march to Magdála, the capital of King Théodore, the headstrong ruler of Abyssinia, is not to be told in these pages. It must not, however, be overlooked that the troops whom Napier led to victory in 1868 were largely composed of Sikh regiments from India, that the task of equipping them and feeding them on the march devolved on officers of the Indian Government, and that Napier himself, as an officer of Bengal Engineers, had won his laurels in many an Indian field. In the preparations for this campaign the Viceroy himself played a useful and important part.

A steady friend to peaceful progress, Sir John Lawrence withstood all temptations to meddle in the affairs of his Afghán neighbours. On the death of Dost Mohammad in 1863, a long struggle for the throne of Kábul ensued between his sons Mohammad Afzul Khan and Sher Ali Khán. The latter, whom his father had chosen for his heir in preference to either of his eldest sons, applied to the Indian Government for help against his insurgent brother. Beyond acknowledging Sher Ali as king for the time being, Sir John Lawrence declined to interfere. A just dread of embroiling India in the domestic quarrels of a turbulent neighbour decided him to watch the progress of events across the frontier, and do nothing which could give either party fair cause for complaint. The strife between the brothers raged with varying fortune, and victory for a moment seemed to have finally turned the scales against Sher Ali Khán. Afzul Khan in his turn was acknowledged as the actual ruler of Kábul and Kandahar, while Sher Ali retained possession of Herát. Once more, however, fortune smiled on the latter. On the death of Afzul Khan his next brother, Azím Khán, took his place at Kábul, but not for long. The dethroned Sher Ali set out from Herát, and, fighting his way back to Kábul, once more became the acknowledged ruler of his father's realm. Before the end of 1868 he was firmly seated on the throne from which he had been driven three years before; and Sir John's successor was enabled to reap the fruits of a policy which the event had fully justified.

The five years of Sir John's rule were years on the whole of peace and marked prosperity. In Western and Central India new sources of wealth had been opened up to many classes by the great demand for Indian cotton which sprang out of the American war. For several years a golden stream kept flowing fast into the country. Cotton and railways brought untold plenty to millions who had hitherto earned their three or four rupees a month. The

poorest Rayat became suddenly rich. His old mud hut was replaced by a roomier dwelling of brick or stone. His wife and daughters decked themselves in jewels of price. Earthenware pots gave way to vessels of brass, copper, and even silver. Every coolie—said one who lived among them—“took to dressing like a Brahman.” In many cases old caste-distinctions were broken down by the growing self-esteem that comes of growing wealth. Bombay itself went mad over new schemes for making money; and the great commercial crash of 1865, the natural result of reckless gambling in trade matters, dealt sudden ruin among many households. But the ruin did not spread far outside the Western capital. Most of the new wealth remained in the country, enriching the mass of traders, husbandmen, and artisans, turning the waste lands into fruitful fields, giving new life to the cotton-looms of Nágpur, and increasing the public revenue in divers ways. Bombay itself, when the storm blew over, could still export more than a million bales of cotton in one season, and point to a foreign trade worth about forty millions a-year.

Under the active rule of Sir Richard Temple the Central Provinces, which had been formed in 1861 out of old Bengal districts and later annexations, rose in a few years to a rare height of well-ordered prosperity. By 1868 their foreign trade had swollen in value from two and a-half to thirteen millions, and the number of schools had risen from four to 249. A line of railway linked Nágpur with Bombay and the cotton-fields of Berár, while rich streams of traffic from nearly all parts of India found their meeting-point at Jabalpúr. In British Burmah the mild sway of Sir Arthur Phayre did much to further the well-being of that young, loyal, and rising province. In twelve years its population was doubled, partly by immigrants from across the Burman frontier; its revenues had increased to the same extent, and its foreign trade had risen to the value of ten millions a-year.



Audh, the granary of Upper India, had little cause to repent the old days of Mohammadan misrule. The people at large were prosperous and contented; new schools sprang up everywhere; railways and canals were flinging abroad the seeds of golden harvests; and its rulers found willing and enlightened helpmates in the Talukdárs, whose submission to our rule had been rewarded by the restoration of their former rights and powers. What causes of difference at first lay seething between them and the tenant-farmers of a certain standing, were dispelled or abated by the measure which Sir John Lawrence carried in 1866 for securing the right of hereditary cultivators to hold their lands at the old accustomed rates.

The Panjáb, Dalhousie's model province, had thriven steadily under the rule of Sir Robert Montgomery and his widely-loved successor, Sir Donald McLeod. In no other part of British India did the people show equal readiness to pluck the best fruits of Western civilisation. The North-Western Provinces were fast recovering from the combined effects of the great mutiny and the famine of 1861. Railways and public works gave a new impulse to trade and labour, while irrigation doubled and trebled the produce of the fruitful plains between the Ganges and the Jamna. When drought once more visited these provinces in 1868 its worst horrors were averted by the new growth of railways and canals. Distress there was, of course, in some places, but the great Ganges Canal, with its 650 miles of main stream and 3,000 of branch channels, saved nearly a million acres from drying up. A like service on a smaller scale was rendered by the Eastern Jamna Canal and the channels that water Rohilkhand and Dera Dhún, while the surplus grain of Audh was poured by rail into those districts where the drought was sorest.*

Less fortunate were the sufferers in Orissa during the

* In Rájputána, however, there was great distress from the drought of 1868.

great famine of 1866. A scanty rainfall in the previous year had been followed by a widespread dearth. The Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal shut his eyes to the tokens of coming disaster, until it was too late to pour in supplies of food by sea. Before relief came with the close of the next rainy season, nearly a million souls had died of hunger or disease in a province containing about four millions. In the neighbouring province of Madras a like disaster was averted by the zeal with which its governor, Lord Napier, took timely measures to relieve his suffering people. Maisôr also in the following year was saved by the efforts of its English rulers from much of the suffering threatened by a sudden drought.

During these years the whole foreign trade of British India rose to about a hundred millions sterling a-year, or nearly four times as much as the total for 1848. The revenues of the country had increased in eleven years from thirty to nearly fifty millions, about five of which went to pay interest on the public debt. More than 1,500 miles of new railway had been laid down in the last five years on the lines projected by Lord Dalhousie. In almost every province new works of irrigation were steadily carried forward, or new embankments raised to lessen the mischief caused by sudden floods. The warm interest which Sir John took in the well-being of his European soldiers displayed itself in the building of new barracks at a heavy cost, while the safety of the empire against future revolts was ensured by the construction of fortified posts, which might serve at once to protect our arsenals, overawe the surrounding country, and furnish shelter for our countrymen in time of need.

In each of the three presidencies a sanitary commissioner was for the first time entrusted with the duty of planning measures for improving the general health of the people and guarding the military and civil stations from attacks of preventible disease. In aid of the former object muni-

icipal committees, formed largely of natives, and headed by the civil officers of districts, were for the first time established in the chief towns of the North-Western Provinces, with power to raise taxes for sanitary purposes on the towns and villages placed under their control. Important reforms were also carried out in the police of each province and in the management of the central jails.

Great progress had meanwhile been made in the work of popular education. The State outlay on schools and colleges had risen in ten years from £100,000 to £800,000, the number of pupils from 10,000 to 700,000, and the number of schools and colleges, supported wholly or in part by public funds, from a few hundred to nearly 19,000. Every province had its own staff of paid teachers, from the chief director to the humblest of village schoolmasters. The vernacular, middle, and high schools in each district were linked together by means of scholarships, which enabled the best pupils to work their way up from the village school to the local college. Normal schools were training the youth of one generation to become the teachers of the next. 51,000 girls were already learning their lessons in 2,000 schools, while training-schools for women sprang up here and there under English ladies. Mission and private schools added thousands of scholars to the general sum. In many districts natives of rank and wealth came forward with large subscriptions for the diffusion of knowledge among their countrymen. Some of the native princes—notably those of Jaipur, Kolapur, and Travankor, were already following the good example of their neighbours within the British pale.

Much of the impulse so given to the spread of popular instruction may be traced to the unwearied efforts and strong personal influence of Sir John Lawrence himself. To him also was largely owing the first successful attempt to bring the management of Indian forests under the nursing care of the State. In some other directions his

hand was equally visible. He placed the cotton-culture of India under the charge of a special commissioner. Many hundred miles were added to the telegraph lines, and a message could be flashed from one end of India to the other for a uniform charge of one rupee. The ruler of Kashmír was persuaded to abolish or reduce the tolls which hampered the growth of Indian trade with Ladákh and Turkistán. Like concessions were at length obtained from the headstrong King of Burmah; and the first attempt at opening Western China to our Indian trade was made in 1868, when Captain Sladen set off from Mandalay, the new Burman capital, on his exploring mission to Bhámo and Momein. Had the Burmese officers proved as friendly as the Panthay rulers of Yunnan, that journey might have solved the question of carrying English wares from the Irawádi to the Yangtsi.

Early in January, 1869, Sir John Lawrence took his final leave of the country in which he had spent the best years of a useful and eventful life. One of his last acts was to double the standard weight of letters carried for half an anna. At the last sitting of his council he passed a Bill enabling the Talúkdars of Audh to borrow money from the Government in time of need, on the principles already applied in Bombay. On his return to England, worn out with ceaseless toiling for the public good, he obtained the peerage to which no living Englishman could have shown so strong a claim, and which the general voice of his countrymen would have awarded him ten years before.

CHAPTER III.

LORD MAYO AND LORD NORTHBROOK—1869-1873.

LORD LAWRENCE was succeeded by the Earl of Mayo, a statesman of some mark in Lord Derby's Government. A few weeks after his landing at Calcutta the new Viceroy set out to exchange greetings with Sher Ali, whose crowning victory over his brother's troops at Ghazni had once more placed him firmly on the throne of Dost Mohammad. At the magnificent Darbâr of Ambála, in the last days of March, 1869, the war-worn Amir of Kabul gave Lord Mayo a rare opportunity of playing at once the powerful patron and the winning host. For ten thousand pounds a month and a few thousand muskets Sher Ali agreed to be the friend of our friends and the enemy of our enemies. The lessons learned by him during that visit were not forgotten after his return home, and the friendly motives which had brought him so far away from his own dominions were not a little strengthened by Lord Mayo's kindly bearing and graceful words.

The famine of the past year was still sore in Rájputána. In spite of the relief-measures ordained by Colonel Keatinge, and promoted by some of the native princes, half a million beings were said to have died of hunger or disease, while nearly all the cattle perished or were driven beyond the border. The summer rains fell just in time to save the Panjáb and Central India from a like fate. Later in the year fever raged among the marshy jungles of Húghli and Bardwán. Trade declined, and the public revenue fell far short of the estimated yield. Lord Mayo set

himself to the work of retrenchment with more perhaps of zeal than discretion. The outlay on public works was cut down in all directions. The income-tax was doubled in the autumn of 1869, and trebled in the spring of 1870. By this measure, which aimed at drawing money from the pockets of the wealthier trading-classes, the Viceroy and his finance-minister, Sir R. Temple, succeeded in restoring the balance between outlay and income at the cost of their own popularity and of untold oppression on the part of their native underlings. For every rupee which reached the Treasury, at least three or four were squeezed by native harpies for their own profit from the fears or needs of their helpless countrymen. The rich gave bribes to escape their due share of the hated impost; the poor were frightened into paying unlawful demands, or punished for their resistance by the seizure and forced sale of their few goods. Meetings against a tax denounced for one reason or another by all classes and colours were held in nearly all the chief towns and stations of India; petition after petition was sent up by the Chambers of Commerce, and other bodies representing European or native interests: the newspapers teemed with instances of hardship or extortion; and the Government found itself at issue with some of its oldest and ablest officers, notably with Sir William Muir, the enlightened ruler of the North-Western Provinces.

All this, however, failed for the time to secure the removal or abatement of an impost utterly at war with native usages and modes of feeling. Lord Mayo lived, indeed, to own his error; but loyalty to his ministers and the India Office stayed his hands, and for his successor was to be reserved the credit of doing away with the obnoxious tax.

The landing of Prince Alfred, Duke of Edinburgh, at Calcutta, in the last days of 1869, served for a time to draw people's minds away from their fiscal grievances to

the progress of their princely visitor through his mother's Indian realms. His welcome everywhere was all that his own countrymen could have desired. Lord Mayo's taste for pageantry shone out in the great Calcutta Darbár, at which the Prince was invested with the Star of India amidst a picturesque and splendid gathering of English officers and native chiefs. The Prince was royally feasted by the native gentry of the capital. Hospitable Rajahs found sport for him on his upward journey. The great cities of Upper India received him with all befitting honour. His visit to Lucknow was greeted by a brilliant gathering of loyal Talukdárs. On the 7th March he played his part in the formal opening of the railway that links Jabalpur with Bombay and Allahábád. The capital of Western India entertained him with becoming splendour for several days; nor was Madras at all behindhand in her efforts to amuse and honour the departing guest.

In spite of his economical efforts, Lord Mayo gave his best energies to the pushing forward of useful public works. On the score of cheapness a new system of State railways was set on foot, to continue and complete the work begun by the guaranteed companies. The first of the new lines, the Khangaum Railway, which links the cotton marts of Berar to the port of Bombay, was opened early in 1870 by the Viceroy himself. Other lines destined to tap the salt-bearing districts in Audh, the Panjáb, and Rajputana, were begun or projected. The first sod of a State railway from Lahór to Peshawar was turned in 1870. On the older lines steady progress continued to be made. The opening of the great bridge over the Satluj in October completed the line of railway from Bombay, through Allahábád and Dehli, to Lahor. Only a link or two was yet wanting in the iron chain which bound Madras to Bombay. On the last day of 1870 the Eastern Bengal Railway was completed to Goalando, in Assam. New roads and canals were making everywhere, new schools

were founded in every province, a new department of trade and agriculture was called into being, and the opening of coal-mines in the Wardah Valley gave promise of a time when the railways in Western India would cease to depend on English coal.

The year 1871 opened with the untimely death of Sir Henry Durand, whose long and able services had only seven months before been crowned by his promotion from a seat in the Viceroy's Council to the government of the Panjáb, in the room of Sir Donald McLeod. Before the end of January the peace of India was once more broken by bands of Loshai savages, whose murderous raid across the Bengal frontier spread havoc among the outlying tea-gardens of Kachar. Troops and policemen were sent off to guard the frontier from further ravages ; but, owing to the lateness of the season, no attempt could then be made to pursue the raiders into their pathless jungles. In November, however, two columns, under Generals Bouchier and Brownlow, set out from different points on their toilsome march through a land of swamps and dense bamboo jungle, broken by a succession of steep hills, each crowned by a stockaded village. Both columns slowly forced their way through all obstacles, beating the enemy wherever they made a stand, and bearing hardships of every kind with the cheerfulness of soldiers confident in their leaders and in themselves. By the end of February, 1872, their work was over, the Haulong and Sailu chiefs had yielded at discretion, and the troops quietly marched back across their own frontier before the rains set in. Their success was largely owing to the careful arrangements planned at the outset by Lord Napier of Magdala, the Commander-in-Chief.

Meanwhile the Wáhábí plotters in Bengal had received a severe check from the trial and condemnation of Amír Khan and some of his accomplices. In the Panjáb a new danger to the public peace revealed itself in a number of

murderous outrages inflicted on harmless Mussulman butchers by Sikh fanatics of the new Kúkà sect, whose leader was Rám Singh. Condign punishment overtook the murderers; but some of their brotherhood had yet to learn the folly of defying a powerful Government. In the middle of January, 1872, while British troops from Upper India were massed in the Camp of Exercise near Dehli, a few hundred of these fanatics sought to raise the Panjáb by a sudden rush into the fort of Malodh, and a daring attack on the town of Malair-Kotla in Sirhind. Baffled in the latter attempt, they were speedily hunted down by the Deputy-Commissioner, Mr. Cowan, and the disarmed remnant were blown away from guns, with a merciless contempt of rules which evoked the just censure of the Indian Government.

In his foreign policy Lord Mayo was equally cautious and successful. When civil war raged between Sher Ali and the unfilial Yákub Khán, the Viceroy's friendly counsels bore fruit in the timely reconciliation of the combatants, and in a large concession to the just demands of Sher Ali's ablest and most popular son. An old boundary dispute between Persia and Khelat was finally settled by Sir Frederick Goldsmid, acting as umpire for the Indian Government. A like dispute between Persia and Afghánistán regarding Sistan was in course of settlement by the same officer. The King of Burmah was at length persuaded to proclaim free trade throughout his dominions. In the quarrels of petty potentates on the Persian Gulf, Lord Mayo interfered only when they seemed to imperil the interests of British subjects. Over the Indian chiefs and nobles who thronged to his frequent Darbars, his fine tact and courtly breeding conspired with a certain taste for pomp and splendour to strengthen the influence naturally due to his viceregal rank and powers.

Like many of his predecessors, he displayed a keen

appetite for hard work, and a searching eye for details, however trifling. One of his rides before breakfast would have been for most men a good day's work. Now hurrying from one frontier post to another, anon inspecting the site for a new hill-station; one while opening a new line of railway in a cotton district, at another exchanging courtesies with the high-born princes of Rājputāna or political talk with the Maharajah of Kashmir; he went everywhere, saw and heard everything for himself, and turned his new knowledge to the best account. The abuses he discovered in the department of Public Works were exposed and repressed with a single eye for the public good. Few Viceroy's have ever taken a keener or more intelligent interest in all schemes for developing India's productive wealth; nor did even Lord William Bentinck show greater zeal in the task of keeping down the growing outlay at the least possible sacrifice of the public needs.

During these years many useful and important measures became law. A Hindu Wills Act, framed by Mr. Fitzjames Stephen, Law Member of the Council, gave a legal sanction to practices more or less conflicting with old Hindu usage. The Panjāb Tenancy Act defined and guarded the rights of occupiers under former settlements. A new amendment of the Penal Code assimilated the Indian law against sedition to that of England. Bills for legalising the marriages of Brahmists and other dissenters from the prevailing creeds were carried after much debating. An important measure for dealing with the criminal tribes of India, and an Act for checking the nuisance of European loafers, were likewise passed. In the Bengal Legislature fresh safeguards were enacted on behalf of Coolie emigrants to the tea-gardens of Assam. The Government of Bengal was for the first time empowered to raise cesses on the land for the extension of roads and schools. In England an Act was passed in 1869 which limited the service of members of the Home Council to ten years, and took

away from the Council itself the right of appointing half its own number.

A yet more important measure of administrative reform was applied in 1871, when the local governments were for the first time entrusted with the management of all revenues required for local purposes. By this arrangement a due proportion of the imperial revenues was yearly allotted to the several provinces for disbursement on roads, schools, jails, police, and some other items hitherto supervised by the Central Government. Thenceforth each local governor was free to frame his own budget, to spend as he might deem best the money assigned him from the common fund, and to raise new taxes at need from his own province in aid of the purposes for which that money was to be assigned. A new guarantee for thrift in provincial outlay was thus supplied by the transfer to provincial rulers of a part of the power hitherto wielded by the Central Government alone.

Lord Mayo's active and useful career was suddenly cut short by the knife of an assassin on a remote island in the Bay of Bengal. On the 24th January, 1872, he embarked from Calcutta on a tour of inspection whose promised goal was Orissa. Some days of busy sight-seeing were spent at Rangoon and Maulmain. On the 8th February he reached Port Blair, to examine for himself the new convict settlement in the Andaman Islands. After a hard day's work he reached the pier, where a boat was waiting to carry him and his party aboard their vessel. The brief twilight of the tropics had already faded into night. In a moment an unseen convict, a Pathán who had been transported for murder done in the Panjáb, sprang out of the darkness, and, before help could reach his victim, the stroke had been dealt which deprived India of an able ruler, and the native princes of a wise and honoured friend. In another moment the murderer was pinned by those around him, but his sharp knife and

strong arm had done their work. Half-an-hour afterwards Lord Mayo breathed his last, a victim to the frenzy of a young savage soured by brooding over his fancied wrongs, and reckless of the means he took to gratify at once his thirst for vengeance and his fanaticism.

The tidings of Lord Mayo's death thrilled all India with horror and genuine grief. All classes of his subjects mourned the loss of a ruler whose winning manners and honest zeal for the public good had secured the affection or the respect even of those who disliked some parts of his public policy. Hindus and Mohammadans alike came forward to express their loyal sympathy with the widow of a Viceroy whose strong good sense had bidden fair to undo the mischief caused by his earlier fiscal measures, and whose efforts to redress or abate Mohammadan grievances were already bearing fruit when the hand of a Mussulman savage laid him low. On the princes and nobles of India his death came like a personal bereavement. Sindia's exclamation, "I have made and lost a friend," bore touching witness to the kindly tact and skill with which Lord Mayo won the hearts and moulded the policy of the native rulers. As a personal friend, indeed, he was mourned not only by the highest in the land, but by all who had ever felt the charm of personal intercourse with perhaps the most genial statesman of his day.

For a few months his place was worthily filled by Lord Napier, the retiring Governor of Madras. Early in May, however, the new Viceroy, Lord Northbrook, took up the reins of government at Calcutta, laden with the fruits of a long previous training in the India Office, the Admiralty, the War Office, and one or two other departments of the State. His new career may be said to have begun at Simla, where, in compliance with recent usage, he and his Council passed the hot and rainy season of 1872. One of his first acts betrayed a becoming care to walk in the steps of his latest predecessors. The Russian conquerors of

Bokhara were about to punish the Khan of Khiva, the ancient Kharizm, for the many outrages inflicted year by year on Russian subjects by his man-stealing and murdering Turkmans. An envoy from Khiva besought Lord Northbrook to step in between his master and the coming danger. Lord Northbrook answered by a friendly message counselling the Khán to offer timely amends for the misdeeds laid to his account. Had his advice been honestly followed, perhaps the Russian advance to Khiva in 1873 might never have taken place.

After some months spent in useful if unobtrusive work, the new Viceroy set out in October on a tour of inquiry through nearly all the chief towns of Northern, Western, and Central India, from Lahór to Bombay and Jabalpúr. Darbárs were held at several places on his road, which brought him into friendly contact with a host of princes and great nobles north of the Tápti, from Patiála to Indór. The two great Marátha feudatories, Holkar and Sindia, vied with each other in the splendour of the welcome given by the one at Bombay, by the other at Barwai, to their viceregal guest. In those two months of constant travel Lord Northbrook laid in fresh stores of practical knowledge on all the leading questions of the day.

Foremost among these was the question of taxation. In a populous country ruled by a handful of strangers from afar, it behoves the rulers above all things to abstain from laying heavy or unwonted burdens on the subject millions. The murmurs provoked throughout India by the fiscal experiments of late years, especially by the income-tax of 1870, had not been silenced by the subsequent lowering of that unpopular impost. Even Lord Mayo's concession of larger powers to the local governments became, in the popular fancy, a mere blind for further inroads on the tax-paying classes. From the first, however, Lord Northbrook set himself to grapple with the salient causes of popular discontent. A careful inquiry into all

the taxes and cesses levied throughout India issued in the collection of a large body of facts and opinions, which served to guide and strengthen the Viceroy's efforts in the field of financial reform. The lessons he had thus been learning emboldened him in March, 1873, to abolish the income-tax altogether, to proclaim the early enforcement of a road-cess in Bengal, and to warn the local governments against any further increase of the local burdens.

In the early part of the same year the excitement lately caused, both in India and at home, by the progress of Russian arms and influence in Central Asia, was in some measure allayed by the readiness of the Russian Government to acknowledge and respect the new line of frontier laid down by the India Office for Afghanistan, as the limit of English influence in the regions bordering the Panjab. Later interviews between Lord Northbrook and a special envoy from Kabul issued in a renewal of the friendly assurances exchanged between Lord Mayo and Sher Ali at the Ambála Darbār. In the interests of Indian trade with Turkistan, Mr. Forsyth in 1873 led a second embassy to the court of our good friend Mohanmad Yakub, the firmly established ruler of Kashgar, Khotan, and other provinces not long wrested from Chinese rule. Forsyth's success on this occasion was to bear no lasting fruit, for a few years later fortune turned against our new ally, and a Chinese Viceroy once more ruled over Eastern Turkistan. Another mission, headed by Sir Bartle Frere, had set out from England, towards the close of 1872, for the purpose of checking the rampant slave-trade along the eastern coast of Africa, by means of fresh treaties with the Sultan of Zanzibar and the adjacent chiefs. It was not till after the leader of the mission had returned home that the reluctant Sultan was coaxed or frightened into joining the new crusade against a traffic which his own connivance and the cunning of not a few Indian traders had done so much to foster and extend.

In the midst of his official labours Lord Northbrook found himself confronted by a great and growing danger. During the rainy season of 1873 the greater part of Bengal and Bahar was suffering from a drought which boded a wide-spread failure of the autumn crops. Early in September the warning notes of impending famine were sounded by Sir George Campbell, the energetic Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal. Lord Northbrook hurried down at once from Simla to aid his lieutenant in fighting against a famine which might else rage unchecked among twenty-five million souls. The fight was long and arduous, for the winter rainfall proved too partial to do much good; but the Viceroy was determined to spare no effort in the task of bringing food to the hungry and saving human lives. When Campbell's health, long failing, broke down under the strain, Sir Richard Temple, then Finance Minister, took his place. Vast stores of rice, bought up by Government officers in Burmah, were shipped to Calcutta and distributed through the suffering districts; relief committees sought out the weak and helpless, and those who were ashamed to beg; and relief-works were promptly opened in every centre of distress. Temple himself spared no pains and knew no rest in the discharge of his multifarious duties; while a picked staff of officers, white and dusky, worked away like heroes in aid of the object which their leaders had most at heart.

In May, 1874, the famine reached its height. But the Viceroy's forethought, aided by Temple's supervising energy and the zeal of all who worked under him, kept the people alive, until the monsoon rains of July and August sent the most of them flocking from the relief-works back to their wonted labours in the fields. By the middle of October all fear of further suffering was dispelled by the tokens of returning plenty. For once no epidemic disease followed in the famine's wake. Only twenty-two persons in all were known to have died of sheer starvation;

a result which loudly testifies to the thoroughness with which Lord Northbrook's policy of saving life at whatever cost was carried out. Of the six millions sterling spent on famine relief, no small part went towards the making of new roads, branch railways, and embankments for canals. In another twelvemonth all traces of the mischief caused by the famine had disappeared. The foreign trade of Bengal was steadily increasing, and her land revenue yielded its normal amount.

As Lieutenant-Governor of that great province, Sir G. Campbell had proved himself a wise statesman and a vigorous reformer. He was the first to carry out in Bengal those principles of popular instruction which had already borne good fruit in Bombay and the North-West. In the course of three years and a-half his province was covered with primary schools, each furnished with trained masters, at a trifling increase of the total cost to the State. Tests of bodily as well as mental fitness were applied to candidates for the Native Civil Service. His scheme of "parallel promotion" in the higher ranks of the Covenanted Service left every civil officer free to rise in that branch of the service which best suited his own tastes or his previous training. He carried through his Council a bill which compelled the Zamindars of Bengal to contribute something towards the maintenance of roads and schools. Under his able guidance the first regular census of the people in his province was carried out in 1872. The agrarian troubles in Eastern Bengal brought out alike his sympathies with a rack-rented peasantry, and his firmness in repressing overt disorder. Of the administrative burden which had lain upon Campbell's shoulders some part was lifted from those of his successor; for in 1874 the border provinces of Assam, Kachar, and Silhet, were handed over to a chief commissioner responsible only to the Viceroy himself.

In the same year Sir John Strachey took over the

government of the North-West Provinces from the scholarly and zealous Sir William Muir. The Revenue and Rent Acts, which Muir had lately carried through the Viceroy's Legislative Council, besides other improvements in the land-law of the province, secured to a large class of tenants the right of holding at a fixed rent for ten years. The timely action of the Indian Government averted a Santhal outbreak against the money-lenders of Bengal. Risings of peasantry against the village usurers of Puna and Ahmadnagar troubled for a time the peace of Bombay, then governed by Sir Philip Wodehouse. The report of a Commission ordered by Lord Northbrook to inquire into the cause of these outbreaks showed what reason the peasants of the Dakhan sometimes had for turning upon those who plundered them in the name of the law. In due time they also were to obtain a lawful remedy for the wrongs thus brought to light.

Early in 1875 the Gaikwar of Baroda, Malhar Rao, whose misrule had sorely taxed the Viceroy's endurance, was at length arraigned before a mixed Commission of Englishmen and Natives of high standing, on the charge of attempting to poison his Resident, Colonel Phayre. At the end of a long trial the three English Commissioners found him guilty, while their Native colleagues pronounced more or less confidently in the Gaikwar's favour. In compliance with orders from Lord Salisbury, then Minister for India, Lord Northbrook formally deposed the Gaikwar, not for the outrage on Colonel Phayre, but for all his past misconduct, and his late disregard of former warnings. A new Gaikwar was installed at Baroda, under the regency of Jamna Bai, and one of the ablest of Native statesmen, Sir Madhara Rao, who had done good service in Travankor and at the court of Holkar, was appointed to rule the State as Chief Minister, with Philip Melville for his Resident.

The misrule in Baroda formed a rare exception to the good things reported from most of the Native States.

These were no longer as they had been in Dalhousie's days. The sons and nephews of Rajahs and Sardars were learning to ride and play cricket in schools managed by English masters. In the high schools and colleges English teaching was steadily making its way. Many of the Native princes were learning to spend money freely on schools, hospitals, and public works. In several States of Rajputana and Central India justice was administered on pure English principles. Holkar was zealous in founding cotton mills, and otherwise developing the natural resources of Indor. The rulers of Travankor were liberal patrons of all Western culture, and the schools in that southern kingdom might bear comparison with those of any province in British India.

In the higher offices of the State Native agency was steadily gaining ground. Native judges took their seats in the High Court of more than one province; Native gentlemen appeared on Municipal Committees, on the bench of magistrates, and in the Legislative Councils Natives thronged the higher ranks of the Uncovenanted Service, and two or three Native candidates passed by open competition into the favoured Civil Service itself. On the other hand, Western ideas and influences were gradually leavening the Native mind. Societies were founded in many places for the purpose of discussing questions of social or political reform. The great Brahmo reformer, Keshab Chandra Sen, taught his followers a religion deeply permeated by Christian modes of thought. Many Natives readily sent their children to Mission schools. Scholarly Natives wrote in good English on subjects which few Western writers could have handled more ably. Some of the leading Hindus had begun to educate their daughters in the learning of modern Europe, and Native ladies began to exchange visits with their English female friends. Brahman Pandits discovered that a Hindu might cross the sea without losing caste, that the

eating of flesh was not forbidden by the Vedas, and that a Hindu widow might marry again without deadly sin.

By the untimely death of Lord Hobart in April, 1875, Madras lost a Governor whose services to his people it would be hard to overrate. He had opened schools for the special use of Mohammadan children, and had fought, not wholly in vain, against the Viceroy's scheme for enhancing the salt-duties of his province in order to lower those of Upper India. Later in the year Lord Northbrook's Council ordained a large reform of the Customs Tariff. Thenceforth export duties were to be levied only on indigo, rice, and lac; of the import duties some were repealed and the remainder greatly reduced. In spite of famine charges and a falling exchange, the revenue for this year was to yield a net surplus of a million and one-third over an outlay of 49½ millions.

The visit of the Prince of Wales to India towards the close of 1875 was an event which stirred large classes of the people to unwonted enthusiasm. They welcomed him as their future sovereign, the heir of that royal lady who had first claimed their homage in the proclamation of 1858. His progress everywhere from Bombay to Kashmir was one long triumph. Never had Calcutta beheld a pageant so gorgeous as the Chapter of the Bath held by His Royal Highness on the great Maidan. The princes and nobles of India vied with each other in the costliness of their presents and the splendour of their hospitalities. Their intercourse with a guest so gracious quickened their sense of personal loyalty towards the British Crown.

In his dealings with the Border States Lord Northbrook showed himself a friendly and forbearing neighbour. He succeeded in restoring peace between the Khan of Khilat and his unruly Sardars. His attempt to send a Mission through Burmah overland to Shanghai was early frustrated by Chinese treachery. Sher Ali, the Afghan Amir, kept him duly informed of every letter

that passed between him and the Russian Governor at Turkistan. But the Viceroy's views on Afghan policy were not those of the Home Government. Their proposal to place a British Resident at Herat was met by Lord Northbrook with grave remonstrances and well-reasoned warnings against a course so hateful to our Afghan ally. When Lord Salisbury finally urged him to find or make some pretext for sending a Mission to Kabul, Lord Northbrook declined to embark on an enterprise which involved so dangerous a departure from the policy of twenty years past. Having to choose between a breach of discipline and the breach of treaty pledges, Lord Northbrook resigned office on some plea of ill-health, and turned his face homewards in April, 1876, amidst the outspoken regrets of all classes. As a leading Native journal well said, he "could not be considered a brilliant ruler, for he made no war, annexed no territory, committed no plunder; but he gave the land rest."

CHAPTER IV.

FROM LORD LYTTON TO THE MARQUIS OF LANSDOWNE—
1876—1889.

On the 12th April, 1876, the new Viceroy, Lord Lytton, landed in Calcutta, and entered with a light heart on the task cut out for him by the Government at home. Faithful to the instructions sent out by Lord Salisbury, he at once requested Sher Ali to receive a British envoy at Kabul or elsewhere. The arrival of a new Viceroy and the assumption of a new title by the Queen of England were the pretexts assigned for a move so contrary to all existing pledges. In spite of the Amir's reluctance to walk into the trap thus laid for him, Lord Lytton continued to press him with new demands backed by veiled menaces and fine-sounding offers. Sher Ali was reminded that the British Government "could break him as a reed"; that his true position between England and Russia was that of the earthen pipkin between two iron pots. At last the Amir agreed to the holding of a conference at Peshawar.

In the last days of January, 1877, the two envoys, Sir Lewis Pelly and Nur Mohammad, opened a conference, the very bases of which remained in dispute. The Afghan envoy pleaded long and earnestly against the formidable risks involved in the admission of British officers into Herat and Kandahar. Sher Ali's throne would be endangered, and the British officers might be killed. Pelly insisted on compliance with Lord Lytton's demands. After his envoy's death in March, Sher Ali was on the

point of giving way, when Pelly, by the Viceroy's orders, brought the conference to a sudden close. Soon afterwards the Viceroy's Vakil, or Native agent, was recalled from Kabul.

Meanwhile Lord Lytton had taken another long step in furtherance of the new policy favoured by the powers at home. In November, 1876, a British garrison was finally planted in the fortified town of Kwatta, which overlooks the Shal valley and commands the road from Kandahar to Sind through the Bolán Pass. The right to occupy such a post was implied in the Treaty of 1854; but the wisdom of occupying a place so far beyond the wild mountains which guard our Sind frontier had been strenuously denied by nearly all the best judges from Lord Lawrence to Sir Harry Lumsden and Sir Herbert Edwardes. Nor can it be doubted that the presence of a British outpost in such a quarter deepened the Amir's distrust of British friendliness and good faith.

On the first day of 1877 the Imperial Assemblage, in honour of the new-styled Empress of India, was held on the memorable ridge that looks over the city of Delhi. Amidst a vast and gorgeous array of princes, grandees, British officers and ladies, Lord Lytton took his seat in the huge pavilion, to hear the proclamation of the new imperial title which the Queen had deigned to assume. Its last words were caught up by a grand salute of guns and musketry and the crashing music of thirty regimental bands. The proclamation was read aloud amidst smaller gatherings in all the chief cities and stations of India. Honours were showered in all directions; a new Order of the Indian Empire was proclaimed; the rulers of Gwalior and Kashmir were gazetted generals in the British army; and fifteen thousand prisoners were set free.

Amidst all this splendour and excitement a dark cloud of famine was breaking over Southern India. By the end of 1876 vast numbers of people in Madras, Bombay, and

Maisor were already feeling the pinch of a calamity far more prolonged and wide-spread than the recent famine in Bengal. In July, 1877, two million people in the Madras Presidency alone were receiving State relief in the shape either of wages for special work, or of food and alms. By September the numbers were still greater. The distress continued even into the following year. In Maisor it became almost unmanageable. In spite of the vast machinery organised everywhere for famine relief, in spite of the help afforded by the railways, of all the precautions taken by the supreme and local governments, of the zeal and self-devotion displayed by a whole army of hardworking overseers, the total of deaths from famine and disease amounted to five millions and a quarter, while the whole cost of famine relief was reckoned at eleven millions sterling. At one time the scarcity spread over parts of Northern India, accounting for the loss of another million lives in the North-West Provinces alone.

In order to provide against future famines Lord Lytton's Government in 1878 decreed the levying of a licence tax on trades, and of a special cess on the land in Northern India, while they enhanced the salt tax in Bombay and Madras. The proceeds of the new imposts were to form a famine insurance fund of a million and a-half a year, not a rupee of which should be applied to other uses than the payment of famine debts or the making of "protective" works, such as canals and branch railways.

Unfortunately the new fund was soon to be swallowed up in the expenses of another Afghan war. In the spring of 1878 a picked force of 8,000 Sepoys was shipped off from India to Malta, as a kind of menace to Russia, whose armies were encamped within easy reach of Constantinople. The Russian countermove was made from Samarkhand, in the shape of an embassy to the Amir of Kabul. Before Colonel Stoletoff arrived at Kabul, the treaty of peace between Russia and Turkey had already been signed at

Berlin. Nothing came of the embassy to Kabul but an exchange of mere civilities. Lord Lytton, however, demanded that Sher Ali should forthwith receive an English embassy also. In spite of the Amir's protests and pleadings for delay, Sir Neville Chamberlain with a strong escort set forth in September from Peshawar. At Ali Masjid in the Khaibar Pass, one of his officers was firmly but politely required to turn back by the Afghan commandant.

This rebuff was telegraphed to England as the forcible repulse of a British embassy from an Afghan outpost. Lord Lytton prepared for war, but by orders from the Home Government the Amir was granted a few weeks' grace. His letter of apology miscarried, and on the 21st November three columns of British troops advanced from three different quarters into Afghanistan. Before the winter had set in, Jalalabad and Kandahar were in British keeping. Sher Ali fled from Kabul and died soon afterwards in a corner of his realm. In the following April his son Yakub Khan signed the Treaty of Gandamak, which gave India a new frontier beyond the passes, and guaranteed the safety of a British Resident at Kabul.

For a few months all went smoothly in Afghanistan; but it was only "the torrent's smoothness ere it dash below." On the 3rd September, 1879, the British Residency, where Sir Louis Cavagnari had been installed in July, was attacked by a furious Afghan mob, including hundreds of the Amir's soldiers. The Amir himself was, or seemed to be, powerless to interfere. In a few hours the Residency was gutted and all its inmates and defenders dead. Early in October Roberts led his troops from the Kuram Valley on Kabul, while Stewart once more marched to Kandahar. The victory of Charasiah gave Roberts full possession of Kabul. More than once that winter his troops were fiercely assailed by swarms of insurgent Afghans. Yakub Khan gave himself up to

Roberts and was sent off a State prisoner to Peshawar. His brother Ayub held Herat in his name, while other chiefs rallied to the cause of Yakub's infant son. Anarchy and violence reigned everywhere outside Kabul and the province of Kandahar. On his march from Kandahar to Kabul in the spring of 1880, Stewart had much ado to beat off a large body of Afghan fanatics in the fight of Ahmad Khel.

He had hardly joined hands with Roberts at Kabul when a new Ministry came into power at home, pledged to undo Lord Lytton's aggressive policy in Afghanistan. Lord Lytton therefore at once resigned his post in April, 1880, leaving behind him the legacy of a heavy debt incurred for no good reason, and the memory of a severe law passed against the Native Indian Press. In March, 1878, he had forced through his Council an Act which placed Native newspapers under an almost Russian censorship. Of other measures enacted during his rule, the most beneficent was the Act of 1879, which insured to the peasantry of Southern India a sensible relief from the greed of ruthless money-lenders, and the one-sided action of the civil courts. Thenceforth, for one thing, the peasant's holding could not be wholly taken away from him, even for a term of years, until all means of inquiry and arbitration had failed; nor might the peasant be imprisoned in execution of a decree for debt. In 1879 the right of Natives to a larger share in the government of their own country was acknowledged by the creation of a Statutory Civil Service, the candidates for which were to be selected by the Local Governments. A number of appointments hitherto reserved for the Covenanted Service were to be allotted yearly to civilians of the new class.

Lord Lytton's place was filled by the Marquis of Ripon, who, as Lord De Grey, had once for a few months been Secretary of State for India. Sher Ali's nephew and old antagonist, Abdurrahman Khan, had already been sum-

moned from his place of exile to the vacant throne of Kabul. In July the new Amir was installed by British officers, and our troops were ordered to prepare for leaving his capital. By that time, however, Ayub Khan was marching with his Heratis across the Helmand. A British brigade sent out against him from Kandahar was routed with heavy slaughter at Maiwand, and great fear was felt for the safety of Kandahar itself.

Happily the troops which Stewart had brought to Kabul were still there. Nine thousand of these under the dashing Frederick Roberts marched off without delay, traversed three hundred miles of rugged country in twenty days, and on the 1st September drove Ayub's army, after some sharp fighting, in wild rout from the neighbourhood of Kandahar. In the following year Lord Ripon withdrew the last of his troops from Afghan territory. The Treaty of Gandamak became almost a dead letter. No successor to Cavagnari was ever forced upon the Afghan Amir, nor was any return attempted to the vexatious policy of Lord Lytton's day. Ere long Ayub was driven out of Herat, and Abdurrahman reigned in peace over all the realms of Dost Mohammad. Of the twenty millions which India had expended on the late war, one-fourth was repaid her from the Imperial treasury.

Under Lord Ripon's peaceful and progressive rule India moved briskly forward along all the lines of organic growth. A series of good seasons fostered agriculture, stimulated trade, and enabled the Government to fill its treasuries without recourse to new taxes. Public works of all kinds were prosecuted with increasing vigour and with every promise of ultimate advantage. The railway system was steadily developed, especially in respect of the new State lines. Several of the old guaranteed lines had begun to yield a substantial profit. India's foreign trade rose in value from a hundred and twenty to a hundred and fifty millions a year. A general lowering of the salt-duties

to one uniform rate in 1882 entailed no permanent loss of revenue, while it proved a real boon to millions of poor rayats. In the same year were abolished the last of those duties on cotton imports, some of which had disappeared in Lord Lytton's time. The import duties on all articles except arms, alcoholic drinks, salt, and opium, were also done away. Of exports since 1880 rice alone continued to pay duty.

In everything that concerned the moral and social well-being of his subjects Lord Ripon took a lively interest. In 1882 a select commission, with Dr. William Hunter for its president, was appointed to inquire into the working of the educational system first organised in 1854. The inquiry resulted in a well-considered scheme for limiting the State outlay on the higher education, in order to improve and develop the still backward system of primary and middle schools. The training of the people for the due management of their local affairs was the object of a radical reform in the municipal system of India. The Municipal Committees in almost every province were remodelled on a basis of popular election, such as the great capitals had long possessed. By another enactment the Native Press was restored to its former freedom.

Lord Ripon's zeal for even-handed justice brought him, once at least, into sharp collision with the bulk of his own countrymen. Several Natives had lately made their way into the Covenanted Service. With the Viceroy's sanction Mr. Ilbert, Law Member of his Council, drew up a Bill which extended to Native rural magistrates the right of trying all criminal cases that came before the district courts. The Europeans in India raised a furious outcry at this new attack on the privileges of the dominant race, and a storm of obloquy raged loud and long against the Viceroy himself. Lord Ripon saw the need of some compromise, and the Ilbert Bill in a modified form at length became law. The rancour of his assailants endeared him

all the more visibly to Natives of every class. The spontaneous outburst of popular gratitude which everywhere cheered his last journey through Upper India in 1881 far surpassed in cumulative strength and fervour anything seen or heard by any former Viceroy.

Three years earlier the province of Maisôr, which had flourished for half a century under British rule, was formally handed over, by command of the India Office, to a youthful scion of the old Native dynasty, which Lord W. Bentinck had to all seeming dethroned for ever. Towards the end of 1881 Lord Ripon's place was filled by the Earl of Dufferin, who had already won high honours both as a statesman and a diplomatist. For the new Viceroy was reserved the credit of carrying through its last stages a long-debated measure of reform in the rent law of Bengal. The Bengal Tenancy Act of 1885 gave clearer sanctions and a much wider scope to the principle of tenant-right enforced by the Rent Act of 1859. Fixity of tenure and fair rents were secured thenceforth, as a rule, to every rayat who had retained his holding for three years, while a tenant of twelve years' standing could not have his rent enhanced on any pretext. Two years later a fair measure of tenant-right was secured to the rayats of Oudh.

Matters of less peaceful import were already engrossing Lord Dufferin's attention. English and Russian officers had been commissioned to define the northern boundaries of Afghanistan. Between the two parties arose disagreements and misunderstandings which at one time threatened the peace of Asia and Europe. Happily the storm-clouds were dispelled by prudent statesmanship. The Amir of Kabul gave due heed to the Viceroy's counsels; and the marking out of the Afghan frontier was finally carried through without any further hitch. Meanwhile fresh trouble had been brewing on the side of Upper Burmah, where the long misrule and virtual hostility of

the savage king Theebaw had brought matters to a deadlock. The need for British interference was accentuated by the rumour of French intrigues and the progress of French arms towards the Burmese border. Before the end of 1885 Mandalay, the capital, was occupied by British troops, the king himself was a prisoner in our hands, and the greater part of his country was held by British garrisons. In February, 1886, the issue which Dalhousie had long since foreseen became an historic fact. The Alompra dynasty ceased to rule over the wide tracts of mountain and forest which divide Pegu from the Chinese frontier; and the half-conquered country was declared a British province, to be ruled by the Viceroy through a Chief Commissioner, aided by a select staff of British officers. It was no easy task to establish peace and order in a province as large as France, infested with rebellious chiefs and an armed banditti of unemployed soldiers. In three years, however, that task was nearly accomplished, and when Lord Dufferin quitted India the foundations of civilised order and social well-being were already laid in the youngest province of his empire.

But for the lingering troubles in Burmah, and the small campaigns of 1888 in the Black Mountain and on the borders of Tibet, the peace of India remained unbroken during the last years of Lord Dufferin's rule. The Burmese war, with all that came of it; the need of strengthening the defences of the North-Western frontier; a large increase of the Indian Army; and a steady fall in the exchange value of the rupee—all this involved an outlay of many millions sterling, a part of which had to be defrayed by new or increased taxation, and by the appropriation of funds designed for local and special purposes. In spite of a growing revenue, of a flourishing export trade, and of a strict economy in administrative details, there was a deficit of six millions on the total income of four years. Several of the Native princes

proved their loyalty by offering large sums of money in free gift towards the cost of the frontier defences, or by granting loans on liberal terms to the Supreme Government. In the Jubilee year, 1887, some of them, including Holkar, crossed the sea to pay their homage to the great Queen-Empress, and to bear their part in the ceremonial pomps and festivities which crowned the first half-century of her benign rule. In India the Jubilee festival was marked by the release of 25,000 prisoners from the jails, while Sindhia's heart was gladdened by the free surrender of that historic fortress of Gwalior which our troops had garrisoned ever since the Mutiny.

Meanwhile the leaven of English influence and example was working more and more freely upon Native habits and institutions. The princes and chiefs of Rajputana pledged themselves to curtail the ruinous cost of marriage and funeral rites among their own people, and to fight against the time-honoured practice of child-marriage. Englishwomen were doing good work as teachers or as doctors among the inmates of many a Zenana. Numbers of young Indians flocked over to England for the purpose of studying law or medicine, or other branches of practical knowledge, or of gaining an insight into the social and political life of Englishmen at home. Two or three men of ripe culture and strong ambition stood forth as candidates for seats in the British House of Commons. In India a great "National Congress," composed of several hundred delegates—Hindu, Mohammadan, Parsi—from all parts of the country, met once a year in one of the great Indian cities, to discuss important questions, social and political, in a spirit by no means hostile to the British rule. If some of their language wanted measure, if their demands were not always reasonable, they expressed at any rate the thoughts, desires, ambitions of a class which for many years had been nourished on the strong mental food supplied by their English teachers—a class which was

yearly growing in numbers and self-respect, and which had already learned from our example the policy of concerted action for a common end. The National Congress, however misleading its title or faulty its methods, was becoming a fact which no prudent Viceroy could overlook.

That the time was ripe for anything like true representative government, Lord Dufferin would not allow. But the time, he held, was come for giving the Natives a larger share in the government of their own country. Acting on the report of a special commission, he threw open to Native candidates three hundred of the higher posts hitherto reserved for the Covenantal Service. And before leaving India he had strongly advised the Home Government to admit more Native members into each of the legislative councils. During his rule a careful inquiry, begun under Lord Lytton, had been completed, into the condition of the people in every province; an inquiry which tends to show that nearly all classes are somewhat better off now than they were thirty years ago. The growth of population in the more crowded districts has become a source of far greater anxiety than the recurrence of a wide-spread famine. The true remedy for over-population can be found only when the habits and feelings of the people have undergone a radical change.

Early in 1889 the Marquis of Dufferin and Ava made over the reins of power to his successor, the Marquis of Lansdowne. He had done his duty well and faithfully amidst untoward circumstances; and he left behind him a fair prospect of unclouded peace, with all the blessings which peace, upheld by a strong but kindly despotism, can bring to birth.

THE END.

INDEX.

- Abyssinian campaign, the, under General Napier, 381.
- Abdurahman Khan, installed as Afghan Amir, 412.
- Adam, Mr., his policy towards the Press, 301.
- Afghanistan, British invasion of, 317, &c.; again invaded in 1878, 410.
- Agra, capture of, by the British, 282.
- Ahmadabad rescued by Akbar, 111; capture of, by the Maráthas, 169.
- Ahmad Khan (Abdáli Afghan), afterwards Ahmad Shah, invades India—repulsed by the Moghals, 167; conquers the Panjab—routs the Maráthas at Panípat, 175.
- Ahmad Shah (Emperor of Dehli), blinded and deposed by Gházi-ud-din, 168.
- Ahmadnagar, early sieges of, 113; capture of, by General Wellesley, 281.
- Ajmir, conquest of, 159.
- Akbar (Emperor), defeats Hemu, 107; conquers Gujarat, Bengal, and Kashmir, 110-112; death and character of, 116-119.
- Albar Khan defeated by General Sale, 324.
- Alambágh, storming of the, 366.
- Ala-ud-din (Sultan) ascends the throne of Dehli, 56; his conquests in the Dakhan, 57, &c.; his home policy, 59, &c.
- Albuquerque, General, first Portuguese Viceroy in India, 96; his supersession and death, 97.
- Alexander the Great crosses the Indus, 28; defeats Porus, 29.
- Alfred, Prince, his visit to Calcutta—his progress through India, 392, 393.
- Algah, capture of, by General Lake, 281.
- Aliwal, battle of, 332.
- Allahabad, state of, during the mutiny, 359; grand darbar at, 380.
- Ambéla, storming of, 383.
- Amboyna, massacre at, 128.
- Ambur, brave defence of, by Captain Calvert, 219.
- Amír Khan (the Wahabi), trial of, 394.
- Amherst, Lord, appointed Governor-General, 301; his war with Burmah, 305; his retirement, 308.
- Andaman Islands (The), murder of Lord Mayo at, 397.
- Angria (pirate Lord of Kolaba), Maráthá warfare with, 163; he is defeated by the English, 177.
- Anwar-ud-din, Nawab, lays claim to Madras, 179; his defeat by Dupleix, 180.
- Appa Sahib, his intrigues, dethronement, and death, 259.
- Arkot, siege of, 185.
- Ashti, battle of, 299.
- Asirgarh, capture of, 81, 281.
- Assa, battle of, 281.
- Assam, conquest of, 304; placed under a Chief Commissioner, 102.
- Argum, battle of, 282.
- Auckland, Lord, appointed Governor-General—takes part with Shah Shuja, 315; his foreign policy and retirement, 315-322.
- Audh, cessions made to, 226; Hastings's treaty with the Nawab of, 218; annexation of, 346; mutiny in, 358.
- Aurangzib, his invasion of the Dakhan, 132; usurps his father's throne, 134; his wars in the Dakhan and Northern India, 140-147; death and character, 148, &c.

- Aynb Khan defeats the British at Maiwand, 412; routed by Roberts at Kandahar, 412; driven out of Herat, 412.
- Azun, Prince, claims the Moghal throne—his defeat and death, 151.
- Báhar conquers Kalat the Panjáb, and Hindustan, 76, 77; his death, 101.
- Badrí Sen, battle of, 331.
- Bahawal, battle of, 332.
- Bahar, revolts in, 102; revolt during the mutiny of 1857, 370; famine in, 101.
- Báir Rao (Peshwa), his conquests, 160-162; his death, 163.
- Báji Rao II., his intrigues, 268; his treaty with the English, 280.
- Báji Rao (Peshwa), 168, &c.
- Bálau, King of Dehli, 51.
- Balkh, conquest of, but abandoned by its conquerors, 139.
- Bándás, insurrection in, 248.
- Bangalore, fall of, 255.
- Báramahá conquest of the, 255.
- Báaver, Mohammedan rising at, 311.
- Barlow, Sir George, acts as Viceroy instead of Lord Cornwallis, 287; transfer to Madras, 290.
- Baroda, trial and deposition of the Gaikwar, 103.
- Barrack in India, extensive building of, 389.
- Baxar, battle of, 209, 210.
- Báhrám Khan (General in Akbar's army) rules at Dehli, revolts against Akbar, and is murdered on a pilgrimage, 107, 108.
- Béar, revolts in, 65, 70, 111; occupation of, 198; erected into a Presidency and Lieutenant-Governorship, 153, 318; great famine in, 221; arrival of missionaries in, 289; permanent settlement of, 261; Bengal Rent Act, 380; the famine of 1873-4, 101; improvements in, under Sir G. Campbell, 102; the Tenancy Act of 1885, 411.
- Bentinck, Lord W., recalled from Madras, 259; appointed Governor-General, 308; history of his administration, 309, &c.; retirement, 313.
- Béat surrendered to Morad, 113; treaty with the English, 281, 312.
- Bernadotte, Sergeant (future king of Sweden), captured by the English, 211.
- Betwah, battle of—defeat of Tántia Topi, 371.
- Bhamo, mission to, 390.
- Bhártpur, siege of, and peace with the English, 281, 285; capture of—dethronement of the Rajah, 308.
- Bhopal, British Alliance with, 297.
- Bhotán, war with, 383, 384.
- Bijápur, invasion of, 139-143; conquest of, by Aurangzib, 115.
- Bijgarh, capture of, 218.
- Black Hole of Calcutta, 190; fate of the English prisoners immured therein, 191.
- Black Mountain, campaign in, 415.
- Brahma Samaj, sect of the, 21.
- Brydon, Dr., his adventures in Kabul, and safe arrival at Jalalabad, 315.
- Bundalkhand, revolts in, 102; English victories in, 367, 371.
- Burmah, first war with, 212; second war, capture of Rangoon—annexation of Pegu, 311; (British) under Sir Arthur Phayre, 386; conquest of Upper Burmah, 415.
- Burnes, Sir Alexander, mission to Kabul, 316; his murder, 319.
- Cachár, annexation of, 304, 306; raids in, resulting in the Dushai war, 331.
- Calcutta, foundation of, 152; arrival of Warren Hastings as president at—transfer of the seat of government to, 223.
- Calcutta Medical College, institution of the, 301.
- Campbell, Col., his final advance on Ava, 301.
- Campbell, Sir Colin, relief and capture of Lucknow during the mutiny by, 367, 370.
- Campbell, Sir George, his administrative labours in Bengal, 402.

- Canals, 317; and irrigation works, 72, 347.
- Canning, Lord, Governor-General, 350; measures to suppress the mutiny of 1857, 358; his merciful policy, 368; "sanads" granted by him, 379; retirement, death, and character of, 380, 381.
- Carnac, Colonel, takes command of the English army against the Maráthas, 210; defeat of Sindia by, 237.
- Carnatic, the, invaded by the Pathans, 58; and the Maráthas, 166; French invasion, 189; revenues of the, assigned to the English, 212; absorption of the, 271.
- Cantley, Colonel, constructs the engineering works of Ganges Canal in India, 347.
- Cawnpore, massacre of the garrison at, during the mutiny, 37; re-entered by the English on the defeat of the mutineers, 359; Brigadier-General Windham's defence of, 367.
- Central Provinces of India, reforms of Sir R. Temple in the, 386.
- Chamberlain, Sir Neville, repulse of his Mission to Kabul, 119.
- Chámpánér, capture of, 102.
- Chanderi, capture of, 100, 371.
- Chauth, the, a Marátha tax first levied by Shivaji, 111.
- Chilianwála, battle of—defeat of the Sikhs, 337.
- Chingiz Khan invades Kharizm and Kabul, 51.
- Chin Kilich Khan appointed viceroy at Delhi—suppresses a revolt in Gujarat—retires to the Dakhan, 158; attacks the Maráthas near Bopál—surrenders Malwa, 159, 160; suppresses his son's revolt—his death, 166.
- Chitor, capture of—self-devotion of the Rajput garrison, 109.
- Chunar, capture of, 103; English repulsed from, 210.
- Civil Service of India, the, placed open to public competition, 348.
- Cleik, Sir, G., energetic proceedings of, at *Lahor*, 320, 322.
- Clive, Colonel, his defence of Arkot, 185, 186; proceeds to Trichinopoly, 187; retakes Calcutta, 192; marches against Chandagor, which surrenders, 193; capture of Katwa, 195; battle of Plassy, 196, 197; Clive made Governor of Fort William, 198; returns to England, 199; Clive (Lord Clive) returns to India—treaty with the Nawab of Audh, 211; suppresses a mutiny of officers—his reforms in the Civil Government of Bengal, 212; returns to England—ill-treated at home, 214; his defence and death, 215.
- Coote, Sir Eyre, defeats the French at Madras—effects the relief of Vellore, 241; retires to Bengal—death of, 241.
- Cornwallis, Lord, Governor-General of India, 252; concludes a treaty with the Nizam, 253; marches on Seringapatam—offers terms to Tippu, 256; his administrative reforms, 262; retirement of, 266; resumes the Viceroyship, 287; death of, 288.
- Dabba, or Haidarabad, battle of, 327.
- Dahr, Sindian Rajah, and his queen both fall in battle, 44.
- Dakhan, first invasion, &c., 56; second invasion of, 57; third invasion, 58; successive wars in, 113, 130, 182; invaded by Aurangzib, 144; Hosen Ali named Viceroy—he makes peace with the Maráthas, 156; Chin Kilich Khan and the Maráthas, 160.
- Dalhousie, Marquis of, lands in India, 335; declares war with the Sikhs—the Afghans join them, 336; the second Burmese War, 341, &c.; annexes Pegu, 342; his administrative genius, and reforms, 346, 347; cheap uniform postage, 348; his able farewell minutes—final retirement and death, 349.

- Dāra, Prince (Dara Shēko), defeated by Aurangzib, 133; capture, trial, and execution of, 136.
- Dāūd Khan heads a revolt in Bengal—his death, 111.
- Daulat Khan Lodi invites Bābar into Hindustan, 76.
- Dehli ruled by Kutab-ud-din, 51; the Khilji Dynasty of, 56-64; Toghlaq, Sayyid, and Lodi Dynasties, 65-79; massacres of Timur, 73; Bābar and his successors, 99-175; buildings of Shah Jahan, 132; sacked by Ahmad Shah the Durāni, 171, mutiny in, 356; siege of, by the English, 361; storming of, under General Nicholson—the king taken prisoner—fate of the Dehli princes—trial and sentence of the king, 362-364; Imperial assemblage at, 408.
- Devikāttā, Fort, capture of, 181.
- Dhig, battle and capture of, 281.
- Diu, siege of—sufferings of the Portuguese garrison, 95, 96, 97.
- Donabyu, capture of, by Sir J. Cheape, 341.
- Dost Mohammad applies for English aid—Lord Auckland's cold reply, 316, 317; surrender, 318; and liberation, 326; death—civil war between his sons, 385.
- Duke, Hon. Mr., Governor of Fort William—his defence of Calcutta—diplomacy and compelled flight, 190.
- Dufferin, Marquis of, becomes Governor-General, 414; passes the Bengal Tenancy Act, 414; annexes Upper Burmah, 415; his financial difficulties, 415; his concessions to Native demands, 417; his success as a ruler, 417; is succeeded by Lord Lansdowne, 417.
- Dupleix, Governor of Pondicherry, 177; his brilliant career, 179-184; retirement, and subsequent misfortunes, 189.
- Dutch and English fleets, the, opposed to the Portuguese, 97, 198, 199.
- Dutch fleet, the, appears in the Húghli—defeated and captured, 198; peace between the English and the Dutch, 199.
- East India Company, formation of the—mission of Captain Hawkins to the court of Akbar, 126; erection of factories at Pipli, Húghli, and Balasór, 134; granted a new charter by Charles II.—the seat of the Company's rule transferred from Surat to Bombay, 150; Calcutta given up to the, and fortified, 152, 153; become masters of Bengal, 210; cession of Gantur to the, 253; mutiny among the English officers in India, 269; renewal of the Company's charter, 287; the charter of 1833, 313; and of 1853—the Court of Directors remodelled, 318; the government of India undertaken by the Crown, 377, 378.
- East India Company (French), abolition of the, 201.
- East India Finance Committee, the, appointed by Parliament, 401.
- Edwardes, Lieutenant Herbert, defeats the rebel Mulraj, Governor of Multan, 360; Colonel Edwardes at Peshawar, 357.
- Elgin, Lord, appointed Governor-General of India—his journey through the upper provinces—his death, 382.
- Ellenborough, Lord, appointed Governor-General, 322; his bombastic proclamation—rewards to the victors in the Kabul campaign, 326; his recall, 328.
- Ellis, Mr., of the Patna Factory, murder of, 206.
- Farokhsir, successor to the Emperor Jahāndar, 156; deposition and death, 157; his concessions to the English, 176.
- Firoz Shah, his expedition into Sindh, 70; character as a ruler, 71; abdication in favour of his son—his death, 72.
- Firozshahr, battle of, 331.
- Forest Department of India, the, 389.

- Forsyth, Mr., his mission to Kashgar, 400.
- Francis, Sir Philip, 228, 229, &c.
- Piere, Sir Bartle, his mission to Zanzibar—effects a treaty to suppress the slave trade, 400.
- Gandamak, treaty of, 410.
- Ganges river, first steam voyage on the, 319.
- Garakotah, capture of, 371.
- Ghazni, capture of, 317, 325.
- Ghiyas-ud-din Toghlaq ascends the throne of Delhi, 65; his death, 66.
- Ghorakpur, Gorkha invasion of, 295.
- Gillespie, Colonel, suppresses the mutiny at Vellore, 289; valour at Kalanga, and death, 295.
- Golkonda invaded by Aurangzib—fall of, 132.
- Gough, Sir Hugh, victories on the Satlaj, 330-333; is raised to the peerage, 333; defeats the Sikhs at Chilianwala, 338; and Gujarat, 339.
- Gujarat invaded by Mohammad Kasim, 45; conquest of—capture of the Rajput Queen, 56; Mozaffar Shah's revolt, 111; his capture and death, 112; Gujarat (Panjab), battle of, 338.
- Gwalior, surrender of, to Sir Hugh Gough, 328; captured during the mutiny by Sir H. Rose, 372; restored to Sindia, 416.
- Haidar Ali Khan, rise of—de-thrones the Rajah of Misor, 217; march upon Madras—dictates peace, 219; disastrous peace with the Maráthas, 221; invades the Carnatic, 239; captures Arkot—defeated by Coote at Porto Novo—again defeated at Sholingarh, 241; death of, 244.
- Haidarabad, battle of, 327.
- Half-batta order, the, 217.
- Hardinge, Sir Henry, appointed Governor-General, 328; his war with the Sikhs, 330, &c.; his retirement—raised to the peerage, 333, 334.
- Harpul, rebel leader in the Dakhan, flayed alive, 63.
- Hastings, Warren, arrives at Madras, 222; is made President at Calcutta—his proceedings against Mohammad Reza Khan and Shitab Rai, 223; his quarrel with Francis, 228, &c.; war with the Maráthas, 236, &c.; with Haidar Ali, 241; treaty with the Nawab of Andh, 248; retirement, and reception in England, 249; proceedings against him in the House of Commons, 250; impeachment before the Lords, and triumphant acquittal—his final appearance before the Commons—his death, 251.
- Hastings, Marquis of, directs expeditions against Nipal and the Pindaris, 295, 296; his policy towards the native princes, 302.
- Havelock, Sir Henry, advances on Cawnpore and defeats the Nana Sahib, 359; relieves Lucknow, 366.
- Heber, Bishop, death, and character of, 308.
- Herat, besieged by the Persians, 316; their repulse by Pottinger, 317.
- Hobart, Lord, his services in Madras, and untimely death, 405.
- Holkar and Sindia, originally lieutenants to Baji Rao, 159.
- Holkar, Jeswant Rao, attacked by Lake at Farokabad, 277; peace effected with, 300; madness and death, 288.
- Holwell, Hon. Mr., succeeds Drake as Governor of Fort William, 190; his surrender of Fort William—imprisonment of the garrison in the "Black Hole," 191, 192.
- Humáyun, son of Bábar, his chequered reign, 102, &c.; death, and character, 106.
- Impey, Sir Elijah, Chief Justice of Bengal, 229; appointed to the Sadr Dewani Adalat, 246; his recall, 247.

- India, general sketch of, xlvii., &c.; its early history and civilisation, 1-12; first Aryan settlements in, 22, &c.; Greek invasion of, 28; progress of Western ideas in, 404, &c.; the Empress of, 408; the foreign trade of, 412; increased employment of Natives in public service of, 413, 417; general condition of, 417.
- Indian mythology, 3, &c.; religions, 6, 7, 16, 19, 21; castes, 10, &c.; astronomy, 35; arithmetic, medicine, 36; literature, 37; architecture, 38; engineering, handicrafts, 40; trade, 41; manners, 42; Marriage Act, 397; local governments, powers of, 397; local council, 376; revenues under the Crown, 389.
- Indigo riots, the, 383.
- Indrapat, battle of, 64.
- Jabalpur Railway, opening of the, 393.
- Jahāndār Shah, Emperor of Delhi, 156; murdered by Farokhsir, his nephew, who succeeds him, 156.
- Jahangir, or Selim, accession, 121; victories, rescue, and death of, 122-125.
- Jaipur, capture of, 297.
- Jalalabad, relief of, 323.
- Jaunpur, revolt in, 102.
- Jhansi, capture of, 371.
- Jinji, capture of, 147.
- Kabul, General Elphinstone's defence of—treachery of the Afghans—Elphinstone's disastrous retreat from, 315; re-occupied by the British, 325; Stoletoff's mission to, 409; occupied by British troops, 410; replaced under a Native ruler, 412;
- Kalanga, capture of, 295.
- Kalpi, captured by Sir H. Rose, 372.
- Kalra, storming of, rout of the Sikhs, 338.
- Kanaur, fall of, 255.
- Kandahar, surrendered to the Moghals by its Governor—re-captured by the Persians, 130; occupied by Stewart, 410; saved by Roberts—British troops withdrawn from, 412.
- Kankan, Moghal invasion of the, 144; pirates of the, 176.
- Kāngaun, gallant defence of, 298.
- Kashgar, Mr. Forsyth's mission to, 100.
- Kashmir, successive invasions of, 27; ruins and architectural remains of, 39; made over to Gulāb Singh, 332.
- Kattak, conquest of, 282.
- Katwa, capture of, 196.
- Keshab Chandar Sen, modern Brahminist leader and teacher, 391.
- Khāndesh, conquered by the Moghals, 111.
- Khelāt, capture of, 318.
- Khilji insurrection, the, 320.
- Khus-hab, battle of, 351.
- Kidd, Captain William, piratical adventurer in the Indian sea, 153.
- Kurki, battle of, 299, 300.
- Koimbatore captured, 256.
- Kols of Bengal, rebellion of the, 311.
- Kurg, annexation of, 311.
- Lahōr, first capture of, 50; Mac-calle's mission to, 290; the British advance on, and treaty with—Col. Lawrence appointed Resident, 332.
- Laing, Hon. Mr., financial reforms of, 380.
- Lake, General, his Marāṭha campaigns, 282; his failure against Bhartpur, 285.
- Lally captures Fort St. David—lays siege to Madras—his retreat and rout by Col. Coote, 199, 200.
- Lāswāri, battle of, 277.
- Lawrence, Major, victory of Devikatta, relieves Trichinopoly—surrender of the French to him, 187.
- Lawrence, Sir Henry, at the Panjab Board of Administration, 339; his defence of Lucknow, and death, 365.

- Lawrence, Sir John, made Chief Commissioner of the Panjab, 317; his prompt help in the great mutiny, 357; pension voted to, 376; made Governor-General of India, 383; retirement, 390.
- Laws of inheritance, changes in the Indian, 396.
- "Lord Clives Fund," establishment of, 214.
- Loshais, the war with—its successful termination, 391.
- Lucknow during the mutiny—General Havelock and afterwards Sir Colin Campbell relieve the garrison, 366, &c.; final capture of the city, 370.
- Lytton, Lord, Governor-General of India—presses his demands on Sher Ali, 467; closes the Peshawar Conference—occupies Kwatta—presides at the Delhi Assemblage, 408; his famine insurance Fund, 409; insists on sending a mission to Kabul—declares war with Sher Ali, 410; his severe measures against the Native Press—passes Act to relieve the Dakhn peasantry—creates the Statutory Civil Service, 411.
- Macaulay, Mr. Thomas Babington, nominated to the Supreme Council, 394; author of the "Penal Code" for India, 379, 380.
- Menaghton, Sir W., envoy at Kabul, 318; murder of, by Akbar Khan, 319.
- Madras first constituted a Presidency, 131; restored to the English by the "Peace of Aix la Chapelle," 180; officers, mutiny among the, 287; its suppression by Sir Geo. Bulwer, 287; progress under Lord Herbert, 405; the great famine of, 1877—8, 109.
- Maharajpur, battle of, 328.
- Mahé, capture of, 238.
- Mahdipur, battle of, 295.
- Mahmud of Ghazni, his invasions of India, 47, &c.
- Mahmud Toghlak, emperor, his defeat by Timur, 73.
- Mahomet, sketch of his career (note), 13, 41.
- Masór, British occupation of, 304; famine in, 409; restored to Native rule, 111.
- Malcolm, Sir John, his embassy to Persia, 278; his second mission, 291; appointed Governor of Bombay, 308.
- Malka, fall of, 383.
- Malaua, capture of, 295, 296.
- Malwa, early conquests of, 53, 83, 84; bestowed on Baji Rao, 165.
- Mangalore, capture of, 219, 241.
- Mandha wats, the, 219, 220, 237, 246, 329.
- Mayo, Earl of, appointed Governor-General of India—his State visit to Sher Ali—retrenchment of expenditure, 391; his Afghan policy—settles the question of boundaries, 399; his foreign policy and treatment of feudatories, 396; his journey to Rangoon—visit to the Andaman Islands—his murder, 397.
- Mient, mutiny and masacres at, 350, and see *Mutiny*.
- Metcalf, Sir Charles, undertakes a mission to Lahore, 289; acts as Governor-General—his retirement of, 315.
- Miani, battle of, 327.
- Minto, Lord, appointed Governor-General, 290—leading events of his rule, 290-293.
- Mir Kasim—masacres English prisoners—escapes into Audd, 208.
- Mir Jaffir, Nawab of Bengal, 197—bestows lands on the East India Company, 197, 207.
- Mirza Hakim rebels against Akbar, 111.
- Mouzzim, Bahadur Shah, defeats the Sikhs in Shind. 155; his death, 156.
- Mohammad Shah, Emperor of Delhi, 157; his intrigues, reverses, and death, 158, &c.
- Mohammad Toghlak—invasion of Sindh—his death, 70.
- Moloch, ruler in India, 11.

- Moira, Earl of, created Marquis of Hastings for his conduct of the Nipalese war, 296.
- Mornington, Lord (Marquis Wellesley), appointed Governor-General, 279; conquers Maseon, 273 (see *Marquis Wellesley*).
- Mudki, battle of, 330.
- Muir, Sir William, Lieutenant-Governor of the North-West Provinces, 403.
- Mulraj, Rajah, heads a rising at Multan—besieged and taken by the English, 335, 337.
- Mutiny of the Bengal Sepoys in 1857, 328-368 (see also *Audh*, *Cawnpore*, *Lucknow*, *Dehli*, *Meerut*, and other scenes of the mutiny); early disaffection of Bengal regiments, 340; outbreak at Barrackpore—the *chopathis*—mutinies in *Audh*—suppression—massacres at Meerut and Dehli—disarmings at Lahor and Peshawar—punishment of the Mardán mutineers, 351-357; friendliness of Dost Mohammad and other Native princes—the Ruini of Jhansi's revenge—massacre of the Cawnpore garrison—measures of Lord Canning—Colonel Neil at Banáras and Allahábád—Havelock defeats the Nána—the English re-enter Cawnpore—fate of the garrison, 357-360; campaign in Central India, 371, &c.; capture of Tantia Topi, 376.
- Nadir Shah, his invasion of Hindustan—victorious entry into Dehli—massacre of the citizens, 162, 163.
- Nágpúr, capture of, 299; annexation, 342.
- Nana Farnawis, reign and death of, 260, 268, 279.
- Nana Sahib, massacres ordered by, at Cawnpore, 358, 360.
- Nand Kumar, Sir Philip Francis intrigues with, 229; trial and execution of, 229, 230.
- Napier, General Sir C., conquers Sindh, 327; resigns command of the Indian Army, 340.
- Napier, Lord, Governor of Madras, stays the famine in Southern India, 387, 388; acts as successor to Lord Mayo, 398.
- Narain Rao murdered by Ragoba, who claims to succeed him, 231.
- Nasir Jang, appointed Viceroy of the Dakhan, 164; his campaign against the Muthas, 164; and the French, 181; defeat and death, 182.
- National Congress, the, 116.
- Negapatam, capture of, 242.
- Nicholson, General, arrives before Dehli, 362; his death, 363.
- Nipal, expedition against, 295; treaty with, 296, 298.
- Northbrook, Lord, appointed Governor-General of India, 398; tour of Upper and Western India, 399; abolishes the income-tax, 400; settlement of the Afghan frontier—his measures for dealing with the famine in Bengal, 491; brings the Gaikwar of Baroda to trial—deposes the Gaikwar, 403; reforms the customs tariff, 405; his difference with the Home Government regarding Afghanistan—he "gave the land rest," 106.
- Northern Sarkárs, ceded to the French, 188. English conquests in, 198.
- North-Western Provinces, new land settlement of the, 310; famine in, 387; tenant-rights secured by Sir W. Muir, 403; scarcity in, and great loss of life, 409.
- Nur-Jahan, Empress, suppresses the rebellion of Shah Jahan, who is defeated by her, 124.
- Ochterlony, Sir David, his brave defence of Dehli, 284; leads the expedition against Nipal, 295, 296; death of, 308.
- Orissa, insurrection of, 302; great famine and loss of life in, 387.
- Outram, Sir James, effects a retreat from Haidarabad, 327; suppresses the South Marátha rising, 329; his Persian campaign, 361; marches to the relief of Lucknow at the mutiny

- of 1857—conducts the storming of the Alambagh, 366.
- Palghat, capture of, 251.
- Panwar, battle of, 328.
- Panipat, battle of, 77, 78 : second battle, and fall of Hému at, 107 : third battle of, 172.
- Panjab, early wars in the, 111 : early annexation to the kingdom of Dehli, 81 : invaded by Mirza Hákim, 111 : ruled by Ranjit Singh, 290, 316 : annexation of, 339 : loyalty of, during the mutiny of 1857, 357 : under the administration of Sir D. McLeod, 387.
- Pathans, expulsion from Rohilkhand, 228.
- Patna, massacres of English prisoners at—storming of, by the English, 208.
- Pegu, annexation of, 341, 342 : British administration of, 342.
- Persian War of 1856—capture of Bushir and victory of Khusháb—peace concluded, 351.
- Persian Gulf, suppression of pirates in the, 287.
- Peshawar, conference at, 407 : its failure, 408.
- Pigot, Lord, imprisonment of, 238.
- Pindáris, the (robber tribes), suppression of, by the English, 295.
- Pitt's India Bill of 1784, 250.
- Plassy, battle of, 196, 197.
- Pollock, General, marches into Kabul, through the Khanbar, 324 : destroys the Great Bazaar, 325.
- Pondicherry, the French besieged in, 200 : surrender of the place several times, 201, 238, 266.
- Portuguese, the, early conquests in India, 92, 96 : decline of their power, 98.
- Portuguese settlements in India, the, 94-98.
- Pottinger (Eldred), his successful defence of Herát, 319.
- Prome, occupation of, 304.
- Púna, establishment of the Peshwa's Court at, 168 : capture of city, 299 : agrarian riots in, 403.
- Rájputána, historical account of, 85 : great famine in, 391.
- Rámnagar, battle of, 337.
- Rangoon, captured by the English, 305, 311.
- Ranjit Singh, aggressive movements of—treaty with, 289 : Major Burnes' mission to, 306-309 : meeting between Lord Bentinck and Ranjit Singh at Rupar, 306-309 : death of, 318.
- Rayatwari, settlement in Madras, the, 299.
- Rawal Pindi, the Sikh surrender, 339.
- Remhardt, Walter, *alias* Sumru, massacres English prisoners at Patna, 208.
- Ripon, Marquis of, becomes Governor-General, 111 : withdraws his troops from Afghanistan, 112 : reforms the Indian tariff—his education policy and municipal reform—his compromise on the Ilbert Bill, 413 : his popularity with the Natives, 111.
- Roberts, Sir Frederick, marches on Kabul, and beats the enemy at Charasiah, 410 : marches from Kabul, and drives Ayub Khan from Kandahar, 412.
- Roe, Sir Thomas, his embassy to the great Moghal—obtains new rights for the Company, 127.
- Rohilkhand, British victories in, 370.
- Rose, Sir Hugh, his victorious marches through Central India, 371 : his brilliant strategy, 372, 373.
- Sale, General, his defence of, Jálálabad, 321.
- Santal war, the, 345, 346.
- Satara, absorption of, 312.
- Satti, or widow burning, practice of, 41 : prohibition of, 309.
- Shah Alam (Emperor) invades Bengal, 198 : bestows the government of Bengal on the East India Company, 211 : installed at Dehli by the Maráthas, 220.
- Shah Jahán, Emperor of Dehli, his wars in the Dakhan, 122, 131, 138 : reduces Udaipur, 122 ;

- his revenue reforms, 131; de-throned by Aurangzib, 131.
- Shahji Bhosla (Marátha chieftian), conquests in the Dakhan, 137, 138.
- Shah Shuja supported by the English, 317; his death, 325.
- Shakespeare, Sir Richmond, rescues the English captives in Kabul, 325.
- Sher Ali, Amir, wins his father's throne, 385; meets Lord Mayo at Ambála, 391; sends his envoy to Lord Northbrook, 400; his futile negotiations with Lord Lytton, 407; his flight from Kabul, and death, 410.
- Sher Singh (Rajah) deserts Lieut. Edwards at Multán, 336; his flank march on Lahór, 338; his defeat and surrender, 339.
- Shir Shah founds an Afghan Dynasty at Delhi, 103.
- Shore, Sir John, appointed Governor-General, 266, 267; dangerous position of, at Lucknow, 269; retirement of, 269, 270.
- Shuja-ud-din, drives the Ostend East India Company out of Bankipur, 176.
- Shuja-ud-daula repulsed from Patna, 209.
- Scringapatam, sieges of, 256, 272, 273.
- Sikandar Bagh, the slaughter of rebels at, 366.
- Sikandar Lodi (Emperor), his persecution of Hindus, 75.
- Sikri, battle of, 100.
- Sindh, annexation of, 327.
- Sindia, Daulat Rao, his defeats by Lord Lake, 282; his submission to Lord Wellesley, 283.
- Sindia, Múhdaji, his wars with the English, 236, &c.; his support of Shah Alam, 258, &c.
- Sindia (son of Jankaji), his flight from Gwalior during the mutiny, 372.
- Singapore, cession of, 301.
- Sirhind, Sikh invasion of, 155.
- Stabáhi, battle of, 298.
- Stána, campaign of, 382, 383.
- Sivaji (son of Shahji Bhosla), conquests in the Karkau—defeat and murder of Afzul Khan, 138; naval exploits, 139; sack of Barsalor, 140; crowned at Raigarh—his death, 143.
- Slavery abolished in India, 328.
- Sleeman, Col., appointed Resident at Gwalior, 328; transferred to Lucknow, 344.
- "Star of India," institution of the, 381.
- Sobraon, battle of, 332.
- Sonuáth, early capture and plunder of, by Mahmud, 49.
- Sonpat, battle of, 113.
- Stewart, Sir Donald, occupies Kandahar, 410; beats the Afghans at Ahmad-Khel, 111.
- Suraj-ud-daula, Subadar of Bengal—lays siege to Calcutta, 190; defeated at Plassy—his capture and death, 197.
- Surat invaded by the Persians, 13; first opened to English trade 127; constituted a presidency, 131.
- Taj Mahal, the, at Agra, 53, 132.
- Táhkót, battle of, rout of the Hindus, 91.
- Tanjór placed under English rule, 181.
- Tántia Topi heads the rebellion in Central India, 371; defeated by Sir Hugh Rose, 371; capture and execution of, 375, 376.
- Temple, Sir Richard, governs the Central Provinces, 386; his services during the Bengal famine, 401.
- Thaggi finally suppressed by Gen. Sleeman, 309, 310.
- Tippu Sahib invades Travankor, 251; defeated at Anikera, 255; captures Kombator—treats for terms with Lord Cornwallis, 256; defeated at Malavalli by Gen. Harris—his death, 270, 273.
- Timúr (Tamerlane), his invasion of Hindustan—massacres in Delhi, &c., 74.
- Todar Mal governs Bengal, 117, settles the land revenue under Akbar, 117, 118.
- Toghlaq I. (see Ghiyas-ud-din).
- To Ták IL (Muhammad Toghlaq) reign of, 67, under Sultan Iva-

- sion of China, 67; massacres ordered at Kanauj—rebuilding of Daulatabad, 68; revolts in Gujarat and elsewhere, 69.
- Travankór placed under English rule, 287.
- Trichinopoly, siege of, 188, &c.; siege of—successes of the French, 190.
- Trincomalee, fall of, 212.
- Uzbeks, revolt of the—suppressed by Akbar, 109.
- Vans Agnew, Mr., murder of, 335.
- Vellore, mutiny of Sepoy regiments at, 289.
- Village communities in India, 10, 263.
- Wade, Colonel, his successful advance through the Khaibar, 319.
- Wághirs, rising of the, in Katia-war, and suppression, 334.
- Wales, Prince of, makes a tour through India, 403.
- Wandiwash, gallant defence and relief of, 241.
- Wellesley (Marquis), Governor-General of India, his home policy, 279; subdues the Maráthas, 283, &c.; his retirement and illiberal treatment, 278, 279, 280.
- Wellesley, General, his first successes, 277; captures Ahmadnagar—routs the Maráthas at Assai and Argaum, 281.
- Wild, Colonel, his repulse in the Khaibar Pass, 319.
- Wheeler, Sir Hugh, defence of Cawnpore against the Sepoy mutineers, 338, 340.
- Worgaom, annulment of the disgraceful treaty of, 236.
- Yávans in India, 27; in Orissa, 89.
- Zamindari, land settlement made permanent, 263.
- Zamindars, rise of the Bengal, 262.
- Zanzibar, Freie's mission to, 400.

LONDON
PRINTED BY JAS. TROSCOTT AND SON,
Suffolk Lane, City.

PUBLICATIONS

OF THE

Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge.

Star Atlas.

Gives all the stars from 1 to 6·5 magnitude between the North Pole and 34° South Declination and all Nebulae and Star Clusters, which are visible in telescopes of moderate power. Translated and adapted from the German of Dr. KLEIN, by the Rev. E. McCURE, M.A. Imp. 4to. With 18 Charts and 80 pages Illustrative Letterpress. Cloth boards, 7s. 6d.

Australia's Heroes.

Being a slight Sketch of the most prominent amongst the band of gallant men who devoted their lives and energies to the cause of Science, and the development of the Fifth Continent. By C. H. EDEN, Esq. With Map. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

Heroes of the Arctic and their Adventures.

By FREDERICK WHYMPER, Esq., Author of "Travels in Alaska," &c. With Map, Eight full-page and numerous small Woodcuts. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 3s. 6d.

Beauty in Common Things.

Illustrated by Twelve Drawings from Nature, by Mrs. J. W. WHYMPER; Printed in Colours. With Descriptive Letterpress, by the Author of "Life in the Walls," &c. Demy 4to. Cloth boards, 10s. 6d.

Scenes in the East.

Consisting of Twelve Coloured Photographic Views of Places mentioned in the Bible, beautifully executed, with Descriptive Letterpress. By the Rev. CANON TRISTRAM, Author of "The Land of Israel," &c. 4to. Cloth, bevelled boards, gilt edges, 6s.

Sinai and Jerusalem ; or, Scenes from Bible Lands.

Consisting of Coloured Photographic Views of Places mentioned in the Bible, including a Panoramic View of Jerusalem, with Descriptive Letterpress. By the Rev. F. W. HOLLAND, M.A. Demy 4to. Cloth, bevelled boards, gilt edges, 6s.

Bible Places ; or, the Topography of the Holy Land.

A succinct account of all the Places, Rivers, and Mountains of the Land of Israel mentioned in the Bible, so far as they have been identified ; together with their modern names and historical references. By the Rev. CANON TRISTRAM. With Map. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 4s.

The Land of Israel.

A Journal of Travel in Palestine, undertaken with special reference to its Physical Character. By the Rev. CANON TRISTRAM. Fourth Edition, revised. With Maps and numerous Illustrations. Large Post 8vo. Cloth boards, 10s. 6d.

Narrative of a Modern Pilgrimage through Palestine on Horseback, and with Tents.

By the Rev. ALFRED CHARLES SMITH, M.A., Author of "The Attractions of the Nile," &c. Numerous Illustrations and Four Coloured Plates. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

The Natural History of the Bible.

By the Rev. CANON TRISTRAM, Author of "Bible Places," &c. With numerous Woodcuts. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

A History of the Jewish Nation.

From the Earliest Times to the Present Day. By the late E. H. PALMER, M.A., Author of "The Desert of the Exodus," &c. With Map of Palestine and numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 4s.

Pictorial Architecture of the British Isles.

By the Rev. H. H. BISHOP. With about 150 Illustrations. Royal 4to. Cloth boards, 4s.

Pictorial Architecture of Greece and Italy.

By the Rev. H. H. BISHOP. With numerous Engravings. Royal 4to. Cloth boards, 5s.

British Birds in their Haunts.

Being a Popular account of the Birds which have been observed in the British Isles; their Haunts and Habits; their Systematic, Common, and Provincial Names; together with a Synopsis of Genera; and a brief Summary of Specific Characters. By the late Rev. C. A. JOHNS, B.A., F.L.S. Post 8vo. Cloth boards, 6s.

A Chapter of English Church History.

Being the Minutes of the S.P.C.K. for the years 1698—1703. Together with Abstracts of Correspondents' Letters during part of the same period. Edited by the Rev. EDMUND MCCLURE, M.A., Editorial Secretary of the S.P.C.K. Demy 8vo. With a Woodcut. Cloth boards, 5s.

The Art Teaching of the Primitive Church.

With an Index of Subjects, Historical and Emblematic. By the Rev. R. ST. JOHN TYRWHITT. Cloth boards, 7s. 6d.

Africa, seen through its Explorers.

By CHARLES H. EDEN, Esq. With Map and several Illustrations. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

Some Heroes of Travel; or, Chapters from the History of Geographical Discovery and Enterprise.

Compiled and re-written by W. H. DAVENPORT ADAMS. With Map. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

Christians under the Crescent in Asia.

By the Rev. EDWARD L. CUTTS, B.A., Author of "Turning Points of Church History," &c. With numerous Illustrations. Post 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

The Fifth Continent, with the adjacent Islands.

Being an Account of Australia, Tasmania, and New Guinea, with Statistical Information to the latest date. By C. H. EDEN, Esq. With Map. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

Frozen Asia: A Sketch of Modern Siberia.

By CHARLES H. EDEN, Esq., Author of "Australia's Heroes," &c. With Map. Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

China.

By Professor ROBERT K. DOUGLAS, of the British Museum. With Map, and Eight page Illustrations and several Vignettes. Post 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

Russia: Past and Present.

Adapted from the German of Lankenau and Oelnitz. By Mrs. CHESTER. With Map and Three full-page Woodcuts and Vignettes. Post 8vo. Cloth boards, 5s.

LONDON :

NORTHUMBERLAND AVENUE, CHARING CROSS, W.C.;

43, QUEEN VICTORIA STREET, E.C.;

97, WESTBOURNE GROVE, W.

BRIGHTON: 135, NORTH STREET.

